UNIV.OF
TDRONTD
LBRARY

## 

of

## HENRY THE FIFTH.

REPRINT OF FIRST QUARTO, 1600.

New Shakspere Society [Publications]

Series 2: No. 518
The Cbbrouide

OF

## HENRY THE FIFTH.

REPRINT OF FIRST QUARTO, 1600.

PUBLISHED FOR
The ie em Slakspere Society
BY N. TRÜBNER \& CO., 57, 59, LUDGATE HILL, LONDON, 1875 .


Series II. \%ita. 5.
John childs and son, printers.

## ERRATA IN THE REPRINT OF THE QUARTO 1600.

I. ii. Enter, etc., Bifhops should be Bifhops,<br>I. ii. line 160 , leau should be leaue<br>II. ii. ,, ro4, death, should be (death,

IV. vii. line 6I, no should be not
IV. viii. ,, 85, Maieftie. should be Maieftie,
V. ii. ,, 29, any should be any.

## ERRATA IN THE REPRINT OF THE FOLIO 1623.

Page 1, Prol., line 33, like. should be like,
", 5 , line $97, I$ should be $I s$
," 15, ,, Io, Coronets. should be Coronets,
,, 16, ,, 37, fafe. should be fafe,
,, 23, ,, 85, heere. should be heere,
,, 29, ,, 24, us should be vs
", 30, ", 70, present should be prefent
,, 33, ,, 17, follow should be follow:
,, 36, ,, 23, Honour should be Honor
,, 36, ,, 30, means should be meanes
,, 41, ,, 42, auoyd should be auoyd?
,, 49, ,, 108, winne should be winner.
,, 5I, ,, 168, away should be away.
,, 5I, ,, 7, Lord Con- should be Lord High Con-
," 53, ,, 61, have should be haue
", 55, ,, 125, have should be haue
", 55, " 140, tellectual should be tellectuall
,, 56, ,, 6, almost should be almoft
," 58, ", 26, them should be them,

Page 60, line 62, Piftoll should be Piftol
,, 61, ,, 85, Bates. should be Bates,
,, 64, ,, 202, between should be betwecne
," 66, ,, 278, Days should be Dayes
,, 67 , the numbers of lines 304 and 308 to be raised one line.
68, line 13, tears should be teares
69, ", 52, Fly should be Flye
69, ,, 55, fhews should be fhecoes
,, 81, ,, 79, mafters should be mafters,
,, 90, ,, 41, asain should be asaine
", 93, ,, 73, native should be native
" 93, " 9, face. should be face,
," 95, ", 54, Hedges should be Hedses,
", 98, ", 145, proteftation: should be proteftation;
,, $99,,, 175$, of it: should be of it:
,, 100, ,, 236, hand should be Hand
", 105, ,, 372, Leagues, should be Leagzi's.

## NOTICE.

## $\infty$ <br> 㿟 $\mathfrak{e n r y}$ tye $\mathfrak{J i f t y}$

Quarto 1600.

The following reprint was set up, through the liberality of Mr F. W. Cosens, from his copy of the Ashbee fac-simile of 1868. The proofs were then read with the British Museum original, C. 12. g., King's, and where there was a blurred letter or other cause of doubt, Mr W. Aldis Wright referred for me to the Capell quarto. Afterwards the revises were read with Mr Henry Huth's quarto kindly lent me for that purpose.

Each page, in its general arrangement and in each line, facsimiles the original as much as possible. The old and worn, and sometimes more than worn type, is not of course imitated. Nor the paper, which may be said to be of about the average quality of these quarto pamphlets, thin, but not so poor as in some, nor so good as in others. Nor have those occasional curvings and irregularities of the lines which betoken over-carelessness in the compositor been followed. Nor that over-size of the Roman capitals which caused him now and then to place them rather below line, nor the somewhat varied shapes of some of the italic capitals. Nor is the occasional non-spacing of a colon or semicolon, nor the frequent non-spacing after a comma, followed, unless occasionally by way of example; had it been, the openness of the reprint as compared with the greater closeness of the words in the original would have over-exaggerated an irregularity, which, as regards the comma, is so constant a practice in books of that period that it can hardly be called an irregularity. Nor except on p. 16 have the displacements of letters a little out of the level of the rest been imitated. But all other irregularities and errors have, that the reader may know something of what the old quarto is like, and be enabled to judge, as far as may be, of its character. With this view it may be worth adding by way of note, that as the substitutions of italic capitals for Roman, and the reverse, occur chiefly in groups, it may be inferred that they were not so much due to error, as to the temporary exhaustion of the case.

The original being unpaged, its signatures are given, and below

## Notice.

these the reprint signatures and paging. There being also no division into scenes or acts, and the folio division being into acts only and that wrongly, the modern numberings of the folio or received text have been added, each in its corresponding place. Thus the first scene of the quarto corresponds with Act I. Sc. 2 of the full text, and is numbered [I. 2], and so onwards. I. I, III. I, and IV. 2 are wanting, but as the order of sequence is the same,--except that IV. 5 precedes IV. 4,-inter-reference is made more easy.

Second and third editions of this quarto were printed by Thomas Creede for Thomas Pavier in 1602 and 1608 . Of these the second may be called a mere reprint. The third-which, whether from exhaustion of the second edition or other cause, was also printed from the first-re-divides some of the lines and adds a few words, chiefly with an intent to improve what the improver took to be the metre. The variations of both will be given in the paralleltext edition of the quarto and folio, but they neither aid in determining the character of this first quarto, nor in the correction of the folio text.

## B. Nicholson.

# - H E <br> GRONICLE 

## Hiftory of Henry the fift,

With his battell fought at Agin Court in
France. Togither with Auntient
Pistoll.

As it hath bene fundry times playdly the Right honorable the Lord Chamberlaine his Seruants.


LONDON
Printed by Thomas Creede, for Tho. Millington, and Iohn Busby And are to be fold athis houfe in Carter Lane, next the Powle head. 1600.

## The Chronicle Hiftorie

 of Henry the fift : with his battel fought at Agin Court in France. Togither with Auncient Pistoll.[I. 2] Enter King Henry, Exeter, 2. Bi/hops Clarence, and other Attendants.

Exeter.

SHall I call in Thambaffadors my Liege ? King. Not yet my Coufin, til we be refolude Of fome ferious matters touching vs and France. 4 Bi. God and his Angels guard your facred throne, And make you long become it.

King. Shure we thank you. And good my Lord proceed Why the Lawe Salicke which they haue in France, 8 Or fhould or fhould not, ftop vs in our clayme : And God forbid my wife and learned Lord, That you fhould fafhion, frame, or wreft the fame. For God doth know how many now in health, 12 Shall drop their blood in approbation, Of what your reuerence fhall incite vs too. Therefore take heed how you impawne our perfon, How you awake the fleeping fword of warre: 16 We charge you in the name of God take heed. After this coniuration, fpeake my Lord : And we will iudge, note, and beleeue in heart, That what you fpeake, is wafht as pure 20 As fin in baptifme.

$$
\text { A } 2
$$

$B i / h$.

## The Chronicle Historie

Then heare me gracious foueraigne, and you peeres,
Which owe your liues, your faith and feruices
To this imperiall throne.
There is no bar to ftay your highneffe claime to France
24
But one, which they produce from Faramount,
No female fhall fucceed in falicke land,
Which falicke land the French vniuftly gloze
To be the realme of France :28

And Faramont the founder of this law and female barre:
Yet their owne writers faithfully affirme
That the land falicke lyes in Germany,
Betweene the flouds of Saleck and of Elme, 32
Where Charles the fift hauing fubdude the Saxons,
There left behind, and fetled certaine French,
Who holding in difdaine the Germaine women,
For fome difhoneft maners of their liues,
Eftablifht there this lawe. To wit,
No female fhall fucceed in falicke land:
Which falicke land as I faid before,
Is at this time in Germany called Mefene:
Thus doth it well appeare the falicke lawe
Was not deuifed for the realme of France,
Nor did the French poffefle the falicke land, Vntill 400. one and twentie yeares 44
After the function of king Faramont,
Godly fuppofed the founder of this lawe:
Hugh Capet alfo that vfurpt the crowne,
To fine his title with fome fhowe of truth,$4^{8}$

When in pure truth it was corrupt and naught:
Conuaid himfelfe as heire to the Lady Inger,
Daughter to Charles, the forefaid Duke of Lorain,
So that as cleare as is the fommers Sun,
King Pippins title and Hugh Capets claime,
King Charles his fatisfaction all appeare,
To hold in right and title of the female:
So do the Lords of France vntil this day,
Howbeit they would hold vp this falick lawe

## of Henry the fift.

[I. 2] To bar your highneffe claiming from the female, And rather choofe to hide them in a net, 60 Then amply to imbace their crooked caufes, Vfurpt from you and your progenitors. (claime?
$K$. May we with right \& confcience make this
$B i$. The fin vpon my head dread foueraigne.
$\sigma_{4}$ For in the booke of Numbers is it writ,
When the fonne dies, let the inheritance
Defcend vnto the daughter.
Noble Lord ftand for your owne,
68 Vnwinde your bloody flagge,
Go my dread Lord to your great graunfirs graue, From whom you clayme:
And your great Vncle Edward the blacke Prince,
72 Who on the French ground playd a Tragedy
Making defeat on the full power of France,
Whileft his moft mighty father on a hill,
Stood fmiling to behold his Lyons whelpe, 76 Foraging blood of French Nobilitie.

O Noble Englifh that could entertaine
With halfe their Forces the full power of France:
And let an other halfe ftand laughing by, 80 All out of worke, and cold for action.

King. We muft not onely arme vs againft the French, But lay downe our proportion for the Scot,
Who will make rode vpon vs with all aduantages.
84 Bi. The Marches gracious foueraigne, fhalbe fufficient To guardyour England from the pilfering borderers. King. We do not meane the courfing fineakers onely, But feare the mayne entendement of the Scot,
88 For you hall read, neuer my great grandfather Vnmaskt his power for France,
But that the Scot on his vnfurnifht Kingdome,
Came pouring like the Tide into a breach,
92 That England being empty of defences,
Hath fhooke and trembled at the brute hereof.
Bi. She hath bin then more feared then hurt my Lord:

$$
\text { A } 3 \quad \text { For }
$$

## The Chronicle Historie

For heare her but examplified by her felfe,
When all her chiualry hath bene in France
And the a mourning widow of her Nobles, She hath her felfe not only well defended, But taken and impounded as a ftray, the king of Scots, Whom like a caytiffe fhe did leade to France,
Filling your Chronicles as rich with praife
As is the owfe and bottome of the fea With funken wrack and fhipleffe treafurie.

Lord. There is a faying very old and true,
If you will France win,
Then with Scotland firft begin :
For once the Eagle, England being in pray,
To his vnfurnith neft the weazel Scot
Would fuck her egs, playing the moufe in abfence of the
To fpoyle and hauock more then the can eat.
(cat :
Exe. It followes then, the cat muft ftay at home,
Yet that is but a curft neceflitie,
Since we haue trappes to catch the petty theeues :
Whilfte that the armed hand doth fight abroad
The aduifed head controlles at home :
For gouernment though high or lowe, being put into parts, in 6
Congrueth with a mutuall confent like muficke.
Bi. True : therefore doth heauen diuide the fate of man in diuers functions.
Whereto is added as an ayme or but, obedience :
For fo liue the honey Bees, creatures that by awe
Ordaine an act of order to a peopeld Kingdome :
They have a King and officers of fort,
Where fome like Magiftrates correct at home :
Others like Marchants venture trade abroad :
Others like fouldiers armed in their ftings,
Make boote vpon the fommers veluet bud :
Which pillage they with mery march bring home
To the tent royall of their Emperour,
Who bufied in his maieftie, behold
The finging mafons building roofes of gold :

> of Henry the fifth.
[I. 2] The cinell citizens lading vp the honey,
${ }^{132}$. The fad eyde Iuftice with his furly humme, Deliuering vp to executors pale, the lazy caning Drone. This I infer, that 20 . actions once a foote, May all end in one moment.
${ }_{1}{ }_{3} 6$ As many Arrowes lofed feuerall wayes, flye to one marke :
As many feuerall wayes meete in one towne:
As many frefh ftreames run in one felfe fea:
As many lines clofe in the dyall center:
140 So may a thoufand actions once a foote,
End in one moment, and be all well borne without defect.
Therefore my Liege to France,
Diuide your happy England into foure,
144 Of which take you one quarter into France,
And you withall, fhall make all Gallia fhake.
If we with thrice that power left at home,
Cannot defend our owne doore from the dogge,
148 Let vs be beaten, and from henceforth lofe
The name of pollicy and hardineffe.
Ki. Call in the meffenger fent frō the Dolphin,
And by your ayde, the noble finewes of our land,
152 France being ours, weele bring it to our awe,
Or breake it all in peeces:
Eyther our Chronicles fhal with full mouth fpeak
Freely of our acts,
${ }_{15} 6$ Or elfe like toongleffe mutes
Not worfhipt with a paper Epitaph :
Enter Thambalfàdors from France.
Now are we well prepared to know the Dolphins pleafure, For we heare your comming is from him.
160 Ambaffa. Pleafeth your Maieftie to giue vs leau
Freely to render what we haue in charge :
Or fhall I fparingly fhew a farre off,
The Dolphins pleafure and our Embaffage ?
$16_{4}$ King. We are no tyrant, but a Chriftian King,
To whom our fpirit is as fubiect,
As are our wretches fettered in our prifons.

## The Chronicle Historie

Therefore freely and with vncurbed boldneffe ..... [I. 2]Tell vs the Dolphins minde.168Ambuf. Then this in fine the Dolphin faith,Whereas you clayme certaine Townes in France,From your predeceffor king Edward the third,This he returnes.172He faith, theres nought in France that can be with a nimbleGalliard wome : you camot reael into Dukedomes there :Therefore he fendeth meeter for your ftudy,'Ihis tume of treafire : and in lien of this,${ }^{176}$
Defires to let the Dukedomes that you craueHare no more from you: 'This the Dolphin faith.
King. What trafine Vncle ?180King. We are glad the Dolphin is fo pleafint with vs,Your medhage and his prefent we aceept:
When we hame matehed our rackets to thefe balles,We will by Geds grace play fuch a let,184
Shall frike his fathers crowne inte the hazard.'Tell him he hath made a mateh with fieh a wrangler,That all the Courts of France thall be difturbl with chafes.And we vaderthand him well, how he comes ore vs188With our wilder dayes, not meafuring what vie we madeof them.
We neuer valued this poore feate of England.
And therefore game our felues to barbarous licence:
As tis common feene that men are merriett when they are ..... 192 from home.
But tell the Dolphin we will keepe our Atate,Be like a King, mightie and command,When we do rowfe vs in throne of Prance:Forthis hame we laid by our Maineftie196And plodded lide a man for working dayes.But we will rife there with fo full of glory,That we will dazell all the eyes of France,I trike the Dolphin blinde to looke on vs, (ftones,200
And tell him this, his mock hath turnd his balles to gun

## of Henry the fift.

[I. 2.] And his foule thall fit fore charged for the wafffull (vengeance
That fhall flye from them. For this his mocke 204 Shall mocke many a wife out of their deare husbands.

Mocke mothers from their fonnes, mocke Caftles downe, I fome are yet vugotten and vnborne,
That thall haue caufe to curfe the Dolphins foome. 208 But this lyes all within the will of God, to whom we doo (appeale,
And in whofe name tel you the Dolphin we are coming on To venge vs as we may, and to put forth our hand
In a rightfull canfe: fo get you hence, and tell your Prince, 212 His Ieft will fauour but of thallow wit,

When thoufands weepe, more then did langh at it.
Conney them with fafe conduct : fee them hence.
Ene. This was a merry medtage.
216 King. We hope to make the fender blufl at it :
Therfore let our collection for the wars be foone pronided :
For God before, weell check the Dolphin at his fathers
(doore.
Therefore let enery man now taske his thought,
220 That this faire action may on foote be brought.

## Exeunt ommes.

[II. 1] Emter Nin and Bardolfic.
Bar. Godmorrow Corporall Nim.
Nim. Godmorrow Licfienant Bardolfi.
Bar. What is antient Pistoll and thee friends yet ?
4 Nim. I cannot tell, things muft be as they may:
I dare not fight, but I will winke and hold out mine Iron :
It is a fimple one, but what tho ; it will ferue to tofte checfe,
And it will endure cold as an other mans fiword will,
8 And theres the humor of it.
Bar. Yfaith miflreffe quickly did thee great wrong, For thou weart troth plight to her.

## The Chronicle Historie

Nim. I muft do as I may, tho patience be a tyred mare,
Yet fheel plod, and fome fay kniues haue edges,
And men may fleepe and haue their throtes about them At that time, and there is the humour of it.

Bar. Come y faith, Ile beftow a breakfaft to make Piftoll
And thee friendes. What a plague fhould we carrie kniues
To cut our owne throates.
Nim. Y faith Ile liue as long as I may, thats the certaine of it.
And when I cannot liue any longer, Ile do as I may,
And theres my reft, and the randeuous of it.
Enter Piftoll and Hoftes Quickly, his wife. Bar. Godmorrow ancient Pistoll.
Here comes ancient Pistoll, I prithee Nim be quiet.
Nim. How do you my Hofte?
Pist. Bafe flaue, calleft thou me hofte?
Now by gads lugges I fweare, I fcorne the title,
Nor fhall my Nell keepe lodging.
Hoft. No by my troath not I,
For we cānot bed nor boord half a fcore honeft gētlewomē 28
That liue honeftly by the prick of their needle,
But it is thought ftraight we keepe a bawdy-houfe.
O Lord heeres Corporall Nims, now fhall
We haue wilful adultry and murther committed :
Good Corporall Nim fhew the valour of a man,
And put vp your fword.
Nim. Pufh.
Piff. What doft thou pufh, thou prickeard cur of Ifeland ?36

Nim. Will you fhog off? I would haue you folus.
Pist. Solus egregious dog, that folus in thy throte,
And in thy lungs, and which is worfe, within
Thy meffull mouth, I do retort that folus in thy
Bowels, and in thy Iaw, perdie : for I can talke,
And Pistolls flarhing firy cock is vp.
Nim. I am not Barbafom, you cannot coniure me:
I haue an humour Pistoll to knock you indifferently well,44

And you fall foule with me Pistoll, Ile fcoure you with my Rapier

## of Henry the fift.

[II. r] Rapier in faire termes. If you will walke off a little, Ile prick your guts a litle in good termes,
48 And theres the humour of it.
Pift. O braggard vile, and damned furious wight, The Graue doth gape, and groaning
Death is neare, therefore exall.
They drawe.
52 Bar. Heare me, he that ftrikes the firft blow, Ile kill him, as I am a fouldier.

Pist. An oath of mickle might, and fury fhall abate.
Nim. Ile cut your throat at one time or an other in faire 56 And theres the humor of it.

Pist. Couple gorge is the word, I thee defie agen :
A damned hound, thinkft thou my fpoufe to get ?
No, to the powdering tub of infamy,
60 Fetch forth the lazar kite of Crefides kinde,
Doll Tear-fheete, fhe by name, and her efpowfe
I haue, and I will hold, the quandom quickly,
For the onely fhe and Paco, there it is inough.
Enter the Boy.
64 Boy. Hoftes you muft come ftraight to my maifter, And you Hoft Pistoll. Good Bardolfe
Put thy nofe betweene the fheetes, and do the office of a
(warming pan.
Host. By my troath heele yeeld the crow a pudding one (of thefe dayes.
68 Ile go to him, husband youle come ?
Bar. Come Pistoll be friends.
Nim prithee be friends, and if thou wilt not be
Enemies with me too.
72 Ni . I fhal haue my eight fhillings I woon of you at beating? Pift. Bafe is the flaue that payes.
Nim. That now I will haue, and theres the humor of it. Pift. As manhood fhall compound. They draw.
76 Bar. He that ftrikes the firft blow,
Ile kill him by this fword.
Pift. Sword is an oath, and oathes muft haue their courfe.
B 2
Nim.

## The Chronicle Historie

## Nim. I fhall haue my eight fhillings I wonne of you at beating ?

Piff. A noble fhalt thou haue, and readie pay, 80
And liquor likewife will I giue to thee,
And friendihip fhall combind and brotherhood:
Ile liue by Nim as Nim fhall liue by me :
Is not this iuft? for I fhall Sutler be
Vnto the Campe, and profit will occrue.
Nim. I fhall haue my noble ?
Pist. In cafh moft truly paid.
Nim. Why theres the humour of it.88

Enter Hofles.
Hoftes. As euer you came of men come in, Sir Iohn poore foule is fo troubled
With a burning tafhan contigian feuer, tis wonderfull.
Pist. Let vs condoll the knight : for lamkins we will liue. 92
Exeunt omnes.
Enter Exeter and Gloster.
[II. 2]
Gloft. Before God my Lord, his Grace is too bold to trult thefe traytors.
Exe. They thalbe apprehended by and by. Glost. I but the man that was his bedfellow
Whom he hath cloyed and graced with princely fauours
That he fhould for a forraine purfe, to fell
His Soueraignes life to death and trechery.
Exe. O the Lord of Mafsham.
Enter the King and three Lords.
King. Now firs the windes faire, and we wil aboord;
8
My Lord of Cambridge, and my Lord of Mafsham,
And you my gentle Knight, giue me your thoughts,
Do you not thinke the power we beare with vs,
Will make vs conquerors in the field of France?
Mafha. No doubt my Liege, if each man do his beft.

## of Henry the fift.

[II. 2] Cam. Neuer was Monarch better feared and loued then is your maieftie.
Gray. Euen thofe that were your fathers enemies I6 Haue fteeped their galles in honey for your fake.

King. We therefore haue great caufe of thankfulneffe, And fhall forget the office of our hands :
Sooner then reward and merit, 20 According to their caufe and worthineffe. Ma/ha. So feruice fhall with fteeled finewes fhine, And labour fhall refrefh it felfe with hope To do your Grace inceffant feruice.
24 King. Vncle of Exeter, enlarge the man
Committed yefterday, that rayled againft our perfon,
We confider it was the heate of wine that fet him on,
And on his more aduice we pardon him.
28 Mafha. That is mercie, but too much fecuritie:
Let him bee punifht Soueraigne, leaft the example of (him,
Breed more of fuch a kinde.
King. O let vs yet be mercifull.
32 Cam. So may your highneffe, and punifh too.
Gray. You fhew great mercie if you giue him life,
After the tafte of his correction.
King. Alas your too much care and loue of me
36 Are heauy orifons gainft the poore wretch,
If litle faults proceeding on diftemper fhould not bee
(winked at,
How fhould we ftretch our eye, when capitall crimes, Chewed, fwallowed and difgefted, appeare before vs : 40 Well yet enlarge the man, tho Cambridge and the reft In their deare loues, and tender preferuation of our ftate, Would haue him punifht.
Now to our French caufes.
44 Who are the late Commiffioners ?
Cam. Me one my Lord, your highneffe bad me aske for it to day.

$$
\text { B } 3
$$

Mafha. So

## The Chronicle Historie

Mafh. So did you me my Soueraigne. [II. 2]
Gray. And me my Lord.
King. Then Richard Earle of Cambridge there is yours.
There is yours my Lord of Mafham.
And fir Thomas Gray knight of Northumberland, this fame is
Read them, and know we know your worthineffe. (yours:
Vnckle Exeter I will aboord to night.
Why how now Gentlemen, why change you colour ?
What fee you in thofe papers
That hath fo chafed your blood out of apparance ?
Cam. I do confeffe my fault, and do fubmit me
To your highneffe mercie.
Mafh. To which we all appeale.
King. The mercy which was quit in vs but late,
By your owne reafons is foreftald and done:
60
You muft not dare for fhame to aske for mercy,
For your owne confcience turne vpon your bofomes,
As dogs vpon their maifters worrying them.
See you my Princes, and my noble Peeres,
Thefe Englifh monfters :
My Lord of Cambridge here,
You know how apt we were to grace him,
In all things belonging to his honour:68

And this vilde man hath for a fewe light crownes, Lightly confpired and fworne vnto the practifes of France:
To kill vs here in Hampton. To the which, This knight no leffe in bountie bound to vs 72
Then Caml-ridge is, haah likewife fworne.
But oh what thall I fay to thee falfe man, Thou cruell ingratefull and inhumane creature, Thou that didft beare the key of all my counfell,76

That knewft the very fecrets of my heart,
That almoft mighteft a coyned me into gold,
Wouldeft thou a practifde on me for thy vfe:
Can it be poffible that out of thee
Should proceed one farke that might annoy my finger ?

## of Henry the fift.

[II. 2] Tis fo ftrange, that tho the truth doth fhowe as grofe
As black from white, mine eye wil fcarcely fee it.
84 Their faults are open, arreft them to the anfwer of the lawe,
And God acquit them of their practifes.
Exe. I arreft thee of high treafon,
By the name of Richard, Earle of Cambridge.
88 I areft thee of high treafon,
By the name of Henry, Lord of Ma/ham.
I areft thee of high treafon,
By the name of Thomas Gray, knight of Northumberland.
92 Mafh. Our purpofes God iuftly hath difcouered,
And I repent my fault more then my death,
Which I befeech your maieftie forgiue,
Altho my body pay the price of it.
96 King. God quit you in his mcrey. Heare your fentence.
You haue confpired againft our royall perfon, Ioyned with an enemy proclaimed and fixed.
And frō his coffers receiued the golden earneft of our death 100 Touching our perfon we feeke no redreffe.

But we our king domes fafetie muft fo tender
Whofe ruine you haue fought,
That to our lawes we do deliuer you. death,
104 Get ye therefore hence : poore miferable creatures to your
The tafte whereof, God in his mercy giue you (amifle:
Patience to endure, and true repentance of all your deeds Beare them hence.

## Exit three Lords.

Io8 Now Lords to France. The enterprife whereof, Shall be to you as vs, fucceffiuely.
Since God cut off this dangerous treafon lurking in our wav Cheerly to fea, the fignes of war aduance:
112 No King of England, if not King of France.

Exit omnes.

## The Chronicle Historie

## Enter Nim, Piftoll, Bardolfe, Hoftes and a Boy.

Hoff. I prethy fweete heart, let me bring thee fo farre as
(Stanes.
Pif. No fur, no fur.
Bar. Well fir Iohn is gone. God be with him.
Hof. I, he is in Arthors bofom, if euer any were:
He went away as if it were a cryfombd childe, Betweene twelue and one,
Iuft at turning of the tide:
His nofe was as fharpe as a pen:
For when I faw him fumble with the fheetes, And talk of floures, and fmile vpō his fingers ends
I knew there was no way but one.
How now fir Iohn quoth I ?
And he cryed three times, God, God, God, Now I to comfort him, bad him not think of God, I hope there was no fuch need.
Then he bad me put more cloathes at his feete:
And I felt to them, and they were as cold as any ftone :
And to his knees, and they were as cold as any ftone.
And fo vpward, and vpward, and all was as cold as any ftone.
Nim. They fay he cride out on Sack.
$H_{0} /$. I that he did.
Boy. And of women.
Hoft. No that he did not.
Boy. Yes that he did: and he fed they were diuels incarnat. 24
Hoft. Indeed carnation was a colour he neuer loued.
Nim. Well he did cry out on women.
$H_{o f f}$. Indeed he did in fome fort handle women,
But then he was rumaticke, and talkt of the whore of
(Babylon.
Boy. Hoftes do you remember he faw a Flea ftand Vpon Bardolfes Nofe, and fed it was a black foule Burning in hell fire ?

Bar.

## of Henry the fift.

[II. 3] Bar. Well, God be with him,
That was all the wealth I got in his feruice.
Nim. Shall we fhog off?
The king wil be gone from Southampton. 36 Pift. Cleare vp thy criftalles,

Looke to my chattels and my moueables.
Truft none: the word is pitch and pay:
Mens words are wafer cakes,
40 And holdfaft is the only dog my deare.
Therefore cophetua be thy counfellor,
Touch her foft lips and part.
Bar. Farewell hoftes.
44 Nim. I cannot kis: and theres the humor of it. But adieu

Pist. Keepe faft thy buggle boe.
Exit omnes.
[II. 4] Enter King of France, Bourbon, Dolphin, and others.

King. Now you Lords of Orleance, Of Bourbon, and of Berry,
You fee the King of England is not llack,
4 For he is footed on this land alreadie.
Dolphin. My gratious Lord, tis meet we all goe
And arme vs againft the foe: (foorth,
And view the weak \& fickly parts of France:
8 But let vs do it with no fhow of feare, No with no more, then if we heard England were bufied with a Moris dance. For my good Lord, fhe is fo idely kingd,
12 Her fcepter fo fantaftically borne,
So guided by a fhallow humorous youth, That feare attends her not.

Con. O peace Prince Dolphin, you deceiue your felfe,
C Queftion

## The Chronicle Historie

Queftion your grace the late Embaffador,
With what regard he heard his Embaffage,
How well fupplied with aged Counfellours,
And how his refolution andfwered him,
You then would fay that Harry was not wilde.
King. Well thinke we Harry ftrong :
And ftrongly arme vs to preuent the foe.
Con. My Lord here is an Embaffador
From the King of England.
Kin. Bid him come in.
You fee this chafe is hotly followed Lords.
Dol. My gracious father, cut vp this Englifh fhort,
Selfeloue my Liege is not fo vile a thing,28

As felfe neglecting.

## Enter Exeter.

King. From our brother England?
Exe. From him, and thus he greets your Maieftie:
He wils you in the name of God Almightie,
That you deueft your felfe and lay apart
That borrowed tytle, which by gift of heauen,
Of lawe of nature, and of nations, longs
To him and to his heires, namely the crowne
And all wide ftretched titles that belongs
Vnto the Crowne of France, that you may know
Tis no finifter, nor no awkeward claime,
Pickt from the wormeholes of old vanifht dayes,
Nor from the duft of old obliuion rackte,
He fends you thefe moft memorable lynes,
In euery branch truly demonftrated :
Willing you ouerlooke this pedigree,
And when you finde him euenly deriued
From his moft famed and famous anceftors,
Edward the third, he bids you then refigne
Your crowne and kingdome, indirectly held$4^{8}$

From him, the natiue and true challenger.
King.

## of Henry the fift.

## [II. 4] King. If not, what followes?

Exe. Bloody cōftraint, for if you hide the crown
52 Euen in your hearts, there will he rake for it:
Therefore in fierce tempeft is he comming, In thunder, and in earthquake, like a Ioue, That if requiring faile, he will compell it: 56 And on your heads turnes he the widowes teares, The Orphanes cries, the dead mens bones, The pining maydens grones.
For husbands, fathers, and diftreffed louers, 60 Which fhall be fwallowed in this controuerfie. This is his claime, his threatning, and my meffage. Vnles the Dolphin be in prefence here, To whom exprefly we bring greeting too.
64 Dol. For the Dolphin? I ftand here for him, What to heare from England.

Exe. Scorn \& defiance, flight regard, contempt, And any thing that may not misbecome
68 The mightie fender, doth he prife you at:
Thus faith my king. Vnles your fathers highneffe Sweeten the bitter mocke you fent his Maieftie, Heele call you to fo loud an anfwere for it,
72 That caues and wombely vaultes of France
Shall chide your trefpaffe, and return your mock,
In fecond accent of his ordenance.
Dol. Say that my father render faire reply,
7 万 It is againft my will :
For I defire nothing fo much,
As oddes with England.
And for that caufe according to his youth
80 I did prefent him with thofe Paris balles.
Exe. Heele make your Paris Louer fhake for it,
Were it the miftreffe Court of mightie Europe.
And be affured, youle finde a difference
84 As we his fubiects haue in wonder found :

## The Chronicle Historie

Betweene his yonger dayes and thefe he mufters now,
[II. 4]
Now he wayes time euen to the lateft graine,
Which you fhall finde in your owne loffes
If he ftay in France.
King. Well for vs, you fhall returne our anfwere backe To our brother England.

Exit omnes.
Enter Nim, Bardolfe, Piftoll, Boy.
[III. 2]
Nim. Before God here is hote feruice.
Pist. Tis hot indeed, blowes go and come, Gods vaffals drop and die.

Nim. Tis honor, and theres the humor of it.
Boy. Would I were in London :
Ide giue all my honor for a pot of Ale.
Pift. And I. If wifhes would preuaile,
I would not ftay, but thither would I hie.
Enter Flewellen aud leates them in.
Flew. Godes plud vp to the breaches
You rafcals, will you not vp to the breaches ?
Nim. Abate thy rage fweete knight,
Abate thy rage.
Boy. Well I would I were once from them :
They would haue me as familiar
With mens pockets, as their gloues, and their
Handkerchers, they will fteale any thing.16

Bardolfe ftole a Lute cafe, carryed it three mile,
And fold it for three hapence.
Nim ftole a fier fhouell.
I knew by that, they meant to carry coales :
Well, if they will not leaue me,
I meane to leaue them.
Exit Nim, Bardolfe, Piftoll, and the Boy.
Enter Gower.
Gower. Gaptain Flewellen, you muft come ftrait
To the Mines, to the Duke of Glofter.

## of Henry the fift.

[III. 2] Fleu. Looke you, tell the Duke it is not fo good To come to the mines : the concuaueties is otherwife.
You may difcuffe to the Duke, the enemy is digd
28 Himfelfe fiue yardes vnder the countermines :
By Iefus I thinke heele blowe vp all
If there be no better direction.
[III. 3] Enter the King and his Lords alarum.
King. How yet refolues the Gouernour of the Towne ?
This is the lateft parley weele admit:
Therefore to our beft mercie giue your felues,
4 Or like to men proud of deftruction, defie vs to our worft,
For as I am a fouldier, a name that in my thoughts
Becomes me beft, if we begin the battery once againe
I will not leaue the halfe atchieued Harflew,
8 Till in her afhes fhe be buried,
The gates of mercie are all fhut vp.
What fay you, will you yeeld and this auoyd,
Or guiltie in defence be thus deftroyd?

## Enter Gouernour.

12 Gouer. Our expectation hath this day an end:
The Dolphin whom of fuccour we entreated, Returnes vs word, his powers are not yet ready,
To raife fo great a fiege : therefore dread King, 16 We yeeld our towne and liues to thy foft mercie:

Enter our gates, difpofe of vs and ours, For we no longer are defenfiue now.
[III. 4]
Enter Katherine, Allice.
Kate. Allice venecia, vous aues cates en, Vou parte fort bon Angloys englatara, Coman fae palla vou la main en francoy.

## The Chronicle Historie

Allice. La main madam de han.
Kate. E da bras.
Allice. De arma madam.
Kate. Le main da han la bras de arma.
Allice. Owy e madam.
Kate. E Coman fa pella vow la menton a la coll.
Allice. De neck, e de cin, madam.
Kate. E de neck, e de cin, e de code.
Allice. De cudie ma foy Ie oblye, mais Ie remembre,
12
Le tude, o de elbo madam.
Kate. Ecowte Ie reherfera, towt cella que Iac apoandre, De han, de arma, de neck, du cin, e de bilbo.

Allice. De elbo madam.
Kate. O Iefu, Iea obloye ma foy, ecoute Ie recontera De han, de arma, de neck, de cin, e de elbo, e ca bon.

Allice. Ma foy madam, vow parla au fe bon Angloys
Afie vous aues ettue en Englatara.
Kate. Par la grace de deu an pettie tanes, Ie parle milleur Coman fe pella vou le peid e le robe.

Allice. Le foot, e le con.
Kate. Le fot, e le con, ô Iefu! Ie ne vew poinct parle, 24
Sie plus deuant le che cheualires de franca,
Pur one million ma foy.
Allice, Madam, de foote, e le con.
Kate. O et ill aufie, ecowte Allice, de han, de arma,
De neck, de cin, le foote, e de con.
Allice. Cet fort bon madam.
Kate. Aloues a diner.
Exit omnes.

Enter King of France Lord Conftalle, the Dolphin,
[III. 5]

King. Tis certaine he is paft the Riuer Some. Con. Mordeu ma via : Shall a few fpranes of vs,

## of Henry the fift.

[III 5] The emptying of our fathers luxerie, 4 Outgrow their grafters.

Bur. Normanes, bafterd Normanes, mor du
And if they paffe vnfoughtwithall, Ile fell my Dukedome for a foggy farme 8 In that fhort nooke Ile of England.

Conft. Why whence haue they this mettall ? Is not their clymate raw, foggy and colde. On whom as in difdaine, the Sunne lookes pale?
12 Can barley broath, a drench for fwolne Iades Their fodden water decockt fuch liuely blood? And fhall our quick blood fpirited with wine Seeme frofty ? O for honour of our names, 16 Let vs not hang like frozen Iicefickles

Vpon our houfes tops, while they a more frofty clymate Sweate drops of youthfull blood.

King. Conftable difpatch, fend Montioy forth, 20 To know what willing raunfome he will giue?

Sonne Dolphin you fhall ftay in Rone with me.
Dol. Not fo I do befeech your Maieftie. King. Well, I fay it fhalbe fo.

Exeunt omnes.
[III. 6] Enter Gower.
Go. How now Captain Flewellen, come you frō the bridge?
Flew. By Iefus thers excellēt feruice cōmitted at ye bridge.
Gour. Is the Duke of Exeter fafe?
4 Flew. The duke of Exeter is a mā whom I loue, \& I honor, And I worfhip, with my foule, and my heart, and my life, And my lands and my liuings, And my vttermoft powers.
8 The Duke is looke you,
God be praifed and pleafed for it, no harme in the worell.
He is maintain the bridge very gallently : there is an Enfigne
There,

## The Chronicle Historie

There, I do not know how you call him, but by Iefus I think [III. 6]
He is as valient a man as Marke Anthonie, he doth maintain 12
the bridge moft gallantly : yet he is a man of no reckoning :
But I did fee him do gallant feruice.
Gouer. How do you call him?
Flew. His name is ancient Pistoll.
Gouer. I know him not.
Enter Ancient Piftoll.
Flew. Do you not know him, here comes the man.
Pist. Captaine, I thee befeech to do me fauour, The Duke of Exeter doth loue thee well.

Flew. I, and I praife God I haue merrited fome loue at (his hands.
Pist. Bardolfe a fouldier, one of buxfome valour, Hath by furious fate
And giddy Fortunes fickle wheele,
24
That Godes blinde that ftands vpon the rowling reftleffe
(ftone.
Flew. By your patience ancient Pistoll, Fortune, looke you is painted, Plind with a mufler before her eyes,28

To fignifie to you, that Fortune is plind :
And fhe is moreouer painted with a wheele,
Which is the morall that Fortune is turning,
And inconftant, and variation; and mutabilities:
And her fate is fixed at a fphericall fone
Which roules, and roules, and roules:
Surely the Poet is make an excellēt defcriptiō of Fortune.
Fortune looke you is and excellent morall.
Pist. Fortune is Bardolfes foe, and frownes on him,
For he hath ftolne a packs, and hanged muft he be:
A damned death, let gallowes gape for dogs,
Let man go free, and let not death his windpipe ftop. 40
But

## of Henry the fift.

[III. 6] But Exeter hath giuen the doome of death, For packs of pettie price :
Therefore go fpeake, the Duke will heare thy voyce, 44 And let not Bardolfes vitall threed be cut,

With edge of penny cord, and vile approach.
Speake Captaine for his life, and I will thee requite.
Flew. Captain Piftoll, I partly vnderftand your meaning.
48 Pist. Why then reioyce therefore.
Flew. Certainly Antient Pifol, tis not a thing to reioyce at, For if he were my owne brother, I would wifh the Duke
To do his pleafure, and put him to executions: for look you, 52 Difciplines ought to be kept, they ought to be kept.

Pist. Die and be damned, and figa for thy friendihip.
Flew. That is good.
Pist. The figge of Spaine within thy Iawe.
56 Flew. That is very well.
Pist. I fay the fig within thy bowels and thy durty maw. Exit Pistoll.
Fle. Captain Gour, cannot you hear it lighten \& thunder ? Gour. Why is this the Ancient you told me of ? 60 I remember him now, he is a bawd, a cutpurfe.

Flew. By Iefus heeis vtter as praue words vpon the bridge As you fhall defire to fee in a fommers day, but its all one, What he hath fed to me, looke you, is all one.
64 Go. Why this is a gull, a foole, a rogue that goes to the wars Onely to grace himfelfe at his returne to London :
And fuch fellowes as he,
Are perfect in great Commaunders names.
68 They will learne by rote where feruices were done,
At fuch and fuch a fconce, at fuch a breach,
At fuch a conuoy : who came off brauely, who was fhot, Who difgraced, what termes the enemie ftood on.
72 And this they con perfectly in phrafe of warre,
Which they trick vp with new tuned oathes, \& what a berd Of the Generalls cut, and a horid fhout of the campe

## The Chronicle Historie

Will do among the foming bottles and alewafht wits
[III. 6]
Is wonderfull to be thought on : but you muft learne
76
To know fuch flaunders of this age,
Or elfe you may maruelloufly be miftooke.
Flew. Certain captain Gower, it is not the man, looke you,
That I did take him to be : but when time fhall ferue, 80
I fhall tell him a litle of my defires: here comes his Maieftie.
Fnter King, Clarence, Glofter and others.
King. How now Flewellen, come you from the bridge ?
Flew. I and it fhall pleafe your Maieftie,
There is excellent feruice at the bridge.
84
King. What men haue you loft Flewellen?
Flew. And it fhall pleafe your Maieftie, The partition of the aduerfarie hath bene great, Very reafonably great: but for our own parts, like you now, 88
I thinke we haue loft neuer a man, vnleffe it be one
For robbing of a church, one Bardolfe, if your Maieftie
Know the man, his face is full of whelkes and knubs,
And pumples, and his breath blowes at his nofe
Like a cole, fometimes red, fometimes plew :
But god be praifed, now his nofe is executed, \& his fire out.
King. We would haue all offenders fo cut off, And we here giue expreffe commaundment,
That there be nothing taken from the villages but paid for, None of the French abufed,
Or abraided with difdainfull language:
For when cruelty and lenitie play for a Kingdome, 100
The gentleft gamefter is the fooner winner.
Enter French Herauld.
Hera. You know me by my habit.
Ki. Well thē, we know thee, what fhuld we know of thee ?
Hera. My maifters minde. 104
King. Vnfold it.
Heral. Go thee vnto Harry of England, and tell him, Aduantage is a better fouldier then rafhneffe :
of Henry the fift.
[III. 6] Altho we did feeme dead, we did but flumber.
Now we fpeake vpon our kue, and our voyce is imperiall, England fhall repent her folly : fee her rafhneffe, And admire our fufferance. Which to raunfome, 112 His pettineffe would bow vnder:

For the effufion of our blood, his army is too weake :
For the difgrace we haue borne, himfelfe
Kneeling at our feete, a weake and worthleffe fatiffaction. II6 To this, adde defyance. So much from the king my maifter.

King. What is thy name? we know thy qualitie. Herald. Montioy.
King. Thou doft thy office faire, returne thee backe, 120 And tell thy King, I do not feeke him now :

But could be well content, without impeach,
To march on to Callis: for to fay the footh,
Though tis no wifdome to confeffe fo much
124 Vnto an enemie of craft and vantage.
My fouldiers are with fickneffe much infeebled, My Army leffoned, and thofe fewe I haue, Almoft no better then fo many French :
128 Who when they were in heart, I tell thee Herauld,
I thought vpon one paire of Englifh legges,
Did march three French mens.
Yet forgiue me God, that I do brag thus:
132 This your heire of France hath blowne this vice in me.
I muft repent, go tell thy maifter here I am,
My raunfome is this frayle and worthleffe body,
My Army but a weake and fickly guarde.
136 Yet God before, we will come on,
If France and fuch an other neighbour ftood in our way:
If we may paffe, we will : if we be hindered,
We thal your tawny ground with your red blood difcolour.
140 So Montioy get you gone, there is for your paines :
The fum of all our anfwere is but this,
We would not feeke a battle as we are :
D 3
Nor

## The Chronicle Historie

Nor as we are, we fay we will not fhun it.
[III. 6]
Herauld. I fhall deliuer fo : thanks to your Maieftie.
144
Glof. My Liege, I hope they will not come vpon vs now.
King. We are in Gods hand brother, not in theirs :
To night we will encampe beyond the bridge,
And on to morrow bid them march away.
Enter Burbon, Conftable, Orleance, Gebon.
Conft. Tut I haue the beft armour in the world.
Orleance. You haue an excellent armour,
But let my horfe haue his due.
Burbon. Now you talke of a horfe, I haue a fteed like the
Palfrey of the fun, nothing but pure ayre and fire,
And hath none of this dull element of earth within him.
Orleance. He is of the colour of the Nutmeg.
Bur. And of the heate, a the Ginger.
Turne all the fands into eloquent tongues,
And my horfe is argument for them all :
I once writ a Sonnet in the praife of my horfe,
And began thus. Wonder of nature.
Con. I haue heard a Sonnet begin fo,
In the praife of ones Miftreffe.
Burl. Why then did they immitate that
Which I writ in praife of my horfe,16

For my horfe is my miftreffe.
Con. Ma foy the other day, me thought
Your miftreffe fhooke you fhrewdly.
Bur. I bearing me. I tell thee Lord Conftable,
My miftreffe weares her owne haire.
Con. I could make as good a boaft of that,
If I had had a fow to my miftreffe.
Bur. Tut thou wilt make vfe of anything.
${ }^{2} 4$
Con. Yet I do not vfe my horfe for my miftreffe.
Bur. Will it neuer be morning ?
Ile ride too morrow a mile,
And my way fhalbe paued with Englifh faces. 28

## of Henry the fift.

[III. 7] Con. By my faith fo will not I, For feare I be outfaced of my way. Bur. Well ile go arme my felfe, hay.
32 Gelon. The Duke of Burbon longs for morning Or. I he longs to eate the Englifh.
Con. I thinke heele eate all he killes. Orle. O peace, ill will neuer faid well.
36 Con. Ile cap that prouerbe, With there is flattery in friendfhip. Or. O fir, I can anfwere that,
With giue the diuel his due.
40 Con. Haue at the eye of that prouerbe, With a Iogge of the diuel. Or. Well the Duke of Burbon, is fimply, The moft actiue Gentleman of France.
44 Con. Doing his actiuitie, and heele ftil be doing. Or. He neuer did hurt as I heard off. Con. No I warrant you, nor neuer will. Or. I hold him to be exceeding valiant.
48 Con. I was told fo by one that knows him better the you. Or. Whofe that ?
Con. Why he told me fo himfelfe :
And faid he cared not who knew it.
52 Or. Well who will go with me to hazard, For a hundred Englifh prifoners ? Con. You muft go to hazard your felfe, Before you haue them.

Enter a Meffenger.
56 Me. /f. My Lords, the Englith lye within a hundred Paces of your Tent. Con. Who hath meafured the ground ? Mef. The Lord Granpeere.
6o Con. A valiant man, a. an expert Gentleman. Come, come away :
The Sun is hie, and we weare out the day. Exit omnes.

# The Chronicle Historie 

## Enter the King difguijed, to him Piftoll.

Pist. Ke ve la ?
King. A friend.
Piff. Difcus vnto me, art thou Gentleman?
Or art thou common, bafe, and popeler?
King. No fir, I am a Gentleman of a Company.
Pist. Trailes thou the puiffant pike ?
King. Euen fo fir. What are you ?
Piff. As good a gentleman as the Emperour.
King. O then thou art better then the King ?
Pift. The kings a bago, and a hart of gold.
Piff. A lad of life, an impe of fame:
Of parents good, of fift moft valiant :
I kis his durtie fhoe: and from my hart ftrings
I loue the louely bully. What is thy name ?
King. Harry le Roy.
Pist. Le Roy, a Cornifh man: 16
Art thou of Cornifh crew ?
Kin. No fir, I am a Wealchman.
Pijf. A Wealchman : knowft thou Flewellen?
Kin. I fir, he is my kinfman.
Pijt. Art thou his friend ?
Kin. I fir.
Pift. Figa for thee then: my name is Piftoll.
Kin. It forts well with your fierceneffe.
Pifl. Piftoll is my name.

## Exit Piftoll.

Enter Gower and Flewellen.
Gour. Captaine Flewellen.
Flew. In the name of Iefu fpeake lewer.
It is the greateft folly in the worell, when the auncient 28
Prerogatiues of the warres be not kept.
I warrant you, if you looke into the warres of the Romanes, You fhall finde no tittle tattle, nor bible bable there:

## of Henry the fift.

[IV. r] But you hall finde the cares, and the feares, And the ceremonies, to be otherwife.

Gour. Why the enemy is loud : you heard him all night.
Flew. Godes follud, if the enemy be an Affe \& a Foole,
36 And a prating cocks-come, is it meet that we be alfo a foole, And a prating cocks-come, in your confcience now?

Gour. Ile fpeake lower.
Flew. I befeech you do, good Captaine Gower. Exit Gower, and Flewellen.
40 Kin. Tho it appeare a litle out of fafhion, Yet theres much care in this.

## Enter three Souldiers.

1. Soul. Is not that the morning yonder ?
2. Soul. I we fee the beginning,

44 God knowes whether we fhall fee the end or no.
3. Soul. Well I thinke the king could wifh himfelfe Vp to the necke in the middle of the Thames, And fo I would he were, at all aduentures, and I with him.
48 Kin. Now mafters god morrow, what cheare?
3. S. I faith fmall cheer fome of vs is like to haue,

Ere this day ende.
Kin. Why fear nothing man, the king is frolike.
52 2. S. I he may be, for he hath no fuch caufe as we
Kin. Nay fay not fo, he is a man as we are.
The Violet fmels to him as to vs:
Therefore if he fee reafons, he feares as we do.
$5^{6}$ 2. Sol. But the king hath a heauy reckoning to make,
If his caufe be not good : when all thofe foules
Whofe bodies fhall be flaughtered here,
Shall ioyne together at the latter day,
60 And fay $I$ dyed at fuch a place. Some fwearing :
Some their wiues rawly left :
Some leauing their children poore behind them.

## The Chronicle Historie

Now if his caufe be bad, I think it will be a greeuous matter [IV. I] (to him.
King. Why fo you may fay, if a man fend his feruant 64
As Factor into another Countrey,
And he by any meanes mifcarry,
You may fay the bufineffe of the maifter,
Was the author of his feruants misfortune.
Or if a fonne be imployd by his father,
And he fall into any leaud action, you may fay the father
Was the author of his fonnes damnation.
But the mafter is not to anfwere for his feruants,
The father for his fonne, nor the king for his fubiects:
For they purpofe not their deaths, whe they craue their fer-
Some there are that haue the gift of premeditated (uices:
Murder on them :
Others the broken feale of Forgery, in beguiling maydens.
Now if thefe outftrip the lawe,
Yet they cannot efcape Gods punifhment.
War is Gods Beadel. War is Gods vengeance: 80
Euery mans feruice is the kings :
But euery mans foule is his owne.
Therfore I would haue euery fouldier examine himfelfe,
And wafh euery moath out of his confcience:
That in fo doing, he may be the readier for death :
Or not dying, why the time was well fpent,
Wherein fuch preparation was made.
3. Lord. Yfaith he faies true:88

Euery mans fault on his owne head,
I would not haue the king anfwere for me.
Yet I intend to fight luftily for him.
King. Well, I heard the king, he wold not be ranfomde. 92
2. L. I he faid fo, to make vs fight:

But when our throates be cut, he may be ranfomde,
And we neuer the wifer.
King. If I liue to fee that, Ile neuer truft his word againe. 96
2. Lord,

## of Henry the fift.

[IV. I] 2. Sol. Mas youle pay him then, tis a great difpleafure That an elder gun, can do againft a cannon, Or a fubiect againft a monarke. ioo Youle nere take his word again, your a naffe goe.

King. Your reproofe is fomewhat too bitter :
Were it not at this time I could be angry.
2. Sol. Why let it be a quarrell if thou wilt.

104 King. How fhall I know thee ?
2. Sol. Here is my gloue, which if euer I fee in thy hat, Ile challenge thee, and ftrike thee.

Kin. Here is likewife another of mine, 108 And affure thee ile weare it.
2. Sol. Thou dar'ft as well be hangd.
3. Sol. Be friends you fooles,

We haue French quarrels anow in hand:
112 We have no need of Englifh broyles.
Kin. Tis no treafon to cut French crownes, For to morrow the king himfelfe wil be a clipper. Exit the Jouldiers.

Enter the King, Glofter, Epingam, and Attendants.
K. O God of battels fteele my fouldiers harts, 116 Take from them now the fence of rekconing,

That the appofed multitudes which ftand before them,
May not appall their courage.
O not to day, not to day ô God,
120 Thinke on the fault my father made,
In compaffing the crowne.
I Richards bodie haue interred new,
And on it hath beftowd more contrite teares, 124 Then from it iffued forced drops of blood:

A hundred men haue I in yearly pay,

## The Chronicle Historie

| Which euery day their withered hands hold vp | [lV. I] |
| :--- | :--- |
| To heauen to pardon blood, |  |
| And I haue built rwo chanceries, more wil I do: | $\mathbf{1 2 8}$ |
| Tho all that I can do, is all too litle. |  |

## Enter Gloster.

Glost. My Lord.
King. My brother Glosters voyce.
Glost. My Lord, the Army ftayes vpon your prefence. I33
King. Stay Gloster ftay, and I will go with thee, The day my friends, and all things ftayes for me.

Enter Clarence, Glofter, Exeter, and Salisburie.
War. My Lords the French are very ftrong.
Exe. There is fiue to one, and yet they all are frefh.
War. Of fighting men they haue full fortie thoufand.
Sal. The oddes is all too great. Farewell kind Lords : 4
Braue Clarence, and my Lord of Gloster,
My Lord of Warwicke, and to all farewell.
Clar. Farewell kind Lord, fight valiantly to day,
And yet in truth, I do thee wrong,
8
For thou art made on the rrue farkes of honour.
Enter King.
War. O would we had but ten thoufand men
Now at this inftant, that doth not worke in England.
King. Whofe that, that wifhes fo, my Coufen Warwick? 12
Gods will, I would not loofe the honour
One man would fhare from me,
Not for my Kingdome.
No faith my Coufen, wifh not one man more,ı6

Rather proclaime it prefently through our campe, That he that hath no ftomacke to this feaft, Let him depart, his pafport flall bee drawne, And crownes for conuoy put into his purfe,

> of Henry the fift.
[IV. 3] We wquld not die in that mans company, That feares his fellowfhip to die with vs. This day is called the day of Cryfpin, ${ }_{24}$ He that outliues this day, and fees old age, Shall ftand a tiptoe when this day is named, And rowfe him at the name of Cryfpin. He that out liues this day, and comes fafe home, 28 Shall yearely on the vygill feaft his friends, And fay, to morrow is S. Cryfpines day : Then fhall we in their flowing bowles Be newly remembred. Harry the King, 32 Bedford and Exeter, Clarence and Gloster, Warwick and Yorke.
Familiar in their mouthes as houfhold words.
This ftory fhall the good man tell his fonne, 36 And from this day, vnto the generall doome:

But we in it fhall be remembred.
We fewe, we happie fewe, we bond of brothers,
For he to day that fheads his blood by mine,
40 Shalbe my brother: be he nere fo bafe,
This day fhall gentle his condition.
Then fhall he ftrip his fleeues, and fhew his skars,
And fay, thefe wounds I had on Crifpines day :
44 And Gentlemen in England now a bed,
Shall thinke themfelues accurft,
And hold their manhood cheape,
While any fpeake that fought with vs
48 Vpon Saint Crifpines day.
Glost. My gracious Lord,
The French is in the field.
Kin. Why all things are ready, if our minds be fo.
52 . War. Perifh the man whofe mind is backward now.
King. Thou doft not wifh more help frō England coufen ?
War. Gods will my Liege, would you and I alone,
Without more helpe, might fight this battle our.

$$
\text { E } 2
$$

King. Why

## The Chronicle Historie

Why well faid. That doth pleafe me better,
Then to wifh me one. You know your charge,
God be with you all.
Enter the Herald from the French.
Herald. Once more I come to know of thee king Henry, What thou wilt giue for raunfome?

60
Kin. Who hath fent thee now ?
Her. The Conftable of France.
Kin. I prethy beare my former anfwer backe:
Bid them atchieue me, and then fell my bones.
Good God, why fhould they mock good fellows
The man that once did fell the Lions skin, (thus?
While the beaft liued, was kild with hunting him.
A many of our bodies fhall no doubt
Finde graues within your realme of France :
Tho buried in your dunghils, we fhalbe famed,
For there the Sun fhall greete them,
And draw vp their honors reaking vp to heauen,
Leauing their earthly parts to choke your clyme :
The fmel wherof, fhall breed a plague in France:
Marke then abundant valour in our Englifh,
That being dead, like to the bullets crafing.
Breakes forth into a fecond courfe of mifchiefe,
Killing in relaps of mortalitie :
Let me fpeake proudly,
Ther's not a peece of feather in our campe,
Good argument I hope we fhall not flye :
And time hath worne vs into flouendry.
But by the mas, our hearts are in the trim, And my poore fouldiers tel me, yet ere night
Thayle be in frefher robes, or they will plucke The gay new cloathes ore your French fouldiers eares, And turne them out of feruice. If they do this, As if it pleafe God they fhall, 88
Then fhall our ranfome foone be leuied.

## of Henry the fift.

[IV. 3] Saue thou thy labour Herauld :
Come thou no more for ranfom, gentle Herauld.
92 They fhall haue nought I fweare, but thefe my bones:
Which if they haue, as $I$ wil leaue am them,
Will yeeld them litle, tell the Conftable.
Her. I hall deliuer fo.
Exit Herauld.
96 Yorke. My gracious Lord, vpon my knee $I$ craue, The leading of the vaward.

Kin. Take it braue Yorke. Come fouldiers lets away :
And as thou pleafeft God, difpofe the day.
Exit.
[IV. 5] Enter the foure French Lords.
Ge. O diabello.
Conft. Mor du ma vie.
Or. O what a day is this!
4 Bur. O Iour dei houte all is gone, all is loft.
Con. We are inough yet liuing in the field,
To fmother vp the Englifh,
If any order might be thought vpon.
8 Bur. A plague of order, once more to the field, And he that will not follow Burbon now, Let him go home, and with his cap in hand, Like a bace leno hold the chamber doore,
12 Why leaft by a flaue no gentler then my dog, His faireft daughter is contamuracke.

Con. Diforder that hath fpoyld vs, right vs now,
Come we in heapes, weele offer vp our liues
16 Vnto thefe Englifh, or elfe die with fame.
Come, come along,
Lets dye with honour, our fhame doth laft too long.
Exit omnes.
E 3 Enter

## The Chronicle Historie

Enter Piftoll, the French man, and the Boy.
Piff. Eyld cur, eyld cur.
French. O Monfire, ie vous en pree aues petie de moy. Pift. Moy fhall not ferue. I will haue fortie moys. Boy aske him his name.

Boy. Comant ettes vous apelles ?
French. Monfier Fer.
Boy. He faies his name is Mafter Fer.
Pijf. Ile Fer him, and ferit him, and ferke him :
Boy difcus the fame in French.
Boy. Sir I do not know, whats French
For fer, ferit and fearkt.
Pift. Bid him prepare, for I wil cut his throate.
12
Boy. Feate, vou preat, ill voulles coupele votre gage.
Pist. Ony e ma foy couple la gorge.
Vnleffe thou giue to me egregious raunfome, dye.
One poynt of a foxe. 16
French. Qui dit ill monfiere.
Ill ditye fi vou ny vouly pa domy luy.
Boy. La gran ranfome, ill vou tueres.
French. O Iee vous en pri pettit gentelhome, parle
A cee, gran capataine, pour auez mercie
A moy, ey Iee donerees pour mon ranfome
Cinquante ocios. Ie fuyes vngentelhome de France.
Pist. What fayes he boy ?
Boy. Marry fir he fayes, he is a Gentleman of a great Houfe, of France: and for his ranfome, He will giue you 500. crownes.

Pist. My fury fhall abate,29

And I the Crownes will take.
And as I fuck blood, I will fome mercie fhew.
Follow me cur.
Exit omnes.
Enter the King and his Nolles, Piftoll.
[IV. 6]
King. What the French retire ?

## of Henry the fift.

[IV. 6] Yet all is not done, yet keepe the French the field.
Exc. The Duke of Yorke commends him to your Grace.
4 King. Liues he good Vnckle, twife I fawe him downe, Twife vp againe:
From helmet to the fpurre, all bleeding ore.
Exe. In which aray, braue fouldier doth he lye,
8 Larding the plaines, and by his bloody fide,
Yoake fellow to his honour dying wounds,
The noble Earle of Suffolke alfo ly es.
Suffolke firft dyde, and Yorke all hafted ore,
12 Comes to him where in blood he lay fteept,
And takes him by the beard, kiffes the gafhes
That bloodily did yane vpon his face,
And cryde aloud, tary deare coufin Suffolke:
16 My foule fhall thine keep company in heauen :
Tary deare foule awhile, then flie to reft:
And in this glorious and well foughten field, We kept togither in our chiualdry.
20 Vpon $\mathfrak{7 h}$ fe words I came and cheerd them vp , He tooke me by the hand, faid deare my Lord,
Commend my feruice to my foueraigne.
So did he turne, and ouer Suffolkes necke
24 He threw his wounded arme, and fo efpoufed to death, With blood he fealed. An argument
Of neuer ending loue. The pretie and fweet maner of it, Forft thofe waters from me, which I would haue ftopt,
28 But I not fo much of man in me,
But all my mother came into my eyes,
And gaue me vp to teares.
Kin. I blame you not: for hearing you,
32 I muft conuert to teares.
Alarum foundes.
What new alarum is this ?
Bid euery fouldier kill his prifoner.
Pift. Couple gorge.
Exit omnes.

## The Chronicle Historie

## Enter Flewellen, and Captaine Gower.

Flew. Godes plud kil the boyes and the lugyge, Tis the arrants peece of knauery as can be defired, In the worell now, in your confcience now.

Gour. Tis certaine, there is not a Boy left aliue,
And the cowerdly rafcals that ran from the battell, Themfelues haue done this flaughter:
Befide, they haue carried away and burnt, All that was in the kings Tent:8

Whervpon the king caufed euery prifoners
Throat to be cut. O he is a worthy king.
Flew. I he was born at Monmorth.
Captain Gower, what call you the place where 12
Alexander the big was borne ?
Gour. Alexander the great.
Flew. Why I pray, is nat big great?
As if I fay, big or great, or magnanimous,16

I hope it is all one reconing,
Saue the frafe is a litle varation.
Gour. I thinke Alexander the great
Was borne at Macedon.
His father was called Philip of Macedon, As $I$ take it.

Flew. I thinke it was Macedon indeed where Alexander
Was borne: looke you captaine Gower,
And if you looke into the mappes of the worell well,
You fhall finde litle difference betweene
Macedon and Monmorth. Looke you, there is
A Riuer in Macedon, and there is alfo a Riuer28

In Monmorth, the Riuers name at Monmorth, Is called Wye.
But tis out of my braine, what is the name of the other :
But tis all one, tis fo like, as my fingers is to my fingers,
And there is Samons in both.
Looke you captaine Gower, and you marke it,

## of Henry the fift.

[IV. 7] You fhall finde our King is come after Alexander. 36 God knowes, and you know, that Alexander in his Bowles, and his alles, and his wrath, and his difpleafures, And indignations, was kill his friend Clitus.

Gower. I but our King is not like him in that, 40 For he neuer killd any of his friends.

Flew. Looke you, tis not well done to take the tale out Of a mans mouth, ere it is made an end and finifhed :
I fpeake in the comparifons, as Alexander is kill
44 His friend Clitus: fo our King being in his ripe
Wits and iudgements, is turne away, the fat knite
With the great belly doublet: I am forget his name. Gower. Sir Iohn Falfaffe.
48 Flew. I, I thinke it is Sir Iohn Falftaffe indeed,
I can tell you, theres good men borne at Monmorth. Enter King and the Lords.
King. I was not angry fince I came into France, Vntill this houre. 52 Take a trumpet Herauld,

And ride vnto the horfmen on yon hill :
If they will fight with vs bid them come downe,
Or leaue the field, they do offend our fight :
56 Will they do neither, we will come to them,
And make them skyr away, as faft
As ftones enforft from the old Affirian llings.
Befides, weele cut the throats of thofe we haue, 6o And not one aliue fhall tafte our mercy.

Enter the Herauld.
Gods will what meanes this? knowft thou no That we haue fined thefe bones of ours for ranfome ?

Herald. I come great king for charitable fauour,
64 To fort our Nobles from our common men,
We may haue leaue to bury all our dead,
Which in the field lye fpoyled and troden on.
Kin. I tell thee truly Herauld, I do not know whether

$$
F \quad \text { The }
$$

## The Chronicle Historie

The day he ours or no:
For yet a many of your French do keep the field.
Hera. The day is yours.
Kin. Praifed be God therefore.
What Caftle call you that ?
72
Hera. We call it Agincourt.
Kin. Then call we this the field of Agincourt.
Fought on the day of Cryspin, Cryspin.
Flew. Your grandfather of famous memorie, 76
If your grace be remembred,
Is do good feruice in France.
Kin. Tis true Flewellen.
Flew. Your Maieftie fayes verie true. 80
And it pleafe your Maieftie,
The Wealchmen there was do good feruice,
In a garden where Leekes did grow.
And I thinke your Maieftie wil take no fcorne, $8+$
To weare a Leake in your cap vpon S. Dauies day.
Kin. No Flewellen, for I am wealch as well as you.
Flew. All the water in VVye wil not wafh your wealch
Blood out of yon, God keep it, and preferue it,88

To his graces will and pleafure.
Kin. Thankes good countryman.
Flew. By Iefus I am your Maiefties countryman:
I care not who know it, fo long as your maiefty is an honeft 92
$K$. God keep me fo. Our Herald go with him, (man.
And bring vs the number of the fcattred French.

## Exit Heralds.

Call yonder fouldier hither.
Flew. You fellow come to the king.
$9^{6}$
Kin. Fellow why dooft thou weare that gloue in thy hat ?
Soul. And pleafe your maieftie, tis a rafcals that fwagard
With me the other day: and he hath one of mine,
Which if euer I fee, I haue fworne to ftrike him.
100

## of Henry the fift.

[IV. 7] So hath he fworne the like to me.
$K$. How think you Flewellen, is it lawfull he keep his oath ?
Fl. And it pleafe your maiefty, tis lawful he keep his vow. 104 If he be periur'd once, he is as arrant a beggerly knaue,

As treads vpon too blacke fhues.
Kin. His enemy may be a gentleman of worth.
Flew. And if he be as good a gentleman as Lucifer ro8 And Belzebub, and the diuel himfelfe,

Tis meete he keepe his vowe.
Kin. Well firrha keep your word.
Vnder what Captain ferueft thou?
112 Soul. Vnder Captaine Gower.
Flew. Captaine Gower is a good Captaine:
And hath good littrature in the warres.
Kin. Go call him hither.
I16 Soul. I will my Lord.
Exit Souldier.
Kin. Captain Flewellen, when Alonfon and I was
Downe together, $I$ tooke this gloue off from his helmet, Here Flewellen, weare it. If any do challenge it, 120 He is a friend of Alonfons, And an enemy to mee.

Fle. Your maieftie doth me as great a fauour As can be defired in the harts of his fubiects.
$124 I$ would fee that man now that fhould chalenge this gloue:
And it pleafe God of his grace. $I$ would but fee him, That is all.

Kin. Flewellen knowft thou Captaine Gower?
128 Fle. Captaine Gower is my friend.
And if it like your maieftie, $I$ know him very well.
Kin. Go call him hither.
Flew. I will and it fhall pleafe your maieftie.
132 Kin. Follow Flewellen clofely at the heeles, The gloue he weares, it was the fouldiers:

F 2

## The Chronicle Historie

It may be there will be harme betweene them,
For I do know Flewellen valiant,
And being toucht, as hot as gunpowder:
136
And quickly will returne an iniury.
Go fee there be no harme betweene them.
Enter Goucer, Flewellen, and the Souldier.
Fleur. Captain Gover, in the name of Iefu,
Come to his Maieftie, there is more good toward you, Then you can dreame off.

Soul. Do you beare fou fir: do you know this glowe ${ }^{\text {E }}$
$+$
Flau. I know the the glone is a gloue.
Soul. Sin I know this, and thus I challenge it.
He jitrizes him.
Fizc. Gode plat, and bis. Caprain Gucer fand away:
Ite gite treation his due pretertly.
Enter the King, Trinciate, Carence, and Exeter.
Kin. How now, what is the maner:
Fian. And it thall pleale your Mrette,
Here is the aotrblet peece of creatua come to light,
As rou thatl deriee to tee in a bommers day.
Here is a ratell, begerit ratull, is frice the glowe,
Waich rour Mrefe conte out of tee beimer of tumbn:
And your Mielie till beare me mines, and telimony,
A施 auouchments, that tifis is the gioue.

He that I gace it ton in the night,
Procilied me to weate it in his Eat:
I promiled on triku bim it be EfS.
I mer tha: Gearleman, with mo gioce in his hat,
Aud I thitre I hate bere is grod as mo word.
Fiuc. Your Mritite beares, oter your Maiefies Minbood, what a berserly lowie knuce it is.

Ein. Ler me tee thy gloue. Looke you,
This is the fellow of it.
It was I indeed yoc promiled to trite.

## of Henry the fift.

[IV. 8] And thou thou haft giuen me moft bitter words.
How canft thou make vs amends ?
Flew. Let his necke anfwere it,
If there be any marfhals lawe in the worell.
32 Soul. My Liege, all offences come from the heart :
Neuer came any from mine to offend your Maieftie.
You appeard to me as a common man :
Witneffe the night, your garments, your lowlineffe, 36 And whatfoeuer you receiued vnder that habit, I befeech your Maieftie impute it to your owne fault And not mine. For your felfe came not like your felfe: Had you bene as you feemed, I had made no offence.
40 Therefore I befeech your grace to pardon me.
Kin. Vnckle, fill the gloue with crownes,
And giue it to the fouldier. Weare it fellow,
As an honour in thy cap, till I do challenge it.
44 Giue him the crownes. Come Captaine Flewellen, I muft needs haue you friends.

Flew. By Iefus, the fellow hatn mettall enough
In his belly. Harke you fouldier, there is a fhilling for you, 48 And keep your felfe out of brawles \& brables, \& diffentiōs,

And looke you, it fhall be the better for you.
Soul. Ile none of your money fir, not I.
Flew. Why tis a good fhilling man.
52 Why fhould you be queamifh ? Your fhoes are not fo good:
It will ferue you to mend your fhoes.
Kin. What men of fort are taken vnckle?
Exe. Charles Duke of Orleance, Nephew to the King.
56 Iohn Duke of Burlon, and Lord Bowchquall.
Of other Lords and Barrons, Knights and Squiers, Full fifteene hundred, befides common men. This note doth tell me of ten thoufand
60 French, that in the field lyes flaine.
Of Nobles bearing banners in the field,

## The Chronicle Historie

Charles de le Brute, hie Conftable of France.
Iaques of Chattillian, Admirall of France.
The Maifter of the crosbows, Iohn Duke Alŏfon.
Lord Ranbieres, hie Maifter of France.
The braue fir Gwigzard, Dolphin. Of Nobelle Charillas, Gran Prie, and Rofe, Fawconlridge and Foy.
Gerard and Verton. Vandemant and Leftra.
Here was a royall fellow fhip of death.
Where is the number of our Englith dead?
Edward the Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Suffolke,
Sir Richard Ketly, Dany Gam Efquier :
And of all other, but fiue and twentie.
O God thy arme was here,
And vito thee alone, afcribe we praife.
When without ftrategem,
76
And in euen fhock of battle, was euer heard
So great, and litle loffe, on one part and an other.
Take it God, for it is onely thine.
Exe. Tis wonderfull.
80
King. Come let vs go on proceffion through the camp :
Let it be death proclaimed to any man,
To boaft hereof, or take the praife from God,
Which is his due.
Flew. Is it lawful, and it pleafe your Maieftie,
To tell how many is kild ?
King. Yes Flewellen, but with this acknowledgement, That God fought for vs.88

Flew. Yes in my confcience, he did vs great good.
King. Let there be fung, Nououes and te Deum.
The dead with charitie enterred in clay :
Weele then to Calice, and to England then,
92
Where nere from France, arriude more happier men.
Exit omnes.
Enter Gower, and Flewellen.
[V. 1]
Gower. But why do you weare your Leeke to day ?
Saint

## of Henry the fift.

## [V. I] Saint Dauies day is paft ?

Fleu. There is occafion Captaine Gower, 4 Looke you why, and wherefore, The other day looke you, Pistolles
Which you know is a man of no merites In the worell, is come where I was the other day,
8 And brings bread and fault, and bids me Eate my Leeke: twas in a place, looke you,
Where $I$ could moue no difcentions:
But if $I$ can fee him, $I$ fhall tell him,
12 A litle of my defires.
Gow. Here a comes, fwelling like a Turkecocke.

## Enter Piftoll.

Flew. Tis no matter for his fwelling, and his turkecocks, God pleffe you Antient Pifoll, you fcall, 16 Beggerly, lowfie knaue, God pleffe you.

Pift. Ha, art thou bedlem ?
Doft thou thurft bafe Troyan,
To haue me folde vp Parcas fatall web ?
20 Hence, $I$ am qualmifh at the fmell of Leeke.
Flew. Antient Pistoll. I would defire you becaufe
It doth not agree with your ftomacke, and your appetite, And your digeftions, to eate this Leeke.
24 Pift. Not for Cadwalleder and all his goates.
Flew. There is one goate for you Antient Piftol.
He firikes him.
Pift. Bace Troyan, thou fhall dye.
Flew. I, I know I fhall dye, meane time, I would
28 Defire you to line and eate this Leeke.
Gower. Inough Captaine, you haue aftonifht him.
Flew. Aftonifht him, by Iefu, Ile beate his head
Foure dayes, and foure nights, but Ile
32 Make him eate fome part of my Leeke.
Pist. Well muft I byte ?
Flew. I

## The Chronicle Historie

Flew. I out of queftion or doubt, or ambiguities [V. 1] You muft byte.

Pist. Good good. 36
Flew. I Leekes are good, Antient Pistoll.
There is a fhilling for you to heale your bloody coxkome.
Pist. Me a fhilling.
Flew. If you will not take it, 40
I haue an other Leeke for you.
Pist. I take thy fhilling in earneft of reconing.
Flew. If I owe you any thing, ile pay you in cudgels,
You fhalbe a woodmonger,
And by cudgels, God bwy you,
Antient Pistoll, God bleffe you,
And heale your broken pate.
Antient Pistoll, if you fee Leekes an other time,48

Mocke at them, that is all : God bwy you.
Exit Flewellen.
Pift. All hell fhall ftir for this.
Doth Fortune play the hufwye with me now ?
Is honour cudgeld from my warlike lines ? 52
Well France farwell, newes haue I certainly That Doll is ficke. One mallydie of France, The warres affordeth nought, home will I trug. Bawd will I turne, and vfe the flyte of hand :56

To England will I fteale, And there Ile fteale.
And patches will I get vnto thefe skarres,
And fweare I gat them in the Gallia warres.
бо
Exit Piftoll.
Enter at one doore, the King of England and his Lords. And at [V. 2]
the other doore, the King of France, Queene Katherine, the Duke of Burbon, and others.

Harry. Peace to this meeting, wherefore we are met.

> of Henry the fift.
[V. 2] And to our brorher Franct, Faire time of day.
Faire health vnto our louely coufen Katherine.
4 And as a branch, and member of this ftock:
We do falute you Duke of Burgondie.
Fran. Brother of England, right ioyous are we to behold
Your face, fo are we Princes Englifh euery one.
8 Duk. With pardon vnto both your mightines.
Let it not difpleafe you, if I demaund
What rub or bar hath thus far hindred you,
To keepe you from the gentle fpeech of peace ?
12 Har. If Duke of Burgondy, you wold haue peace,
You muft buy that peace,
According as we haue drawne our articles.
Fran. We haue but with a curfenary eye,
16 Oreviewd them pleafeth your Grace,
To let fome of your Counfell fit with vs, We fhall returne our peremptory anfwere.

Har. Go Lords, and fit with them, 20 And bring vs anfwere backe.

Yet leaue our coufen Katherine here behind.
France. Withall our hearts.

Exit King and the Lords. Manet, Hrry, Katherine, and the Gentlewoman.

Hate. Now Kate, you haue a blunt wooer here
24 Left with you.
If I could win thee at leapfrog,
Or with vawting with my armour on my backe,
Into my faddle,
28 Without brag be it fpoken,
Ide make compare with any
But leauing that Kate,
If thou takeft me now,
32 Thou fhalt have me at the worft:

## The Chronicle Historie

May foy ie oblye, what is to baffie?
Har. To kis, to kis. O that tis not the
Fafhion in Frannce, for the maydes to kis
Before they are married.
Lady. Owye fee votree grace.
Har. Well, weele breake that cuftome. 108
Therefore Kate patience perforce and yeeld.
Before God Kate, you haue witchcraft
In your kiffes :
And may perfwade with me more,
Then all the French Councell.
Your father is returned.

## Enter the King of France, and the Lordes.

How now my Lords?
France. Brother of England,
We haue orered the Articles, And haue agreed to all that we in fedule had.

Exe. Only he hath not fubfcribed this,
Where your maieftie demaunds,
That the king of France hauing any occafion
To write for matter of graunt,
Shall name your highneffe, in this forme :
And with this addition in French.
Noftre trefher filz, Henry Roy D'anglaterre, E heare de France. And thus in Latin : Preclariffimus filius nofter Henricus Rex Anglie, Et heres Francie.128

Fran. Nor this haue we fo nicely ftood vpon, But you faire brother may intreat the fame.

Har. Why then let this among the reft,
Haue his full courfe: And withall,
Your daughter Katherine in mariage.
France.

## of Henry the fift.

[V. 2] Fran. This and what elfe, Your maieftie thall crave.
${ }_{1} 6$ God that difpofeth all, giue you much ioy.
Har. Why then faire Katherine, Come giue me thy hand:
Our mariage will we prefent folemnife,
140 And end our hatred by a bond of loue.
Then will I fweare to Kate, and Kate to mee :
And may our vowes once made, vnbroken bee.

FINIS


## $\mathbb{C} \mathfrak{y}$

## Pife of 管enty the diftly

Reprinted from the First Folio, 1623.

## $\mathbb{C b} \mathfrak{c}$

## 

Reprinted from the First Folio, 1623.

PUBLISHED FOR
The £ew Shakspere Society
BY N. TRÜBNER \& CO., 57, 59, LUDGATE HILL, LONDON, 1875 .

## Series II. 起 ( 6.

john childs and son, pkinters.

# The Life of Henry the Fift. 

## Enter Prologue.

[col. r] $\bigcirc$For a Mufe of Fire, that would afcend The brighteft Heauen of Inuention: A Kingdome for a Stage, Princes to Act,
4 And Monarchs to behold the fivelling Scene. Then flould the Warlike Harry, like himfelfe, Affume the Port of Mars, and at his heeles (Leaflt in, like Hounds) Jhould Famine, Sword, and Fire
8 Crouch for employment. But pardon, Gentles all:
The flat wnrayfed Spirits, that hath dar'd,
On this wnworthy Scaffold, to bring forth
So great an Obiect. Cian this Cock-Pit hold
12 The vaftie fields of France? Or may we cramme
Within this Woodden O, the very Caskes
That did affright the Ayre at Agincourt.?
O pardon : fince a crooked Figure may
16 Atteft in little place a Million,
And let vs, Cyphers to this great Accompt,
[Col. 2] On your imaginarie Forces worke.
Suppofe within the Girdle of thefe Walls.
20 Are now confin'd two mightie Monarchies,
Whofe high, op-reared, and abutting Fronts,
The perillous narrow Ocean parts afunder.
Peece out our imperfections with your thoughts:
24 Into a thoufand parts diuide one Man,
And make imaginarie Puiffance.
Thinke when we talke of Horfes, that you fee them, Printing their prowd Hoofes i'th' receiuing Earth:
28 For 'tis your thoughts that now muft deck our Kings, Carry them here and there: Iumping o're Times;
Turning th' accomplifliment of many yeeres
Into an Howre-glafle : for the which fupplie,
32 Admit me Chorus to this Historie;
Who Prologue-like, your humble patience pray, Gently to heare, kindly to iudge our Play.

Exit.

$$
a \text {-FOL. } \quad 1
$$

## 09

## [The Life of Henry the Fift.]

Actus Primus. Scœna Prima.

## Enter the two Bifhops of Canterlury and Ely.

Bifh. Cant.
Y Lord, Ile tell you, that felfe Bill is vrg'd,

Bifh. Ely. But how my Lord fhall we refift it now ?
Bifh. Cant. It muft be thought on : if it paffe againft vs,
We loofe the better halfe of our Poffeffion:
For all the Temporall Lands, which men deuout
By Teftament haue given to the Church, Would they ftrip from vs; being valu'd thus, As much as would maintaine, to the Kings honor, Full fifteene Earles, and fifteene hundred Knights, Six thoufand and two hundred good Efquires :
[I. r] And to reliefe of Lazars, and weake age 16 Of indigent faint Soules, paft corporall toyle,

A hundred Almes-houfes, right well fupply'd:
And to the Coffers of the King befide, A thoufand pounds by th'yeere. Thus runs the Bill.
20 Bifh. Ely. This would drinke deepe.
Bifh. Cant. 'Twould drinke the Cup and all. Bifh. Ely. But what preuention?
[col.2] Bifh. Cant. The King is full of grace, and faire regard.
24 Bifh. Ely. And a true louer of the holy Church. Bifh Cant. The courfes of his youth promis'd it not.
The breath no fooner left his Fathers body, But that his wildneffe, mortify'd in him, 28 Seem'd to dye too: yea, at that very moment, Confideration like an Angell came, And whipt th'offending Adam out of him; Leauing his body as a Paradife, 32 T'inuelop and containe Celeftiall Spirits.

Neuer was fuch a fodaine Scholler made:
Neuer came Reformation in a Flood, With fuch a heady currance fcowring faults : 36 Nor neuer Hidra-headed Wilfulneffe

So foone did loofe his Seat ; and all at once; As in this King. Bifh. Ely. We are bleffed in the Change.
40 Bifh. Cant. Heare him but reafon in Diuinitie;
And all-admiring, with an inward wifh You would defire the King were made a Prelate: Heare him debate of Common-wealth Affaires; 44 You would fay, it hath been all in all his ftudy :

Lift his difcourfe of Warre; and you fhall heare A fearefull Battaile rendred you in Mufique.

「col. i.
[I. 1]
$4^{8}$
The Gordian Knot of it he will vnloofe,
Familiar as his Garter: that when he fpeakes,
The Ayre, a Charter'd Libertine, is ftill,
And the mute Wonder lurketh in mens eares,
To fteale his fweet and honyed Sentences: $5^{2}$
So that the Art and Practique part of Life, Muft be the Miftreffe to this Theorique.
Which is a wonder how his Grace fhould gleane it, Since his addiction was to Courfes vaine,56

His Companies vnletter'd, rude, and fhallow, His Houres fill'd vp with Ryots, Banquets, Sports;
And neuer noted in him any ftudie, Any retyrement, any fequeftration,60

From open Haunts and Popularitie.
B. Ely. The Strawberry growes vnderneath the Nettle,

And holefome Berryes thriue and ripen beft, Neighbour'd by Fruit of bafer qualitie :
And fo the Prince obfcur'd his Contemplation Vnder the Veyle of Wildneffe, which (no doubt)
Grew like the Summer Graffe, fafteft by Night, Vnfeene, yet creffiue in his facultie.68
B. Cant. It muft be fo; for Miracles are ceaft:

And therefore we muft needes admit the meanes, How things are perfected.
B. Ely. But my good Lord : $\quad 7^{2}$

How now for mittigation of this Bill,
Vrg'd by the Commons? doth his Maieftie Incline to it, or no?
b. Cant. He feemes indifferent: 76

Or rather fwaying more vpon our part, Then cherifhing th'exhibiters againft vs : For I haue made an offer to his Maieftie,
[I. I] Vpon our Spirituall Conuocation, And in regard of Caufes now in hand, Which I haue open'd to his Grace at large, As touching France, to giue a greater Summe, 84 Then euer at one time the Clergie yet Did to his Predeceffors part withall.
B. Ely. How did this offer feeme receiu'd, my Lord ?
B. Cant. With good acceptance of his Maieftie:

88 Saue that there was not time enough to heare, As I perceiu'd his Grace would faine haue done, The feueralls and vnhidden paffages
Of his true Titles to fome certaine Dukedomes, 92 And generally, to the Crowne and Seat of France, Deriu'd from Edward, his great Grandfather.
B. Ely. What was th'impediment that broke this off:
B. Cant. The French Embaffador vpon that inftant 96 Crau'd audience ; and the howre I thinke is come, To giue him hearing: I it foure a Clock ?
B. Ely. It is.
B. Cant. Then goe we in, to know his Embaffie: 100 Which I could with a ready gueffe declare,

Before the Frenchman fpeake a word of it.
B. Ely. Ile wait vpon you, and I long to heare it.

Exeunt.
[I. 2] Enter the King, Humfrey, Bedford, Clarence, Warwick, Westmerland, and Exeter.
King. Where is my gracious Lord of Canterbury ? Exeter. Not here in prefence.
King. Send for him, good Vnckle.
$4 W e f t m$. Shall we call in th'Ambaffador, my Liege ?
King. Not yet, my Coufin : we would be refolu'd,
Before we heare him, of fome things of weight, That taske our thoughts, concerning vs and France.
$70 \quad$ The Life of Henry the Fift.

Enter two Bi/hops.
B. Cant. God and his Angels guard your facred Throne,

And make you long become it.
King. Sure we thanke you.
My learned Lord, we pray you to proceed, And iuftly and religioufly vufold,
Why the Law Salike, that they have in France,
Or fhould or thould not barre vs in our Clayme:
And God forbid, my deare and faithfull Lord, That you thould fafhion, wreft, or bow your reading,
Or nicely charge your vnderftanding Soule,
With opening Titles mifcreate, whofe right
Sutes not in natiue colours with the truth :
For God doth know, how many now in health,
Shall drop their blood, in approbation
Of what your reuerence thall incite vs to.
Therefore take heed how you impawne our Perfon, How you awake our fleeping Sword of Warre;
We charge you in the Name of God take heed:
For neuer two fuch Kingdomes did contend,
Without much fall of blood, whofe guiltletle drops
Are euery one, a Woe, a fore Complaint,28
'Gainft him, whofe wrongs giues edge vnto the Swords, That makes fuch wafte in briefe mortalitie.
Vnder this Coniuration, fpeake my Lord:
For we will heare, note, and beleeue in heart,32

That what you fpeake, is in your Confcience wafht, As pure as finne with Baptifme.
B. Can. Then heare me gracious Soueraign, \& you Peers, That owe your felues, your lines, and feruices, 36
To this Imperiall Throne. There is no barre
To make againft your Highneffe Clayme to France,
[I. 2] But this which they produce from Pharamond, 40 In terram Salicam Mulieres ne fuccedaul, No Woman fhall fucceed in Salike Land: Which Salike Land, the French vniuftly gloze To be the Realme of France, and Pharamond 44 The founder of this Law, and Female Barre. Yet their owne Authors faithfully affirme, That the Land Salike is in Germanie, Betweene the Flouds of Sala and of Elue: 48 Where Charles the Great hauing fubdu'd the Saxons, There left behind and fettled certaine French : Who holding in difdaine the German Women, For fome difhoneft manners of their life, 52 Eftablifht then this Law ; to wit, No Female Should be Inheritrix in Salike Land: Which Salike (as I faid) 'twixt Elue and Sala, Is at this day in Germanie, call'd Meifen. 56 Then doth it well appeare, the Salike Law Was not deuifed for the Realme of France: Nor did the French poffeffe the Salike Land, Vntill foure hundred one and twentie yeeres 60 After defunction of King Pharamond, Idly fuppos'd the founder of this Law, Who died within the yeere of our Redemption, Foure hundred twentie fix: and Charles the Great 64 Subdu'd the Saxons, and did feat the French Beyond the Riuer Sala, in the yeere Eight hundred fiue. Befides, their Writers fay, King Pepin, which depofed Childerike, 68 Did as Heire Generall, being defcended Of Blithild, which was Daughter to King Clothair, Make Clayme and Title to the Crowne of France. Hugh Capet alfo, who vfurpt the Crowne
71 The Life of Henry the Fift.[COL. 1.
Of Charles the Duke of Loraine, fole Heire male[I. 2]
Of the true Line and Stock of Charles the Great :To find his Title with fome fhewes of truth,Though in pure truth it was corrupt and naught,Conuey'd himfelfe as th'Heire to th' Lady Lingare,76
Daughter to Charlemaine, who was the Sonne
To Lewes the Emperour, and Lewes the SonneOf Charles the Great: alfo King Lewes the Tenth,Who was fole Heire to the Vfurper Capet,80Could not keepe quiet in his confcience,Wearing the Crowne of France, 'till fatisfied,That faire Queene IJalel, his Grandmother,Was Lineall of the Lady Ermengare,84
Daughter to Charles the forefaid Duke of Loraine :
By the which Marriage, the Lyne of Charles the GreatWas re-vnited to the Crowne of France.So, that as cleare as is the Summers Sunne,88King Pepins Title, and Hugh Capets Clayme,King Lewes his fatisfaction, all appeareTo hold in Right and Title of the Female:So doe the Kings of France unto this day.92
Howbeit, they would hold vp this Salique Law,
To barre your Highnelfe clayming from the Female,And rather chufe to hide them in a Net,Then amply to imbarre their crooked Titles,96Vfurpt from you and your Progenitors.King. May I with right and confcience make this claim ?Bifh. Cant. The finne vpon my head, dread Soueraigne :
For in the Booke of Numbers is it writ, ..... 100
When the man dyes, let the InheritanceDefcend vinto the Daughter. Gracious Lord,Stand for your owne, vnwind your bloody Flagge,Looke back into your mightie Anceftors :104
[I. 2] Goe my dread Lord, to your great Grandfires Tombe, From whom you clayme; inuoke his Warlike Spirit, And your Great Vnckles, Edward the Black Prince, 108 Who on the French ground play'd a Tragedie, Making defeat on the full Power of France :
Whiles his moft mightie Father on a Hill Stood fmiling, to behold his Lyons Whelpe
112 Forrage in blood of French Nobilitie.
O Noble Englifh, that could entertaine
With halfe their Forces, the full pride of France, And let another halfe ftand laughing by, 116 All out of worke, and cold for action. Bijh. Awake remembrance of thefe valiant dead, And with your puiffant Arme renew their Feats; You are their Heire, you fit vpon their Throne: 120 The Blood and Courage that renowned them,

Runs in your Veines: and my thrice-puiffant Liege
Is in the very May-Morne of his Youth, Ripe for Exploits and mightie Enterprifes.
124 Exe. Your Brother Kings and Monarchs of the Earth
Doe all expect, that you fhould rowfe your felfe, As did the former Lyons of your Blood.

Weft. They know your Grace hath caufe, and means, and 128 So hath your Highneffe : neuer King of England

Had Nobles richer, and more loyall Subiects,
Whofe hearts haue left their bodyes here in England, And lye pauillion'd in the fields of France.
132 Bi/h. Can. O let their bodyes follow my deare Liege
With Bloods, and Sword and Fire, to win your Right:
In ayde whereof, we of the Spiritualtie
Will rayfe your Highneffe fuch a mightie Summe, ${ }_{1} 66$ As neuer did the Clergie at one time

Bring in to any of your Anceftors.

King. We muft not onely arme t'inuade the French, But lay downe our proportions, to defend Againft the Scot, who will make roade vpon vs, With all aduantages.

Bi/h. Can. They of thofe Marches, gracious Soueraign, Shall be a Wall fufficient to defend
Our in-land from the pilfering Borderers. 144
King. We do not meane the courfing finatchers onely,
But feare the maine intendment of the Scot,
Who hath been fill a giddy neighbour to vs:
For you fhall reade, that my great Grandfather
Neuer went with his forces into France,
But that the Scot, on his vnfurnifht Kingdome,
Came pouring like the Tyde into a breach,
With ample and brim fulneffe of his force, I 52
Galling the gleaned Land with hot Affayes,
Girding with grieuous fiege, Caftles and Townes:
That England being emptie of defence,
Hath fhooke and trembled at th'ill neighbourhood.
156
B. Can. She hath bin the more fear'd thē harm'd, my Liege:

For heare her but exampl'd by her felfe,
When all her Cheualrie hath been in France,
And fhee a mourning Widdow of her Nobles,
Shee hath her felfe not onely well defended, But taken and impounded as a Stray,
The King of Scots: whom fhee did fend to France, To fill King Edwards fame with prifoner Kings, And make their Chronicle as rich with prayfe, As is the Owfe and bottome of the Sea
With funken Wrack, and fum-leffe Treafuries. Bi/h. Ely. But there's a faying very old and true, 168 If that you will France win, then with Scotlan!! first legia. For once the Eagle (England) being in prey,
[I. 2] To her vnguarded Neft, the Weazell (Scot) 172 Comes fneaking, and fo fucks her Princely Egges,

Playing the Moufe in abfence of the Cat, To tame and hauocke more then the can eate.

Exet. It followes theu, the Cat muft ftay at home, 176 Yet that ${ }^{1 s}$ but a crufh'd necefsity, Since we haue lockes to fafegard neceffaries, And pretty traps to catch the petty theeues. While that the Armed hand doth fight abroad, 180 Th'aduifed head defends it felfe at home :

For Gouernment, though high, and low, and lower,
Put into parts, doth keepe in one confent, Congreeing in a full and natural clofe, 184 Like Muficke.

Cant. Therefore doth heauen diuide
The ftate of man in diuers functions, Setting endeuour in continual motion : 188 To which is fixed as an ayme or butt, Obedience : for fo worke the Hony Bees, Creatures that by a rule in Nature teach The Act of Order to a peopled Kingdome. 192 They have a King, and Officers of forts, Where fome like Magiftrates correct at home : Others, like Merchants venter Trade abroad : Others, like Souldiers armed in their ftings, 196 Make boote vpon the Summers Veluet buddes : Which pillage, they with merry march bring home To the Tent-royal of their Emperor : Who bufied in his Maiefties furueyes 200 The finging Mafons building roofes of Gold, The ciuil Citizens kneading vp the hony; The poore Mechanicke Porters, crowding in Their heauy burthens at his narrow gate :

The fad-ey'd Iuftice with his furly humme,
Deliuering ore to Executors pale
The lazie yawning Drone : I this inferre,
That many things hauing full reference
To one confent, may worke contrarioully, 208
As many Arrowes loofed feuerall wayes
Come to one marke: as many wayes meet in one towne,
As many frefh ftreames meet in one falt fea;
As many Lynes clofe in the Dials center :
So may a thoufand actions once a foote,
And in one purpofe, and be all well borne
Without defeat. Therefore to France, my Liege,
Diuide your happy England into foure,
Whereof, take you one quarter into France,
And you withall fhall make all Gallia fhake.
If we with thrice fuch powers left at home,
Cannot defend our owne doores from the dogge,
Let vs be worried, and our Nation lofe
The name of hardineffe and policie.
King. Call in the Meffengers fent from the Dolphin.
Now are we well refolu'd, and by Gods helpe
And yours, the noble finewes of our power,
France being ours, wee'l bend it to our Awe,
Or breake it all to peeces. Or there wee'l fit,
(Ruling in large and ample Emperie, 228
Ore France, and all her (almoft) Kingly Dukedomes)
Or lay thefe bones in an vnworthy Vrne,
Tombleffe, with no remembrance ouer them :
Either our Hiftory fhall with full mouth
Speake freely of our Acts, or elfe our graue
Like Turkifh mute, fhall haue a tongueleffe mouth, Not worfhipt with a waxen Epitaph.

Enter Amla@fadors of France.
[1. 2] Now are we well prepar'd to know the pleafure Of our faire Cofin Dolphin : for we heare, Your greeting is from him, not from the King. Amb. May't pleafe your Maieftie to give vs leaue
240 Freely to render what we haue in charge :
Or fhall we faringly fhew you farre off
The Dolphins meauing, and our Embafsie.
King. We are no Tyrant, but a Chriftian King,
244 Vnto whofe grace our pafsion is as fubiect
As is our wretches fettred in our prifons, Therefore with franke and with vncurbed plainneffe, Tell vs the Dolphins minde.
248 Amb. Thus than in few :
Your Highneffe lately fending into France, Did claime fome certaine Dukedomes, in the right Of your great Predeceffor, King Edward the third. 252 In anfwer of which claime, the Prince our Matter Sayes, that you fauour too much of your youth, And bids you be aduis'd : There's nought in France, That can be with a nimble Galliard wonne : 256 You cannot reuell into Dukedomes there.

He therefore fends you meeter for your fpirit This Tun of Treafure; and in lieu of this, Defires you let the dukedomes that you claime 260 Heare no more of you. This the Dolphin fpeakes.

King. What Treafure Vncle?
Exe. Tennis balles, my Liege.
Kin, We are glad the Dolphin is fo pleafant with vs, 264 His Prefent, and your paines we thanke you for:

When we haue matcht our Rackets to thefe Balles,
We will in France (by Gods grace) play a fet,
Shall ftrike his fathers Crowne into the hazard.
268 Tell him, he hath made a match with fuch a Wrangler,
[COL. 2.

We neuer valew'd this poore feate of England, And therefore liuing hence, did giue our felfe To barbarous licenfe : As 'tis euer common, That men are merrieft, when they are from home. 276
But tell the Dolphin, I will keepe my State, Be like a King, and fhew my fayle of Greatneffe, When I do rowfe me in my Throne of France. For that I haue layd by my Maieftie, 280
And plodded like a man for working dayes :
But I will rife there with fo full a glorie,
That I will dazle all the eyes of France, Yea frike the Dolphin blinde to looke on vs,
And tell the pleafant Prince, this Mocke of his Hath turn'd his balles to Gun-ftones, and his foule
Shall ftand fore charged, for the waftefull vengeance
That fhall flye with them : for many a thoufand widows288

Shall this his Mocke, mocke out of their deer hnsbands;
Mocke mothers from their fonnes, mock Caftles downe:
And fome are yet vngotten and vnborne, That fhal haue caufe to curfe the Dolphins fcorne.
But this lyes all within the wil of God,
To whom I do appeale, and in whofe name Tel you the Dolphin, I am comming on, To venge me as I may, and to pat forth My rightfull hand in a wel-hallow'd caufe.
So get you hence in peace : And tell the Dolphin, His Ieft will fauour but of fhallow wit,
When thoufands weepe more then did laugh at it.
Conuey them with fafe conduct. Fare you well.
Exeunt Ambafadors.
[I. 2] Exe. This was a merry Meffage.
King. We hope to make the Sender blufh at it :
304 Therefore, my Lords, omit no happy howre,
That may giue furth'rance to our Expedition :
For we haue now no thought in vs but France,
Saue thofe to God, that runne before our bufineffe.
308 Therefore let our proportions for thefe Warres
Be foone collected, and all things thought vpon,
That may with reafonable fwiftneffe adde More Feathers to our Wings: for God before, 312 Wee'le chide this Dolphin at his fathers doore. Therefore let euery man now taske his thought, That this faire Action may on foot be brought. Exeunt.
[II.] Flouri/h. Enter Chorus.
Now all the Youth of England are on fire,
And filken Dalliance in the Wardrobe lyes:
Now thriue the Armorers, and Honors thought
4 Reignes folely in the breaft of euery man.
They fell the Pafture now, to buy the Horfe;
Following the Mirror of all Chriftian Kings,
With winged heeles, as Englifh Mercuries.
8 For now fits Expectation in the Ayre, And hides a Sword, from Hilts vnto the Point, With Crownes Imperiall, Crownes and Coronets. Promis'd to Harry, and his followers.
12 The French aduis'd by good intelligence
Of this moft dreadfull preparation, Shake in their feare, and with pale Pollicy Seeke to diuert the Englifh purpofes. 16 O England: Modell to thy inward Greatneffe, Like little Body with a mightie Heart:

What

What mightft thou do, that honour would thee do,
Were all thy children kinde and naturall:
But fee, thy fault France hath in thee found out,
A neft of hollow bofomes, which he filles
With treacherous Crownes, and three corrupted men:
One, Richard Earle of Cambridge, and the fecond Henry Lord Scroope of Ma/ham, and the third
Sir Thomas Grey Knight of Northumberland,
Haue for the Gilt of France (O guilt indeed)
Confirm'd Confpiracy with fearefull France, And by their hands, this grace of Kings muft dye.
If Hell and Treafon hold their promifes,
Ere he take fhip for France; and in Southampton.
Linger your patience on, and wee'l digeft Th'abufe of diftance ; force a play : 32
The fumme is payde, the Traitors are agreed, The King is fet from London, and the Scene
Is now tranfported (Gentles) to Southampton,
There is the Play-houfe now, there muft you fit,
And thence to France fhall we conuey you fafe, And bring you backe: Charming the narrow feas To giue you gentle Paffe : for if we may, Wee'l not offend one ftomacke with our Play.
But till the King come forth, and not till then, Vnto Southampton do we fhift our Scene.

Exit.

Enter Corporall Nym, and Lieutenant Bardolfe.
[II. I]
Bar. Well met Corporall Nym.
Nym. Good morrow Lieutenant Bardolfe.
Bar. What, are Ancient Piftoll and you friends vet ?
Nym. For my part, I care not: I fay little: but when 4 time fhall ferue, there fhall be fmiles, but that fhall be as it may. I dare not fight, but I will winke and holde out
[II. I] mine yron : it is a fimple one, but what though ? It will 8 tofte Cheefe, and it will endure cold, as another mans fword will : and there's an end.

Bar. I will beftow a breakfaft to make you friendes, and wee'l bee all three fworne brothers to France: Let't 12 be fo good Corporall Nym.

Nym.Faith, I will liue fo long as I may, that's the certaine of it: and when I cannot liue any longer, I will doe as I may : That is my reft, that is the rendeuous of it.
16 Bar. It is certaine Corporall, that he is marryed to Nell Quickly, and certainly fhe did you wrong, for you were troth-plight to her.

Nym. I cannot tell, Things muft be as they may: men 20 may fleepe, and they may haue their throats about them at that time, and fome fay, kniues haue edges: It mu't be as it may, though patience be a tyred name, yet fhee will plodde, there muft be Conclufions, well, I cannot 24 tell.

Enter Piffoll, Eo Quickly.
Bar. Heere comes Ancient Pifioll and his wife: good Corporall be patient heere. How now mine Hoafte Piftoll?
28 Pift. Bafe Tyke, cal'ft thou mee Hofte, now by this hand I fweare I fcorne the terme : nor fhall my Nel keep Lodgers.

Hoft. No by my troth, not long: For we cannot lodge 32 and board a dozen or fourteene Gentlewomen that liue honeftly by the pricke of their Needles, but it will bee thought we keepe a Bawdy-houfe ftraight. O welliday Lady, if he be not hewne now, we fhall fee wilful adulte36 ry and murther committed.

Bar. Good Lieutenant, good Corporal offer nothing heere. Nym. Pifh.

$$
a-\text { FOL. } \quad 2
$$

17

Pif. Pith for thee, Ifland dogge : thou prickeard cur [II. r] of Ifland.

Hof. Good Corporall Nym fhew thy valor, and put vp your fword.

Nym. Will you fhogge off? I would have you folus.
Piff. Solus, egregious dog? O Viper vile; The folus 44 in thy moft meruailous face, the folus in thy teeth, and in thy throate, and in thy hatefull Lungs, yea in thy Maw perdy; and which is worfe, within thy naftie mouth. I do retort the folus in thy bowels, for I can take, and Pi-48 fols cocke is vp, and flafhing fire will follow.

Nym. I am not Barlafon, you cannot coniure mee : I haue an humor to knocke you indifferently well: If you grow fowle with me Piftoll, I will fcoure you with my 52 Rapier, as I may, in fayre tearmes. If you would walke off, I would pricke your guts a little in good tearmes, as I may, and that's the humor of it.

Pijf. O Braggard vile, and damned furious wight, 56 The Graue doth gape, and doting death is neere, Therefore exhale.

Bar. Heare me, heare me what I fay: Hee that ftrikes the firft ftroake, Ile run him vp to the hilts, as I am a fol- 60 dier.
$P i j$. An oath of mickle might, and fury fhall abate. Giue me thy fift, thy fore-foote to me giue: Thy fpirites are moft tall.

Nym. I will cut thy throate one time or other in faire termes, that is the humor of it.

Piftoll. Couple a gorge, that is the word. I defie thee againe. O hound of Creet, think'ft thou my fpoufe to get? 68 No, to the fpittle goe, and from the Poudring tub of infamy, fetch forth the Lazar Kite of Creflids kinde, Doll Teare-fleete, the by name, and her efpoufe. I haue, and I
[II. I] will hold the Quondam Quickely for the onely fhee : and Pauca, there's enough to go to.

Enter the Boy.
Boy. Mine Hoaft Piftoll, you muft come to my Mayfter, and your Hofteffe: He is very ficke, \& would to bed. $7 \sigma$ Good Bardolfe, put thy face betweene his fheets, and do the Office of a Warming-pan : Faith, he's very ill.

Bard. Away you Rogue.
Hoft. By my troth he'l yeeld the Crow a pudding one 80 of thefe dayes: the King has kild his heart. Good Hufband come home prefently. Exit
Bar. Come, fhall I make you two friends. Wee muft to France together: why the diuel hould we keep kniues 84 to cut one anothers throats ?

Pift. Let floods ore-fwell, and fiends for food howle on.

Nym. You'l pay me the eight fhillings I won of you 88 at Betting?

Pif. Bafe is the Slaue that payes.
Nym. That now I wil haue : that's the humor of it.
Piff. As manhood fhal compound : pufh home. Draw
92 Bard. By this fword, hee that makes the first thruft, Ile kill him : By this fword, I wil.

Pi. Sword is an Oath, \& Oaths muft haue their courfe
Bar. Coporall Nym, \& thou wilt be friends be frends, 96 and thou wilt not, why then be enemies with me to: prethee put vp.

Pift. A Noble fhalt thou haue, and prefent pay, and Liquor likewife will I giue to thee, and friendfhippe 100 fhall combyne, and brotherhood. Ile liue by Nymme, \& Nymme fhall liue by me, is not this iuft? For I fhal Sutler be vnto the Campe, and profits will accrue. Giue mee thy hand.

$$
\begin{gathered}
\text { h } 3 \\
\text { i9 }
\end{gathered}
$$

Nym. I fhall haue my Noble?
Pift. In cafh, moft iuftly payd.
Nym. Well, then that the humor of't.
Enter Hoftelfe.
$H_{o f f}$. As euer you come of women, come in quickly to fir Iohn: A poore heart, hee is fo fhak'd of a burning 108 quotidian Tertian, that it is moft lamentable to behold. Sweet men, come to him.

Nym. The King hath run bad humors on the Knight, that's the euen of it.

Piff. Nym, thou haft fpoke the right, his heart is fracted and corroborate.

Nym. The King is a good King, but it muft bee as it may: he paffes fome humors, and carreeres. 116

Piff. Let vs condole the Knight, for (Lambekins) we will liue.

Enter Exeter, Bedford, छఠ Wefimerland.
Bed Fore God his Grace is bold to truft thefe traitors
Exe. They fhall be apprehended by and by.
Weft. How fmooth and euen they do bear themfelues, As if allegeance in their bofomes fate
Crowned with faith, and conftant loyalty.
Bed. The King hath note of all that they intend, By interception, which they dreame not of.

Exe. Nay, but the man that was his bedfellow,
Whom he hath dull'd and cloy'd with gracious fauours;
That he fhould for a forraigne purfe, fo fell
His Soueraignes life to death and treachery.
Sound Trumpets.
Enter the King, Scroope, Cambridge, and Gray.
King. Now fits the winde faire, and we will aboord.
My Lord of Cambridge, and my kinde Lord of Mafham, And you my gentle Knight, giue me your thoughts:
[II. 2] Thinke you not that the powres we beare with vs 16 Will cut their paffage through the force of France ?

Doing the execution, and the acte,
For which we haue in head affembled them.
Scro. No doubt my Liege, if each man do his beft.
20 King. I doubt not that, fince we are well perfwaded
We carry not a heart with vs from hence,
That growes not in a faire confent with ours:
Nor leaue not one behinde, that doth not wifh 24 Succeffe and Conqueft to attend on vs.

Cam. Neuer was Monarch better fear'd and lou'd,

- Then is your Maiefty ; there's not I thinke a fubiect

That fits in heart-greefe and vneafineffe 28 Vnder the fweet fhade of your gouernment.

Kni. True: thofe that were your Fathers enemies, Haue fteep'd their gauls in hony, and do ferue you With hearts create of duty, and of zeale.
32 King. We therefore haue great caufe of thankfulnes,
And fhall forget the office of our hand Sooner then quittance of defert and merit, According to the weight and worthineffe. ${ }_{3} 6$ Scro. So feruice fhall with fteeled finewes toyle, And labour fhall refrefh it felfe with hope To do your Grace inceffant feruices.

King. We Iudge no leffe. Vnkle of Exeter, 40 Inlarge the man committed yefterday,

That rayl'd againft our perfon: We confider It was exceffe of Wine that fet him on, And on his more aduice, We pardon him.
44 Scro. That's mercy, but too mueh fecurity : Let him be punifh'd Soueraigne, leaft example Breed (by his fufferance) more of fuch a kind. Kiug. O let vs yet be mercifull.

Cam. So may your Highneffe, and yet punifh too.
Grey. Sir, you fhew great mercy if you giue him life, After the tafte of much correction.

King. Alas, your too much loue and care of me,
Are heauy Orifons 'gainft this poore wretch:
If little faults proceeding on diftemper,
Shall not be wink'd at, how thall we ftretch our eye
When capitall crimes, chew'd, fwallow'd, and digefted,
Appeare before vs ? Wee'l yet inlarge that man,56

Though Cambridge, Scroope, and Gray, in their deere care
And tender preferuation of our perfon
Wold haue him punifh'd. And now to our French caufes,
Who are the late Commifioners ?
Cam. I one my Lord,
Your Highneffe bad me aske for it to day.
Scro. So did you me my Liege.
Gray. And I my Royall Soueraigne.
6
King. Then Richard Earle of Cambridge, there is yours: There yours Lord Scroope of Mafham, and Sir Knight:
Gray of Northumberland, this fame is yours:
Reade them, and know I know your worthineffe.
My Lord of Weftmerland, and Vnkle Exeter,
We will aboord to night. Why how now Gentlemen ?
What fee you in thofe papers, that you loore
So much complexion? Looke ye how they change :
Their cheekes are paper. Why, what reade you there,
That haue fo cowarded and chac'd your blood
Out of apparance.
Cam. I do confeffe my fault,
And do fubmit me to your Highneffe mercy.
Gray. Scro. To which we all appeale.
King. The mercy that was quicke in vs but late, By your owne counfaile is fuppreft and kill'd:
[II. 2] You muft not dare (for fhame) to talke of mercy, For your owne reafons turne into your bofomes, As dogs vpon their maifters, worrying you : 84 See you my Princes, and my Noble Peeres, Thefe Englifh monfters: My Lord of Cambriage heere. You know how apt our loue was, to accord To furnifh with all appertinents
88 Belonging to his Honour ; and this man, Hath for a few light Crownes, lightly confpir'd And fworne vnto the practifes of France To kill vs heere in Hampton. To the which, 92 This Knight no leffe for bounty bound to Vs Then Cambridge is, hath likewife fworne. But O, What fhall I fay to thee Lord Scroope, thou cruell, Ingratefull, fauage, and inhumane Creature ?
96 Thou that didft beare the key of all my counfailes, That knew'ft the very bottome of my foule, That (almoft) might'ft haue coyn'd me into Golde, Would'ft thou haue practis'd on me, for thy vfe ? roo May it be pofsible, that forraigne hyer Could out of thee extract one fparke of euill That might annoy my finger? 'Tis fo ftrange, That though the truth of it ftands off as groffe 104 As blacke and white, my eye will fcarfely fee it. Treafon, and murther, euer kept together, As two yoake diuels fworne to eythers purpofe, Working fo groffely in an naturall caufe, 108 That admiration did not hoope at them. But thou (gainft all proportion) didft bring in Wonder to waite on treafon, and on murther : And whatfoeuer cunning fiend it was
112 That wrought vpon thee fo prepofteroufly, Hath got the voyce in hell for excellence :

And other diuels that fuggeft by treafons,
Do botch and bungle vp damnation,
With patches, colours, and with formes being fetcht
From glift'ring femblances of piety :
But he that temper'd thee, bad thee ftand vp,
Gaue thee no inftance why thou fhouldft do treafon,
Vnleffe to dub thee with the name of Traitor.
If that fame Dæmon that hath gull'd thee thus,
Should with his Lyon-gate walke the whole world,
He might returne to vaftie Tartar backe,
And tell the Legions, I can neuer win
A foule fo eafie as that Englifhmans.
Oh, how haft thou with iealoufie infected
The fweetneffe of affiance? Shew men dutifull, Why fo didft thou : feeme they graue and learned ?128

Why fo didft thou. Come they of Noble Family ?
Why fo didft thou.Seeme they religious?
Why fo didft thou. Or are they fare in diet,
Free from groffe pafsion, or of mirth, or anger,
Conftant in fpirit, not fweruing with the blood, Garnifh'd and deck'd in modeft complement, Not working with the eye, without the eare, And but in purged iudgement trufting neither,
Such and fo finely boulted didft thou feeme:
And thus thy fall hath left a kinde of blot,
To make thee full fraught man, and beft indued
With fome fufpition, I will weepe for thee.
For this reuolt of thine, me thinkes is like
Another fall of Man. Their faults are open,
Arreft them to the anfwer of the Law,
And God acquit them of their practifes.
144
Exe. I arreft thee of High Treafon, by the name of Richard Earle of Cambridge .
[II. 2] I arreft thee of High Treafon, by the name of Thomas 148 Lord Scroope of Mar/ham.

I arreft thee of High Treafon, by the name of Thomas Grey, Knight of Northumberland.

Scro. Our purpofes, God iuftly hath difcouer'd, 152 And I repent my fault more then my death, Which I befeech your Highneffe to forgiue, Although my body pay the price of it. Cam. For me, the Gold of France did not feduce, 156 Although I did admit it as a motiue, The fooner to effect what I intended: But God be thanked for preuention, Which in fufferance heartily will reioyce, 160 Befeeching God, and you, to pardon mee. Gray. Neuer did faithfull fubiect more reioyce At the difcouery of moft dangerous Treafon, Then I do at this houre ioy ore my felfe, 164 Preuented from a damned enterprize; My fault, but not my body, pardon Soueraigne.

King. God quit you in his mercy: Hear your fentence You haue confpir'd againft Our Royall perfon, 168 Ioyn'd with an enemy proclaim'd, and from his Coffers, Receyu'd the Golden Earneft of Our death : Wherein you would haue fold your King to flaughter, His Princes, and his Peeres to feruitude, 172 His Subiects to opprefsion, and contempt, And his whole Kingdome into defolation : Touching our perfon, feeke we no reuenge, But we our Kingdomes fafety uuft fo tender, 176 Whofe ruine you fought, that to her Lawes We do deliuer you. Get you therefore hence, (Poore miferable wretches) to your death: The tafte whereof, God of his mercy giue

You patience to indure, and true Repentance
Of all your deare offences. Beare them hence.
Now Lords for France : the enterprife whereof
Shall be to you as vs,like glorious.
We doubt not of a faire and luckie Warre,
Since God fo gracioufly hath brought to light
This dangerous Treafon, lurking in our way,
To hinder our beginnings. We doubt not now,
But euery Rubbe is fmoothed on our way.
Then forth, deare Countreymen: Let vs deliuer
Our Puiffance into the hand of God, Putting it ftraight in expedition.
Chearely to Sea,the fignes of Warre aduance, 192
No King of England, if not King of France. Flourifh. Enter Piftoll, Nim, Bardolph, Boy, and Hoftelle.
Hoftefle. 'Prythee honey fweet Husband, let me bring thee to Staines.

Piftoll. No: for my manly heart doth erne. Bardolph, be blythe: Nim, rowfe thy vaunting Veines: Boy, brifsle 4 thy Courage vp : for Falfaffe hee is dead, and wee muft erne therefore.

Bard. Would I were with him, wherefomere hee is, eyther in Heauen, or in Hell.

Hoftefle. Nay fure, hee's not in Hell: hee's in Arthurs Bofome, if euer man went to Arthurs Bofome: a made a finer end, and went away and it had beene any Chriftome Child : a parted eu'n iuft betweene Twelue and One, eu'n 12 at the turning o'th'Tyde: for after I faw him fumble with the Sheets, and play with Flowers, and fmile vpon his fingers end, I knew there was but one way: for his Nofe was as fharpe as a Pen, and a Table of greene fields. How now 16 Sir Iohn (quoth I ?) what man? be a good cheare: fo a cryed out, God, God, God, three or foure times : now I,
[II. 3] to comfort him, bid him a fhould not thinke of God; I 20 hop'd there was no neede to trouble himfelfe with any fuch thoughts yet: fo a bad me lay more Clothes on his feet : I put my hand into the Bed, and felt them, and they were as cold as any ftone: then I felt to his knees, and fo 24 vp-peer'd, and vpward, and all was as cold as any ftone.

Nim. They fay he cryed out of Sack.
Hofte ©e. I, that a did.
Bard. And of Women.
28 Hoftefe. Nay, that a did not.
Boy. Yes that a did, and faid they were Deules incarnate.

Woman. A could neuer abide Carnation, 'twas a Co32 lour he neuer lik'd.

Boy. A faid once, the Deule would haue him about Women.

Hoftefle. A did in fome fort (indeed) handle Women: 36 but then hee was rumatique, and talk'd of the Whore of Babylon.

Boy. Doe you not remember a faw a Flea fticke vpon Bardolphs Nofe, and a faid it was a blacke Soule burning 40 in Hell.

Bard. Well, the fuell is gone that maintain'd that fire: that's all the Riches I got in his feruice.

Nim. Shall wee fhogg? the King will be gone from 44 Southampton.

Pift. Come, let's away. My Loue, give me thy Lippes: Looke to my Chattels, and my Moueables: Let Sences rule: The world is, Pitch and pay : truft none: for Oathes 48 are Strawes, mens Faiths are Wafer-Cakes, and hold-faft is the onely Dogge: My Ducke, therefore Caueto bee thy Counfailor. Goe, cleare thy Chryftalls. Yokefellowes in Armes, let vs to France, like Horle leeches
leeches my Boyes, to fucke, to fucke, the very blood to [II. 3] fucke.

Boy. And that's but vnwholefome food, they fay.
Pift. Touch her foft mouth, and march.
Bard. Farwell Hofteffe.56

Nim. I cannot kiffe, that is the humor of it: but adieu.

Pift. Let Hufwiferie appeare: keepe clofe, I thee command. . 60

Hofteße. Farwell : adieu.
Ereunt.
Flourifl.
[II. 4]
Enter the French King, the Dolphin, the Dukes of Berry and Britaine.
King. Thus comes the Englifh with full power vpon vs, And more then carefully it vs concernes, To anfwer Royally in our defences. Therefore the Dukes of Berry and of Britaine,
Of Brabant and of Orleance, fhall make forth, And you Prince Dolphin, with all fwift difpatch To lyne and new repayre our Townes of Warre With men of courage, and with meanes defendant:
For England his approaches makes as fierce, As Waters to the fucking of a Gulfe.
It fits vs then to be as prouident,
As feare may teach vs, out of late examples
Left by the fatall and neglected Englifh, Vpon our fields.

Dolphin. My moft redoubted Father, It is moft meet we arme vs 'gainft the Foe: 16
For Peace it felfe fhould not fo dull a Kingdome, (Though War nor no knowne Quarrel were in queftion)
But that Defences, Mufters, Preparations,
Should be maintain'd, affembled, and collected,
[II. 4] As were a Warre in expectation.
Therefore I fay, 'tis meet we all goe forth,
To view the fick and feeble parts of France:
24 And let us doe it with no fhew of feare,
No, with no more, then if we heard that England
Were bufied with a Whitfon Morris-dance:
For, my good Liege, fhee is fo idly King'd, 28 Her Scepter fo phantaftically borne,

By a vaine giddie fhallow humorous Youth, That feare attends her not.

Const. O peace, Prince Dolphin, 32 You are too much miftaken in this King : Queftion your Grace the late Embaffadors, With what great State he heard their Embaffie, How well fupply'd with Noble Councellors, 36 How modeft in exception ; and withall, How terrible in conftant refolution : And you fhall find, his Vanities fore-fpent, Were but the out-fide of the Roman Brutus, 40 Couering Difcretion with a Coat of Folly ; As Gardeners doe with Ordure hide thofe Roots That fhall firft fpring, and be moft delicate. Dolphin. Well, 'tis not fo, my Lord High Conftable.
44 But though we thinke it fo, it is no matter :
In cafes of defence, 'tis beft to weigh The Enemie more mightie then he feemes, So the proportions of defence are fill'd:
48 Which of a weake and niggardly proiection, Doth like a Mifer fpoyle his Coat, with scanting A little Cloth.

King. Thinke we King Harry ftrong :
52 And Princes, looke you ftrongly arme to meet him. The Kindred of him hath beene flefht vpon vs:
76 The Life of Henry the Fift.

[COL. 2.And he is bred out of that bloodie ftraine,
[II. 4]
That haunted vs in our familiar Pathes:
Witneffe our too much memorable fhame,
When Creffy Battell fatally was ftrucke,
And all our Princes captiu'd,by the hand
Of that black Name, Edward,black Prince of Wales:
Whiles that his Mountaine Sire,on Mountaine ftanding
Vp in the Ayre,crown'd with the Golden Sunne,
Saw his Heroicall Seed, and fmil'd to fee him
Mangle the Worke of Nature, and deface
The Patternes, that by God and by French Fathers
Had twentie yeeres been made. This is a Stem
Of that Victorious Stock : and let vs feare
The Natiue mightineffe and fate of him.
Enter a Mefjènger.
Meff. Embaffadors from Harry King of England,68

Doe craue admittance to your Maieftie.
King. Weele giue them present audience.
Goe, and bring them.
You fee this Chafe is hotly followed, friends. 72
Dolphin. Turne head,and ftop purfuit:for coward Dogs
Moft fpend their mouths, whē what they feem to threaten
Runs farre before them. Good my Soueraigne
Take vp the Englifh fhort, and let them know
Of what a Monarchie you are the Head :
Selfe-loue,my Liege, is not fo vile a finne, As felfe-neglecting.

Enter Exeter.
King. From our Brother of England ? 80
Exe. From him, and thus he greets your Maieftie :
He wills you in the Name of God Almightie, That you deueft your felfe, and lay apart The borrowed Glories, that by gift of Heauen, 84
[II. 4] By Law of Nature, and of Nations, longs
To him and to his Heires, namely, the Crowne, And all wide-ftretched Honors, that pertaine 88 By Cuftome, and the Ordinance of Times, Vnto the Crowne of France : that you may know 'Tis no finifter, nor no awk-ward Clayme, Pickt from the worme-holes of long-vanifht dayes, 92 Nor from the duft of old Obliuion rakt, He fends you this moft memorable Lyne, In euery Branch truly demonftratiue ; Willing you ouer-looke this Pedigree : 96 And when you find him euenly deriu'd From his moft fam'd, of famous Anceftors, Edward the third; he bids you then refigne Your Crowne and Kingdome, indirectly held 100 From him, the Natiue and true Challenger. King. Or elfe what followes ?
Exe. Bloody conftraint : for if you hide the Crowne Euen in your hearts, there will he rake for it. 104 Therefore in fierce Tempeft is he comming, In Thunder and in Earth-quake, like a Ioue: That if requiring faile, he will compell. And bids you, in the Bowels of the Lord, 108 Deliuer vp the Crowne, and to take mercie

On the poore Soules, for whom this hungry Warre Opens his vaftie Iawes: and on your head Turning the Widdowes Teares, the Orphans Cryes, 112 The dead-mens Blood, the priuy Maidens Groanes, For Husbands, Fathers, and betrothed Louers,
That fhall be fwallowed in this Controuerfie.
This is his Clayme, his Threatning, and my Meffage : 116 Vnleffe the Dolphin be in prefence here;

To whom expreffely I bring greeting to.
King. For

King. For vs, we will confider of this further:
To morrow thall you beare our full intent
Back to our Brother of England.
Dolph. For the Dolphin,
I ftand here for him : what to him from England ?
Exe. Scorne and defiance, fleight regard, contempt, And any thing that may not mif-become
The mightie Sender, doth he prize you at.
Thus fayes my King : and if your Fathers Highneffe
Doe not, in graunt of all demands at large,
Sweeten the bitter Mock you fent his Maieftie ;I 28

Hee'le call you to fo hot an Anfwer of it,
That Caues and Wombie Vaultages of France
Shall chide your Trefpas, and returne your Mock
In fecond Accent of his Ordinance.
Dolph. Say: if my Father render faire returne,
It is againft my will : for I defire
Nothing but Oddes with England.
To that end, as matching to his Youth and Vanitie,
I did prefent him with the Paris-Balls.
Exe. Hee'le make your Paris Louer fhake for it, Were it the Miftreffe Court of mightie Europe :
And be affur'd, you'le find a diff'rence,
140
As we his Subiects haue in wonder found, Betweene the promife of his greener dayes, And thefe he mafters now : now he weighes Time Ellen to the vtmoft Graine: that you fhall reade 144
In your owne Loffes, if he ftay in France.
King. To morrow fhall you know our mind at full.
Flourifh.
Exe. Difpatch vs with all fpeed, leaft that our King Come here himfelfe to queftion our delay ; 148 For he is footed in this Land already.
[II. 4] King. You fhalbe foone difpatcht, with faire conditions.
A Night is but fmall breathe, and little pawfe,
152 To anfwer matters of this confequence.
Exeunt.
[III.] Actus Secundus.

Flourifh. Enter Chorus.
Thus with imagin'd wing our fwift Scene flyes, In motion of no leffe celeritie then that of Thought.
Suppofe, that you haue feene
4 The well-appointed King at Douer Peer, Embarke his Royaltie : and his braue Fleet, With filken Streamers, the young Phelus fayning; Play with your Fancies: and in them behold, 8 Vpon the Hempen Tackle, Ship-boyes climbing; Heare the fhrill Whiftle, which doth order giue To founds confus'd: behold the threaden Sayles, Borne with th'inuifible and creeping Wind,
12 Draw the huge Bottomes through the furrowed Sea, Brefting the loftie Surge. O, doe but thinke You ftand vpon the Riuage, and behold A Citie on th'inconftant Billowes dauncing :
16 For fo appeares this Fleet Maiefticall, Holding due courfe to Harflew. Follow, follow Grapple your minds to fternage of this Nauie, And leaue your England as dead Mid-night, ftill, 20 Guarded with Grandfires, Babyes, and old Women, Eyther paft, or not arriu'd to pyth and puiffance : For who is he, whofe Chin is but enricht a-FOL. 33
[COL. 2.
[III.]
24
Worke, worke your Thoughts, and therein fee a Siege :
Behold the Ordenance on their Carriages,
With fatall mouthes gaping on girded Harflew.
Suppofe th'Embaffador from the French comes back:
Tells Harry, That the King doth offer him
Katherine his Daughter, and with her to Dowrie, Some petty and vnprofitable Dukedomes.
The offer likes not: and the nimble Gunner
With Lynftock now the diuellifh Cannon touches, Alarum, and Chamlers goe off.
And downe goes all before them. Still be kind, And eech out our performance with your mind. Exit

> Enter the King, Exeter, Bedford, and Gloucefier. Alarum: Scaling Ladders at Harflew.

King. Once more vnto the Breach,
Deare friends, once more;
Or clofe the Wall vp with our Englifh dead:
In Peace, there's nothing fo becomes a man,
4
As modeft ftillneffe, and humilitie:
But when the blaft of Warre blowes in our eares,
Then imitate the action of the Tyger :
Stiffen the finewes, commune vp the blood,
Difguife faire Nature with hard-fauour'd Rage :
Then lend the Eye a terrible afpect :
Let it pry through the portage of the Head,
Like the Braffe Cannon : let the Brow o'rewhelme it, 12
As fearefully, as doth a galled Rocke
O're-hang and iutty his confounded Bafe,
Swill'd with the wild and waftfull Ocean.
Now fet the Teeth, and ftretch the Nofthrill wide, 16
col. 2.] The Life of Henry the Fift.
[III. 1] Hold hard the Breath, and bend vp euery Spirit
To his full height. On, on, you Noblifh Englifh,
Whofe blood is fet from Fathers of Warre-proofe:
20 Fathers, that like fo many Alexanders,
Haue in thefe parts from Morne till Euen fought, And fheath'd their Swords, for lack of argument. Difhonour not your Mothers: now atteft, 24 That thofe whom you call'd Fathers, did beget you.

Be Coppy now to me of groffer blood, And teach them how to Warre. And you good Yeomen, Whofe Lyms were made in England; fhew vs here 28 The mettell of your Pafture : let vs fiweare, That you are worth your breeding: which I doubt not:
For there is none of you fo meane and bafe, That hath not Noble lufter in your eyes. 32 I fee you ftand like Grey-hounds in the flips, Straying vpon the Start. The Game's afoot: Follow your Spirit ; and vpon this Charge, Cry, God for Harry, England, and S. George. Alarum, and Chambers goe off.
[III. 2] Enter Nim, Bardolph, Pifoll, and Boy.
Bard. On, on, on, on, on, to the breach, to the breach.
Nim. 'Pray thee Corporall flay, the Knocks are too hot: and for mine owne part, I haue not a Cafe of Liues: 4 the humor of it is too hot, that is the very plaine-Song of it.

Piff. The plaine-Song is moft iuft: for humors doe abound: Knocks goe and come: Gods Vaffals drop and 8 dye: and Sword and Shield, in bloody Field, doth winne immortall fame.

Boy. Would I were in an Ale-houfe in London, I would giue all my fame for a Pot of Ale, and fafetie.

Pifl.And

Piff. And I: If withes would preuayle with me, my [III. 2] purpofe fhould not fayle with me; but thither would I high.

Boy. As duly, but not as truly, as Bird doth fing on bough.

## Enter Fluellen.

Flu. Vp to the breach, you Dogges; auaunt you Cullions.

Pift. Be mercifull great Duke to men of Mould: abate thy Rage, abate thy manly Rage; abate thy Rage, 20 great Duke. Good Bawcock bate thy Rage: vfe lenitie fweet Chuck.

Nim. Thefe be good humors: your Honour wins bad humors. Exit.
Boy. As young as I am, I haue obferu'd thefe three Swafhers: I am Boy to them all three, but all they three, though they would ferue me, could not be Man to me; for indeed three fuch Antiques doe not amount to a man : 28 for Bardolph, hee is white-liuer'd, and red-fac'd; by the means whereof, a faces it out, but fights not: for Piftoll, hee hath a killing Tongue, and a quiet Sword; by the meanes whereof, a breakes Words, and keepes whole 32 Weapons: for Nim, hee hath heard, that men of few Words are the beft men, and therefore hee fcornes to fay his Prayers, left a fhould be thought a Coward: but his few bad Words are matcht with as few good Deeds; for 36 a neuer broke any mans Head but his owne, and that was againft a Poft, when he was drunke. They will fteale any thing, and call it Purchafe. Bardolph ftole a Lute-cafe, bore it twelue Leagues, and fold it for three halfepence. 40 Nim and Bardolph are fworne Brothers in filching: and in Callice they ftole a fire-fhouell. I knew by that peece of Seruce, the men would carry Coales. They would
[III. 2] haue me as familiar with mens. Pockets, as their Gloues or their Hand-kerchers: which makes much againft my Manhood, if I fhould take from anothers Pocket, to put into mine; for it is plaine pocketting vp of Wrongs. 48 I muft leaue them, and feeke fome better Seruice: their Villany goes againft my weake ftomacke, and therefore I muft caft it vp .

## Enter Gower.

Gower. Captaine Fluellen, you muft come prefently to 52 the Mynes; the Duke of Gloucefter would fpeake with you.

Flu. To the Mynes? Tell you the Duke, it is not fo good to come to the Mynes: for looke you, the Mynes 56 is not according to the difciplines of the Warre; the concauities of it is not fufficient: for looke you, th'athuerfarie, you may difcuffe vnto the Duke, looke you, is digt himfelfe foure yard vnder the Countermines: by Chefhu, 60 I thinke a will plowe vp all, if there is not better directions.

Gower. The Duke of Gloucefter, to whom the Order of the Siege is giuen, is altogether directed by an Irifh 64 man, a very valiant Gentleman yfaith.

Welch. It is Captaine Makmorrice, is it not ?
Gower. I thinke it be.
Welch. By Cheflu he is an Affe, as in the World, I will 68 verifie as much in his Beard: he ha's no more directions in the true difciplines of the Warres, looke you, of the Roman difciplines, then is a Puppy-dog.

Enter Makmorrice, and Captaine Iamy.
Gower. Here a comes, and the Scots Captaine, Captaine 72 Iamy, with him.

Welch. Captaine Iamy is a maruellous falorous Gentleman, that is certain, and of great expedition and know-
ledge in th'aunchiant Warres, vpon my particular know- [III. 2] ledge of his directions: by Chefhu he will maintaine his 76 Argument as well as any Militarie man in the World, in the difciplines of the Priftine Warres of the Romans.

Scot. I fay gudday, Captaine Fluellen.
Welch. Godden to your Worfhip, good Captaine 80 Iames.

Gower. How now Captaine Mackmorrice, haue you quit the Mynes ? haue the Pioners giuen o're ?

Irifh. By Chrith Law tifh ill done: the Worke ifh 84 giue ouer, the Trompet found the Retreat. By my Hand I fweare, and my fathers Soule, the Worke ifh ill done: it ifh giue ouer: I would haue blowed vp the Towne, fo Chrifh faue me law, in an houre. O tifh ill done, tifh ill 88 done: by my Hand tifh ill done.

Welch. Captaine Mackmorrice, I befeech you now, will you voutfafe me, looke you, a few difputations with you, as partly touching or concerning the difciplines of $y^{2}$ the Warre, the Roman Warres, in the way of Argument, looke you, and friendly communication: partly to fatisfie my Opinion, and partly for the fatisfaction, looke you, of my Mind: as touching the direction of the Militarie dif- 96 cipline, that is the Point.

Scot. It fall be vary gud, gud feith, gud Captens bath, and I fall quit you with gud leue, as I may pick occafion: that fall I mary.

Irifh. It is no time to difcourfe, fo Chrifh faue me: the day is hot, and the Weather, and the Warres, and the King, and the Dukes: it is no time to difcourfe, the Town is befeech'd: and the Trumpet call vs to the breech, and 104 we talke, and be Chrifh do nothing, tis fhame for vs all: fo God fa'me tis fhame to ftand ftill, it is flame by my hand: and there is Throats to be cut, and Workes to be
[III. 2] done, and there ifh nothing done, fo Chrift fa'me law.
Scot. By the Mes, ere theife eyes of mine take themfelues to flomber, ayle de gud feruice, or Ile ligge i'th' grund for it; ay, or goe to death: and Ile pay't as valo112 roufly as I may, that fal I fuerly do, that is the breff and the long: mary, I wad full faine heard fome queftion tween you tway.

Welch. Captaine Mackmorrice, I thinke, looke you, 116 vnder your correction, there is not many of your Na tion.

Irifh. Of my Nation? What ifh my Nation? Ifh a Villaine, and a Bafterd, and a Knaue, and a Rafcall. What 120 ifh my Nation? Who talkes of my nation?

Welch. Looke you, if you take the matter otherwife then is meant, Captaine Mackmorrice, peraduenture I fhall thinke you doe not vfe me with that affabilitie, as in 124 difcretion you ought to vfe me, looke you, being as good a man as your felfe, both in the difciplines of Warre, and in the deriuation of my Birth, and in other particularities.
128 Irifh. I doe not know you fo good a man as my felfe: fo Chrifh faue me, I will cut off your Head.

Gower. Gentlemen both, you will miftake each other.
Scot. A, that's a foule fault.
A Parley.
132 Gower. The Towne founds a Parley.
Welch. Captaine Mackmorrice, when there is more better oportunitie to be required, looke you, I will be fo bold as to tell you, I know the difciplines of Warre: 136 and there is an end.

Exit.
[III. 3] Enter the King and all his Traine lefore the Gates. King. How yet refolues the Gouernour of the Towne ? This is the lateft Parle we will admit :

There-

Therefore to our beft mercy give your felues,
Or like to men prowd of deftruction,
Defie vs to our worft : for as I am a Souldier,
A Name that in my thoughts becomes me beft;
If I begin the batt'rie once againe,
I will not leaue the halfe-atchieued Harflew, [III. 3]

Till in her afhes fhe lye buryed.
The Gates of Mercy fhall be all fhut vp,
And the flefh'd Souldier, rough and hard of heart,
In libertie of bloody hand, fhall raunge
With Confcience wide as Hell, mowing like Graffe
Your frefh faire Virgins, and your flowring Infants.
What is it then to me, if impious Warre,
Arrayed in flames like to the Prince of Fiends,
Doe with his fmyrcht complexion all fell feats, Enlynckt to waft and defolation ?
What is't to me, when you your felues are caufe,
If your pure Maydens fall into the hand
Of hot and forcing Violation ?
What Reyne can hold licentious Wickedneffe,
When downe the Hill he holds his fierce Carriere ?
We may as bootleffe fpend our vaine Command
${ }^{2} 4$
Vpon th'enraged Souldiers in their fpoyle,
As fend Precepts to the Leuiathan, to come afhore.
Therefore, you men of Harflew,
Take pitty of your Towne and of your People,
Whiles yet my Souldiers are in my Command, Whiles yet the coole and temperate Wind of Grace O're-blowes the filthy and contagious Clouds Of headly Murther, Spoyle, and Villany.
If not: why in a moment looke to fee
The blind and bloody Souldier, with foule hand
Defire the Locks of your fhrill-fhriking Daughters:
[III. 3] Your Fathers taken by the filuer Beards, And their moft reuerend Heads dafht to the Walls : Your naked Infants fpitted vpon Pykes, Whiles the mad Mothers, with their howles confus'd, 40 Doe breake the Clouds; as did the Wiues of Iewry,

At Herods bloody-hunting flaughter-men.
What fay you? Will you yeeld, and this auoyd
Or guiltie in defence, be thus deftroy'd.
Enter Gouernour.
44 Gouer. Our expectation hath this day an end:
The Dolphin, whom of Succours we entreated,
Returnes vs, that his Powers are yet not ready,
To rayfe fo great a Siege : Therefore great King, 48 We yeeld our Towne and Liues to thy foft Mercy :

Enter our Gates, difpofe of vs and ours, For we no longer are defenfible.

King. Open your Gates : Come Vnckle Exeter, 52 Goe you and enter Harflew ; there remaine,

And fortifie it ftrongly 'gainft the French :
Vfe mercy to them all for vs, deare Vnckle. The Winter comming on, and Sickneffe growing 56 Vpon our Souldiers, we will retyre to Calis.

To night in Harflew will we be your Gueft,
To morrow for the March are we addreft.
Flourifh, and enter the Towne.
[III. 4] Enter Katherine and an old Gentlewomun.
Kathe. Alice, tu as efle en Angleterre, E夭 tu bien parlas le Language. Alice. En peu Madame.
4 Kath. Ie te prie m'enfigniez, il faut que ie apprend a parlen: Comient appelle vous le main en Anglois? Alice. Le main il छ夭 appelle de Hand.

Kath. De Hand.
Alice. E le doyts.
Kat. Le doyts, ma foy Ie oullie, e doyt mays, ie me fouemeray le doyts ie penfe qu'ils ont appelle de fingres, ou de fingres.

Alice. Le main de Hand, le doyts le Fingres, ie penfe que ie fuis le bon efcholier.

Kath. I'ay gaynie diux mots d' Anglois viftement, coment appelle vous le ongles?

Alice. Le ongles, les appellons de Nayles.
Kath. De Nayles efcoute: dites moy, $\sqrt{ }$ ie parle lien: de 16 Hand, de Fingres, e de Nayles.

Alice. C'eft bien dict Madame, il छ fort bon Anglois.
Kath. Dites moy l'Anglois pour le bras.
Alice. De Arme, Madame.
Kath. E de coudee.
Alice. D'Ellow.
Kath. D'Ellow: Ie men fay le repiticio de touts les mots que vous maves, apprins des a prefent.

Alice. Il E® trop difficile Madame, comme Ie penfe.
Kath. Excufe moy Alice efcoute, d'Hand, de Fingre, de Nayles, d'Arma, de Billow.

Alice. D'Ellow, Madame.
Kath. O Seigneur Dieu, ie men oullie d'Ellow, coment appelle vous le col.

Alice. De Nick, Madame.
Kath. De Nick, e le menton.
Alice. De Chin.
Kath. De Sin: le col de Nick, le menton de Sin.
Alice. Ouy. Sauf voftre honneur en verite vous pronouncies les mots aufi droict, que le Natifs d'Angleterre.

Kath. Ie ne doute point d'apprendre par de grace de Dieu, $\mathcal{G}^{\circ}$ en peu de temps.

Alice. N'aue vos y defia oullie ce que ie vous a enfignie.
[III. 4$]$ Kath. Nome ie recitera a vous promptement, d'Hand, de Fingre, de Maylees.

Alice. De Nayies, Madame.
Kath. De Nayles, de Arme, de Illow.
44 Alice. Sans voftre honeus d'Ellow.
Kath. Ainf de ie d'Ellow, de Nich, छכ de Sin: coment appelle vous les pied छீ de roba.

Alice. Le Foot Madame, छ g le Count.
48 Kath. Le Foot, छ઼ le Count: O Seignieur Dieu, il Jont le mots de fon mauvais corruptille große छ์ impudique, $\mathfrak{G}$ non pour le Dames de Honeur d'verer: Ie ne voudray pronouncer ce mots deuant le Seigneurs de France, pour toute le monde, fo le 52 Foot छ' le Count, neant moys, Ie recitera vn autrefoys ma lecon enfembe, d'Hand, de Fingre, de Nayles, d'Arme, d'Elbow, de Nick, de Sin, de Foot, le Count.

Alice. Excellent, Madame.
56 Kath. C'eft afjes pour vne foyes, alons nous a diner.
Exit.
[III. 5] Enter the King of France, the Dolphin, the Conftalle of France, and others.
King. 'Tis certaine he hath paft the Riuer Some.
Conft. And if he be not fought withall, my Lord,
Let vs not liue in France : let vs quit all,
4 And giue our Vineyards to a barbarous People.
Dolph. O Dieu viuant: Shall a few Sprayes of vs, The emptying of our Fathers Luxurie, Our Syens, put in wilde and fauage Stock, 8 Spirt vp fo fuddenly into the Clouds, And ouer-looke their Grafters?

Brit. Normans, but baftard Normans, Norman baftards :
Mort du ma vie, if they march along
12 Vnfought withall, but I will fell my Dukedome,

To buy a flobbry and a durtie Farme
[COL. T.

In that nooke-fhotten Ile of Albion.
Conft. Dieu de Battailes, where haue they this mettell?
Is not their Clymate foggy, raw, and dull ?
On whom, as in defpight, the Sunne lookes pale, Killing their Fruit with frownes. Can fodden Water,
A Drench for fur-reyn'd Iades, their Barly broth, Decoct their cold blood to fuch valiant heat ?
And fhall our quick blood, fpirited with Wine,
Seeme froftie ? O, for honor of our Land,
Let vs not hang like roping Ifyckles
Vpon our Houfes Thatch, whiles a more froftie People
Sweat drops of gallant Youth in our rich fields:
Poore we call them, in their Natiue Lords.
Dolphin. By Faith and Honor,
Our Madames mock at vs, and plainely fay,
Our Mettell is bred out, and they will giue
Their bodyes to the Luft of Englinh Youth,
To new-ftore France with Baftard Warriors.
Brit. They bid vs to the Englifh Dancing-Schooles,
And teach Lauolta's high, and fwift Carranto's, Saying, our Grace is onely in our Heeles, And that we are moft loftie Run-awayes. King. Where is Montioy the Herald ? fpeed him hence, ${ }_{3} \sigma$
Let him greet England with our fharpe defiance.
Vp Princes, and with fpirit of Honor edged,
More fharper then your Swords, high to the field :
Charles Delabreth, High Conftable of France,
You Dukes of Orleance, Burbon, and of Berry,
Alanfon, Brabant, Bar, and Burgonie,
Iaques Chattillion, Rambures, Vandemont, Beumont, Grand Pree, Roufli, and Faulconbridge, 44

Lous, Leftrale, Bouciguall, and Charaloyes,
[III. 5] High Dukes, great Princes, Barons, Lords, and Kings ;
For your great Seats, now quit you of great fhames:
48 Barre Harry England, that fweepes through our Land
With Penons painted in the blood of Harflew :
Rufh on his Hoaft, as doth the melted Snow Vpon the Valleyes, whofe low Vaffall Seat, 52 The Alpes doth fpit, and void his rhewme vpon.

Goe downe vpon him, you haue Power enough,
And in a Captiue Chariot, into Roan
Bring him our Prifoner.
56 Const. This becomes the Great.
Sorry am I his numbers are fo few,
His Souldiers fick, and famifht in their March :
For I am fure, when he fhall fee our Army,
60 Hee'le drop his heart into the finck of feare,
And for atchieuement, offer vs his Ranfome.
King. Therefore Lord Conftable, haft on Montioy,
And let him fay to England, that we fend,
64 To know what willing Ranfome he will giue.
Prince Dolphin, you thall ftay with vs in Roan.
Dolph. Not fo, I doe befeech your Maieftie.
King. Be patient, for you fhall remaine with vs.
68 Now forth Lord Conftable, and Princes all,
And quickly bring vs word of Englands fall. Exeunt.
[III. 6] Enter Captaines, Englifh and Welch, Gower and Fluellen.
Gower. How now Captaine Fluellen, come you from the Bridge ?

Flu. I affure you, there is very excellent Seruices com4 mitted at the Bridge.

Gower. Is the Duke of Exeter fafe ?
Flu. The Duke of Exeter is as magnanimous as Aga-
memnon, and a man that I loue and honour with my foule, [III. 6] and my heart, and my dutie, and my liue, and my liuing, 8 and my vttermoft power. He is not, God be prayfed and bleffed, any hurt in the World, but keepes the Bridge moft valiantly, with excellent difcipline. There is an aunchient Lieutenant there at the Pridge, I thinke in my very 12 confcience hee is as valiant a man as Marke Anthony, and hee is a man of no eftimation in the World, but I did fee him doe as gallant feruice.

Gower. What doe you call him ?
Flu. Hee is call'd aunchient Pifoll.
Gower. I know him not. Enter Piftoll.
Fiu. Here is the man.
Pif. Captaine, I thee befeech to doe me fauours: the 20 Duke of Exeter doth loue thee well.
Flu. I, I prayfe God, and I haue merited fome loue at his hands.

Pist. Bardolph, a Souldier firme and found of heart, 34 and of buxome valour, hath by cruell Fate, and giddie Fortunes furious fickle Wheele, that Goddeffe blind, that ftands vpon the rolling reftleffe Stone.
Flu. By your patience, aunchient Pijfoll: Fortune is 28 painted blinde, with a Muffler afore his eyes, to fignifie to you, that Fortune is blinde; and fhee is painted alio with a Wheele, to fignifie to you, which is the Morall of it, that fhee is turning and inconftant, and mutabilitie, 32 and variation: and her foot, looke you, is fixed vpon a Sphericall Stone, which rowles, and rowles, and rowles: in good truth, the Poet makes a moft excellent defcription of it : Fortune is an excellent Morall.

Piff. Fortune is Bardolphs foe, and frownes on him: for he hath ftolne a Pax, and hanged muft a be: a damned
[III. 6] death: let Gallowes gape for Dogge, let man goe free, 40 and let not Hempe his Wind-pipe fuffocate: but Exeter hath giuen the doome of death, for Pax of little price. Therefore goe fpeake, the Duke will heare thy voyce; and let not Bardolphs vitall thred bee cut with edge of 44 Penny-Cord, and vile reproach. Speake Captaine for his Life, and I will thee requite.

Flu. Aunchient Pifoll, I doe partly vnderftand your meaning.
48 Piff. Why then reioyce therefore.
Flu. Certainly Aunchient, it is not a thing to reioyce at : for if, looke you, he were my Brother, I would defire the Duke to vee his good pleafure, and put him to execu52 tion ; for difcipline ought to be vfed.

Pift. Dye, and be dam'd, and Figo for thy friendihip.
Flu. It is well.
Pifl. The Figge of Spaine Exit.
${ }_{56}$ Flu. Very good.
Gower. Why, this is an arrant counterfeit Rafcall, I remember him now : a Bawd, a Cut-purfe.

Flu. Ile affure you, a vtt'red as praue words at the 60 Pridge, as you fhall fee in a Summers day : but it is very well : what he ha's fpoke to me, that is well I warrant you, when time is ferue.
Gower. Why 'tis a Gull, a Foole, a Rogue, that now and 64 then goes to the Warres, to grace himfelfe at his returne into London, vider the forme of a Souldier: and fuch fellowes are perfit in the Great Commanders Names, and they will learne you by rote where Seruices were done; 68 at fuch and fuch a Sconce, at fuch a Breach, at fuch a Conuoy: who came off brauely, who was fhot, who difgrac'd, what termes the Enemy food on: and this they conne perfitly in the phrafe of Warre; which they tricke
vp with new-tuned Oathes: and what a Beard of the Ge- [III. 6]
neralls Cut, and a horride Sute of the Campe, will doe among foming Bottles, and Ale-wafht Wits, is wonderfull to be thought on : but you muft learne to know fuch flanders of the age, or elfe you may be maruelloufly mi- 76 ftooke.
Flu. I tell you what, Captaine Gower: I doe perceiue hee is not the man that hee would gladly make fhew to the World hee is: if I finde a hole in his Coat, I will tell 80 him my minde: hearke you, the King is comming, and I muft feake with him from the Pridge.

## Drum and Colours. Enter the King and his poore Souldiers.

Flu. God pleffe your Maieftie.
King. How now Fluellen, cam'ft thou from the Bridge? $8_{4}$
Flu. I, fo pleafe your Maieftie: The Duke of Exeter ha's very gallantly maintain'd the Pridge; the French is gone off, looke you, and there is gallant and moft praue paffages: marry, thathuerfarie was haue poffeffion of 88 the Pridge, but he is enforced to retyre, and the Duke of Exeter is Mafter of the Pridge: I can tell your Maieftie, the Duke is a praue man.
King. What men haue you loft, Fluellen?
Flu. The perdition of thathuerfarie hath beene very great, reafonnable great: marry for my part, I thinke the Duke hath loft neuer a man, but one that is like to be executed for robbing a Church, one Bardolph, if your Maie- 96 ftie know the man: his face is all bubukles and whelkes, and knobs, and flames a fire, and his lippes blowes at his nofe, and it is like a coale of fire, fometimes plew, and fometimes red, but his nofe is executed, and his fire's 100 out.
[III. 6] King. Wee would haue all fuch offendors fo cut off: and we giue expreffe charge, that in our Marches through 104 the Countrey, there be nothing compell'd from the Villages; nothing taken, but pay'd for: none of the French vpbrayded or abufed in difdaineful Language; for when Leuitie and Crueltie play for a Kingdome, the gentler 108 Gamefter is the fooneft winne

## Tucket. Enter Mountioy.

- Mountioy. You know me by my habit.

King. Well then, I know thee: what dhall I know of thee ?
$1 t 2$ Mountioy. My Mafters mind.
King. Vnfold it.
Mountioy. Thus fayes my King: Say thou to Harry of England, Though we feem'd dead, we did but fleepe: 116 Aduantage is a better Souldier then rafhneffe. Tell him, wee could haue rebuk'd him at Harflewe, but that wee thought not good to bruife an iniurie, till it were full ripe. Now wee fpeake vpon our Q. and our voyce is im120 periall: England fhall repent his folly, fee his weakeneffe, and admire our fufferance. Bid hin therefore confider of his ranfome, which muft proportion the loffes we haue borne, the fubiects we haue loft, the difgrace we 124 haue digefted; which in weight to re-anfwer, his pettineffe would bow vader. For our loffes, his Exchequer is too poore ; for th' effufion of our bloud, the Mufter of his Kingdome too faint a number; and for our difgrace, his 128 owne perfon kneeling at our feet, but a weake and worthleffe fatisfaction. To this adde defiance: and tell him for conclufion, he hath betrayed his followers, whofe condemnation is pronounc't: So farre my King and Mafter; 132 fo much my Office.

$$
\text { a-FOL. } 4
$$

King. What is thy name? I know thy qualitie.
Mount. Mountioy.
King. Thou doo'ft thy Office fairely. Turne thee back, And tell thy King, I doe not feeke him now,
But could be willing to march on to Callice, Without impeachment : for to fay the footh,
Though 'tis no wifdome to confeffe fo much
Vnto an enemie of Craft and Vantage,
My people are with fickneffe much enfeebled,
My numbers leffen'd: and thofe few I haue,
Almoft no better then fo many French;
Who when they were in health, I tell thee Herald,
I thought, vpon one payre of Englifh Legges
Did march three Frenchmen. Yet forgiue me God,
That I doe bragge thus; this your ayre of France
Hath blowne that vice in me. I muft repent :
Goe therefore tell thy Mafter, heere I am ;
My Ranfome, is this frayle and worthleffe Trunke;
My Army, but a weake and fickly Guard :
Yet God before, tell him we will come on,
Though France himfelfe, and fuch another Neighbor
Stand in our way. There's for thy labour Mountioy.
Goe bid thy Mafter well aduife himfelfe.
If we may paffe, we will : if we be hindred,
We fhall your tawnie ground with your red blood
Difcolour: and fo Mountioy, fare you well.
The fumme of all our Anfwer is but this:
We would not feeke a Battaile as we are,
Nor as we are, we fay we will not fhun it :
So tell your Mafter.
Mount. I fhall deliuer fo: Thankes to your Highneffe.

Glouc. I hope they will not come vpon rs now.
[III. 6] King. We are in Gods hand, Brother, not in theirs: March to the Bridge, it now drawes toward night, Beyond the Riuer wee'le encampe our felues, 168 And on to morrow bid them march away Exeunt.
[III. 7] Enter the Conftable of France, the Lord Ramburs, Orleance, Dolphin, with others.

Conff. Tut, I haue the beft Armour of the World: would it were day.

Orleance. You haue an excellent Armour: but let my 4 Horfe haue his due.

Conff. It is the beft Horfe of Eur pe.
Orleance. Will it neuer be Morning ?
Dolph. My Lord of Orleance, and my Lord Con8 ftable, you talke of Horfe and Armour ?

Orleance. You are as well prouided of both, as any Prince in the World.

Dolph. What a long Night is this? I will not change 12 my Horfe with any that treades but on foure poftures: ch'ha: he bounds from the Earth, as if his entrayles were hayres: le Cheual volante, the Pegafus, ches les narines de feu. When I beftryde him, I foare, I am a Hawke: he trots 16 the ayre: the Earth fings, when he touches it: the bafeft horne of his hoofe, is more Muficall then the Pipe of Hermes.

Orleance. Hee's of the colour of the Nutmeg.
20 Dolph. And of the heat of the Ginger. It is a Beaft for Perfeus: hee is pure Ayre and Fire; and the dull Elements of Earth and Water neuer appeare in him, but only in patient ftillneffe while his Rider mounts him: hee 24 is indeede a Horfe, and all other Iades you may call Beafts.

Conft. Indeed my Lord, it is a moft abfolute and ex- [III. 7] cellent Horfe.

Dolph. It is the Prince of Palfrayes, his Neigh is like 28 the bidding of a Monarch, and his countenance enforces Homage.

Orleance. No more Coufin.
Dolph. Nay, the man hath no wit, that cannot from 32 the rifing of the Larke to the lodging of the Lambe, varie deferued prayfe on my Palfray: it is a Theame as fluent as the Sea: Turne the Sands into eloquent tongues, and my Horfe is argument for them all: 'tis a fubiect ${ }_{3} 6$ for a Soueraigne to reafon on, and for a Soueraignes Soueraigne to ride on: And for the World, familiar to vs, and vnknowne, to lay apart their particular Functions, and wonder at him, I once writ a Sonnet in his prayfe, $4^{0}$ and began thus, Wonder of Nature.

Orleance. I haue heard a Sonnet begin fo to ones Miftrefie.

Dolph. Then did they imitate that which I compos'd 44 to my Courfer, for my Horfe is my Miftrefle.

Orleance. Your Miftreffe beares well.
Dolph. Me well, which is the prefcript prayfe and per-
fection of a good and particular Miftreffe.
Conft. Nay, for me thought yefterday your Miftreffe fhrewdly fhooke your back.

Dolph. So perhaps did yours.
Conft. Mine was not bridle 4 .
.${ }^{2}$
Do!ph. O then belike the wa; old and gentle, and you rode like a Kerne of Ireland, your French Hofe off, and in your ftrait Stroffers.

Conff. You haue good iudgement in Horfeman- 56 fhip.

Dolph. Be warn'd by me then: they that ride fo, and
[III. 7] ride not warily, fall into foule Boggs: I had rather haue 60 my Horfe to my Miftreffe.

Conft. I had as liue have my Miftreffe a Iade.
Dolph. I tell thee Conftable, my Miftreffe weares his owne hayre.
64 Conft. I could make as true a boaft as that, if I had a Sow to my Miftreffe.

Dolph. Le chien eft retourne a fon propre vemiffement eft la leuye lauee au bourlier: thou mak'ft vfe of any thing.
68 Conft. Yet doe I not vfe my Horfe for my Miftreffe, or any fuch Prouerbe, fo little kin to the purpofe.

Ramb. My Lord Conftable, the Armour that I faw in your Tent to night, are thofe Starres or Sunnes vpon it?
72 Conft. Starres my Lord.
Dolph. Some of them will fall to morrow, I hope.
Conft. And yet my Sky thall not want.
Dolph. That may be, for you beare a many fuperflu76 oufly, and 'twere more honor fome were away.

Conft. Eu'n as your Horfe beares your prayfes, who would trot as well, were fome of your bragges difmounted.
80 Dolph. Would I were able to loade him with his defert. Will it neuer be day ? I will trot to morrow a mile, and my way thall be paued with Englifh Faces.

Conjt. I will not fay fo, for feare I fhould be fac't out
84 of my way: but I would it were morning, for I would faine be about the eares of the Englifh.

Ramb. Who will goe to Hazard with me for twentie Prifoners?
88 Conft. You muft firft goe your felfe to hazard, ere you haue them.

Dolph. 'Tis Mid-night, Ile goe arme my felfe. Exit. Orleance. The Dolphin longs for morning.

Ramb. He longs to eate the Englifh.
Conft. I thinke he will eate all he kills.
Orleance. By the white Hand of my Lady, hee's a gallant Prince.

Conft. Sweare by her Foot, that fhe may tread out the 96 Oath.

Orleance. He is fimply the moft actiue Gentleman of France.

Conft. Doing is actiuitie, and he will ftill be doing. 100
Orleance. He neuer did harme, that I heard of.
Conft. Nor will doe none to morrow: hee will keepe that good name ftill.

Orleance. I know him to be valiant. 104
Conft. I was told that, by one that knowes him better then you.

Orleance. What's hee?
Conft. Marry hee told me fo himfelfe, and bee fayd hee ro8 car'd not who knew it.

Orleance. Hee needes not, it is no hidden vertue in him.

Const. By my faith Sir, but it is: neuer any body faw 112 it, but his Lacquey: 'tis a hooded valour, and when it appeares, it will bate.

Orleance. Ill will neuer fayd well.
Comf. I will cap that Prouerbe with, There is flatterie II6 in friendihip.

Orleance. And I will take vp that with, Gine the Deuill his due.

Confl. Well plac't: there ftands your friend for the 120 Deuill: haue at the very eye of that Prouerbe with, A Pox of the Deuill.

Orleance. You are the better at Prouerbs, by how much
a Fooles Bolt is foone fhot.
[III. t] Const. You have fhot ouer. Orleance. 'Tis not the firft time you were ouer-hot.

## Enter a Melfengir.

Me. $\int$. My Lord high Conftable, the Englifh lye within 128 fifteene hundred paces of your Tents.

Conft. Who hath mea ur'd the ground ?
Mę/. The Lord Grandpree.
Conft. A valiant and moft expert Gentleman. Would 132 it were day? Alas poore Harry of England: hee longs not for the Dawning, as wee doe.

Orleance. What a wretched and peeuifh fellow is this King of England, to mope with his fat-brain'd followers ${ }^{1} 36$ fo farre out of his knowledge.

Conft. If the Englifh had any apprehenfion, they would runne away.

Orleance. That they lack: for if their heads had any in140 tellectual Armour, they could neuer weare fuch heaaie Head-pieces.

Ramb. That Iland of England breedes very valiat Creatures ; their Maftiffes are of vnmatchable col144 rage.

Orleance. Foolifh Curres, that runne winking into the mouth of a Ruffian Beare, and haue their heads crufht like rotten Apples: you may as well fay, that's a valiant 148 Flea, that dare eate his breakefaft on the Lippe of a Lyon.

Conft. Iuft, iuft: and the men doe fympathize with the Maftiffes, in robuftious and rough comming on, 152 leauing their Wits with their Wiues: and then give them great Meales of Beefe, and Iron and Steele; they will eate like Wolues, and fight like Deuils.

Orleance. I,

Orleance. I, but thefe Englifh are fhrowdly out of [III. 7] Beefe.
Const. Then fhall we finde to morrow, they naue only ftomackes to eate, and none to fight. Now is it time to arme : come, fhall we abcut it ?

Orleance. It is now two a Clock: but let me fee, by ten 160 Wee fhall haue each a hundred Englifh men. Exeunt.

Actus Tertius.

## Chorus.

Now entertaine coniecture of a time, When creeping Murmure and the poring Darke Fills the wide Veffell of the Vniuerfe.
From Camp to Camp, through the foule Womb of Night
The Humme of eyther Army ftilly founds;
That the fixt Centinels almost receiue
The fecret Whifpers of each others Watch. Fire anfwers fire, and through their paly flames 8
Each Battaile fees the others rmber'd face.
Steed threatens Steed, in higl and boalffull Neighs
Piercing the Nights dull Eare : and from the Tents, The Armourers accomplifhing the Knights,
With bufie Hammers clofing Riuets vp,
Giue dreadfull note of preparation.
The Countrey Cocks doe crow, the Clocks doe towle :
And the third howre of drowfie Morning nam'd,
Prowd of their Numbers, and fecure in Soule,
The confident and ouer-luftie French,
[IV.] Doe the low-rated Englifh play at Dice ;
20 And chide the creeple-tardy-gated Night, Who like a foule and ougly Witch doth limpe So tedioufly away. The poore condemned Englifh, Like Sacrifices, by their watchfull Fires
24 Sit patiently, and inly ruminate
The Mornings danger : and their gefture fad, Inuefting lanke-leane Cheekes, and Warre-worne Coats, Prefented them vnto the gazing Moone
28 So many horride Ghofts. O now, who will behold
The Royall Captaine of this ruin'd Band Walking from Watch to Watch, from Tent to Tent; Let him cry, Prayfe and Glory on his head:
32 For forth he goes, and vifits all his Hoaft, Bids them good morrow with a modeft Smyle, And calls them Brothers, Friends, and Countreymen.
Vpon his Royall Face there is no note, 36 How dread an Army hath enrounded him ; Nor doth he dedicate one iot of Colour
Vnto the wearie and all-watched Night: But frefhly lookes, and ouer-beares Attaint, 40 With chearefull femblance, and fweet Maieftie : That euery Wretch, pining and pale before, Beholding him, plucks comfort from his Lookes. A Largeffe vniuerfall, like the Sunne, 44 His liberall Eye doth giue to euery one, Thawing cold feare, that meane and gentle all Behold, as may vnworthineffe define. A little touch of Harry in the Night, 48 And fo our Scene muft to the Battaile flye : Where, O for pitty, we fhall much difgrace, With foure or fiue moft vile and ragged foyles, (Right ill difpos'd, in brawle ridiculous)

The Name of Agincourt : Yet fit and fee, Minding true things, by what their Mock'ries bee. Exit.

Enter the King, Bedford, and Glouceffer.
King. Gloffer, 'tis true that we are in great danger, The greater therefore fhould our Courage be. God morrow Brother Bedford: God Almightie, There is fome foule of goodnefle in things euill, 4
Would men obferuingly diftill it out.
For our bad Neighbour makes vs early ftirrers,
Which is both healthfull, and good husbandry.
Befides, they are our outward Confciences,
And Preachers to vs all ; admonifhing, That we fhould dreffe vs fairely for our end.
Thus may we gather Honey from the Weed,
And make a Morall of the Diuell himfelfe.
Enter Erpingham.
Good morrow old Sir Thomas Erpingham:
A good foft Pillow for that good white Head,
Were better then a churlifh turfe of France.
Erping. Not fo my Liege, this Lodging likes me better, 16
Since I may fay, now lye I like a King.
King. 'Tis good for men to loue their prefent paines,
Vpon example, fo the Spirit is eafed:
And when the Mind is quickned, out of doubt
The Organs, though defunct and dead before,
Breake up their drowfie Graue, and newly moue
With cafted flough, and frefh legeritie.
Lend me thy Cloake Sir Thomas: Brothers both,
Commend me to the Princes in our Campe;
Doe my good morrow to them and anon
[IV. I] Defire them all to my Pauillion.
28 Gloffer. We fhall, my Liege.
Erping. Shall I attend your Grace ?
King. No, my good Knight :
Goe with my Brothers to my Lords of England:
32 I and my bofome muft debate a while,
And then I would no other company.
Erping. The Lord in Heauen bleffe thee, Noble Harry. Exeunt.
King. God a mercy old Heart, thou foeak'ft chearefully. Enter Piftoll.
36 Pift. Che vous la?
King. A friend.
Pift. Difcuffe vnto me, art thou Officer, or art thou bafe, common, and popular ?
40 King. I am a Gentleman of a Company.
Piff. Trayl'ft thou the puiffant Pyke ?
King. Euen fo : what are you ?
Pijt. As good a Gentleman as the Emperor.
44 King. Then you are a better then the King.
Pift. The King's a Bawcock, and a Heart of Gold, a Lad of Life, an Impe of Fame, of Parents good, of Fift moft valiant: I kiffe his durtie fhooe, and from heart48 ftring I loue the louely Bully. What is thy Name?

King. Harry le Roy.
Pijt. Le Roy? a Cornifh Name : art thou of Cornifh Crew ? King. No, I am a Welchman.
52 Pif. Know'ft thou Fluellen?
King. Yes.
Pift. Tell him Ile knock his Leeke about his Pate vpon S. Dauies day.

56 King. Doe not you weare your Dagger in your Cappe that day, leaft he knock that about yours.

Pist. Art

Piff. Art thou his friend ?
King. And his Kinfman too.
Piff. The Figo for thee then.
King. I thanke you: God be with you.
Pif. My name is Pifoll call'd.
Exit.
King. It forts well with your fierceneffe.
Manet King.
Enter Fluellen and Gower.
Gower. Captaine Fluellen.
Flu. 'So, in the Name of Iefu Chrift, fpeake fewer: it is the greateft admiration in the vniuerfall World, when the true and aunchient Prerogatifes and Lawes of the Warres is not kept: if you would take the paines but to 68 examine the Warres of Pompey the Great, you fhall finde, I warrant you, that there is no tiddle tadle nor pibble bable in Pompeyes Campe: I warrant you, you fhall finde the Ceremonies of the Warres, and the Cares of it, and $7_{2}$ the Formes of it , and the Sobrietie of it , and the Modeftie of it, to be otherwife.

Gower. Why the Enemie is lowd, you heare him all Night.
Flu. If the Enemie is an Affe and a Foole, and a prating Coxcombe; is it meet, thinke you, that wee fhould alfo, looke you, be an Affe and a Foole, and a prating Coxcombe, in your owne confcience now :

Gow. I will fpeake lower.
Flu. I pray you, and befeech you, that you will. Exit.
King. Though it appeare a little out of fafhion, There is much care and valour in this Welchman.

Enter three Souldiers, Iohn Bates, Alexander Court, and Michael Williams.
[IV. I] Court. Brother Iohn Bates, is not that the Morning which breakes yonder ?

Bates. I thinke it be: but wee haue no great caufe to 88 defire the approach of day.

Williams. Wee fee yonder the beginning of the day, but I thinke wee fhall neuer fee the end of it. Who goes there ?
92 King. A Friend.
Williams. Vnder what Captaine ferue you?
King. Vnder Sir Iohn Erpingham.
Williams. A good old Commander, and a moft kinde 96 Gentleman : I pray you, what thinkes he of our eftate ?

King. Euen as men wrackt vpon a Sand, that looke to be wafht off the next Tyde.

Bates. He hath not told his thought to the King ?
100 King. No : nor it is not meet he fhould: for though I fpeake it to you, I thinke the King is but a man, as I am : the Violet fmells to him, as it doth to me; the Element fhewes to him, as it doth to me; all his Sences haue but 104 humane Conditions: his Ceremonies layd by, in his Nakedneffe he appeares but a man; and though his affections are higher mounted then ours, yet when they ftoupe, they ftoupe with the like wing: therefore, when he fees 108 reafon of feares, as we doe; his feares, out of doubt, be of the fame rellifh as ours are: yet in reafon, no man fhould poffeffe him with any appearance of feare; leaft hee, by fhewing it, fhould dis-hearten his Army.
II2 Bates. He may fhew what outward courage he will: but I beleeue, as cold a Night as 'tis, hee could wifh himfelfe in Thames vp to the Neck; and fo I would he were, and I by him, at all aduentures, fo we were quit here.
116 King. By my troth, I will fpeake my confcience of the

King: I thinke hee would not with himielfe any where, [IV. 1] but where hee is.

Bates. Then I would he were here alone; fo thould he be fire to be ranfoned, and a many poore mens litues fiused. 120

King. I dare fing, you lone him not fo ill, to with him here alone: howforwer you foeake this to feele other mens minds, me thinks I could not dye any where fo contented, as in the Kings company; his Camfe being inft, and 124 his Suarrell homorable.
"'illiams. 'That's more then we know.
Bates. I, or more then wee thould fecke atier ; for wee know conough, if wer how wee are the Kings Subsects: 128 if his Camfe be wrong, our obedience to the King wipes the Cryme of it out of is.

H'illiams. But if the Camfic be not grool, the King himlidle hath a hemice Rochoming to make, when all thoti- 1.32 lagges, and Armess, and Hoads, chopt off in a Battaile, thall ioyme logether at the latter day, and ay all, Were dyed at fieh a place fome fwearing, fonse erying for a Surgeme fomb veon their Wiacs, left peore behind them; 130 fome ven the Debts they owe, fome upen theis Childern rawly lefi: I :an aternd, hore are lew dye well, that dye in a Battaile: for how can hey charitably difoote of any thing, whon blood is their argmont ? Now, if thete men 140 doe mot dye well, it will be a black matter for the king, that led them to it; who to difoley, were againf all proportion of fibbiction.

King. So, if a Sombe that is by his father fent about at4 Merchandize, doe fintully mifeary rpon the sea; the innputation of his wickednetlic, by your ruke, thonld be intpoted ypon his Father that fent him: or if a Scruant, otnder his Mathers command, mamporting a fimme of Mo- 1,48 ney, be athayled by Robbers, and dye in many irreconcild
[IV. I] Iniquities; you may call the bufineffe of the Mafter the author of the Seruants damnation : but this is not fo: $155^{2}$ The King is not bound to anfwer the paricular endings of his Souldiers, the Father of his Sonne, nor the Matter of his Seruant; for they purpofe not their death, when they purpofe their fernices. Befides, there is mo King, be 156 his Came nener fo footleffe, if it come to the arbitrement of Swords, can trye it out with all volpooted Souldiers: fome (peraduemure) hane on them the gruil of premeditated and contriued Murther; fome, of begui160 ling Virgias with the broken Scales of Perimice; fome, making the Warres their Bulwarke, hat hatue before gered the gentle Bofome of Peare with Pillage and Roblecrie. Now, if thefe men hame defiated the law, amd ontIGt runne Natime pmithment; though they ram outhrip men, they hane no wings to Hye from Goal. Ware is his Beadle, Warre is his Vengeames: fis that here men are pmith, for before breach of the Kings lawes, in 108 now the King (Quarrell: where they feared the deanh, they hatue berne life away; and where they would bee fate, they perith. 'Then if they dye vignomided, we more is the King griltie of their dammation, Hown here wats be172 fore guillice of thofe Impicties, for the which they are now viffert. Enery Subieds Dutic is the Kings, but enery Subicets Soule is his owne. Therefore thould enery Souldier in the Warres doe as curry fieke man in 176 his Bed, wath curry Moth out of his Conficionce: and dying fo, Death is 10 him adtamtage; or not dying, the time was beffedly loft, wherein fich preparation was gayned: and in him that efeapes, it were not finne to 180 thinke, that making God for free an offer, he het him outline that day, to fee his Greatnetie, and to twach othors how they fhould prepare.

Will. "Iis

Will. 'Tis certaine, euery man that dyes ill, the ill vpon [IV. r] his owne head, the King is not to anfwer it. $184_{4}$

Bates. I doe not defire hee thould anfwer for me, and yet I determine to fight luttily for him.

King. I my felfe heard the King fay he would not be ranfom'd.
Will. I, hee faid fo, to make vs fight chearefully: but when our throats are cut, hee may be ransom'd, and wee ne're the wifer.

King. If I liue to fee it, I will neuer truit his word af- 192 ter.

Will. You pay him then: that's a perillous fhot out of an Elder Gunne, that a poore and a priuate difpleafure can doe againft a Monarch: you may as well goe about 196 to turne the Sume to yce, with fanning in his face with a Peacocks feather : You'le neuer truft his word after; come, 'tis a foolifh faying.

King. Your reproofe is fomething too round, I fhould 200 be angry with you, if the time were conuenient.

Will. Let it bee a Quarrell between ws, if you liue.

King. I embrace it.
Will. How thall I know thee againe ?
King. Giue me any Gage of thine, and I will weare it in my Bonnet: Then if euer thou dar'ft acknowledge it, I will make it my Quarrell. 208

ILill. Heere's my Gloue : Giue mee another of thine.

King. There.
Will. This will I alfo weare in my Cap: if euer thou 212 come to me, and fay, after to morrow, This is my Gloue, by this Hand I will take thee a box on the eare.

King. If euer I liue to fee it, I will challenge it.
[IV. I] Will. Thou dar'ft as well be hang'd.
King. Well, I will doe it, though I take thee in the Kings companie.

Will. Keepe thy word : fare thee well.
220 Bates. Be friends you Englifh fooles, be friends, wee haue French Quarrels enow, if you could tell how to reckon. Exit Souldiers.
King. Indeede the French may lay twentie French 224 Crownes to one, they will beat vs, for they beare them on their fhoulders: but it is no Englifh Treafon to cut French Crownes, and to morrow the King himfelfe will be a Clipper.
228 Vpon the King, let vs our Liues, our Soules, Our Debts, our carefull Wiues, Our Children, and our Sinnes, lay on the King : We muft beare all.
232 O hard Condition, Twin-borne with Greatneffe, Subiect to the breath of euery foole, whofe fence No more can feele, but his owne wringing.
What infinite hearts-eafe muft Kings neglect, 236 That priuate men enioy?

And what haue Kings, that Priuates have not too, Saue Ceremonie, faue generall Ceremonie? And what art thou, thou Idoll Ceremonie?
240 What kind of God art thou ? that fuffer'ft more Of mortall griefes, then doe thy worfhippers. What are thy Rents? what are thy Commings in ? O Ceremonie, fhew me but thy worth.
244 What? is thy Soule of Odoration ?
Art thou ought elfe but Place, Degree, and Forme, Creating awe and feare in other men ?
Wherein thou art leffe happy, being fear'd,
2,8 Then they in fearing.

$$
a \text {-roL. } \quad 5 \quad 65
$$

| 85 The Life of Henry the Fift. |
| :--- |
| [COi. 2. |
| What drink'ft thou oft, in ftead of Homage fweet, |
| But poyfon'd flatterie? O, be fick, great Greatneff, |
| And bid thy Ceremonie gine thee cure. |
| Thinks thou the fierie Feuer will goe out |
| With Titles blowne from Adulation ? |
| Will it giue place to flexure and low bending? |
| Canft thou, when thou command'ft the beggers knee, |
| Command the health of it? No, thou prowd Dreame, |
| That play'ft fo fubtilly with a Kings Repofe. |
| I am a King that find thee : and I know, |
| 'Tis not the Balme, the Scepter, and tne Ball, |
| The Sword, the Mafe, the Crowne Imperiall, |
| The enter-tiffued Robe of Gold and Pearle, |
| The farfed Title running 'fore the King, |
| The Throne he fits on : nor the Tyde of Pompe, |
| That beates vpon the high fhore of this World: |
| No, not all thefe, thrice-gorgeous Ceremonie; |
| Not all thefe, lay'd in Bed Maiefticall, |
| Can fleepe fo foundly, as the wretched Slaue: |
| Who with a body fill'd, and vacant mind, |
| Gets him to reft, cram'd with diftreffefull bread, |
| Neuer fees horride Night, the Child of Hell : |
| But like a Lacquey, from the Rife to Set, |
| Sweates in the eye of Phelus; and all Night |
| Sleepes in Elizium: next day after dawne, |
| Doth rife and helpe Hiperio to his Horfe, |
| And followes fo the euer-running yeere |
| With profitable labour to his Graue: |
| And but for Ceremonie, fuch a Wretch, |
| Winding vp Days with toyle, and Nights with fleepe, |
| Had the fore-hand and vantage of a King. |
| The Slaue, a Member of the Countreyes peace, |
| Enioyes it; but in groffe braine little wots, |

[IV. I] What watch the King keepes, to maintaine the peace; Whofe howres, the Pefant beft aduantages.

## Enter Erpingham.

284 Erp. My Lord, your Nobles iealous of your abfence, Seeke through your Campe to find you.

King. Good old Knight, collect them all together At my Tent: Ile be before thee.
288 Erp. I fhall doo't, my Lord.
Erit.
King. O God of Battailes, fteele my Souldiers hearts, Poffeffe them not with feare: Take from them now The fence of reckning of th'oppofed numbers :
$29^{2}$ Pluck their hearts from them. Not to day, O Lord, O not to day, thinke not vpon the fault My Father made, in compafling the Crowne. I Richards body haue interred new, $29^{6}$ And on it haue beftowed more contrite teares, Then from it iffued forced drops of blood. Fiue hundred poore I haue in yeerely pay, Who twice a day their wither'd hands hold vp 300 Toward Heauen, to pardon blood:

And I haue built two Chauntries, Where the fad and folemne Priefts fing ftill For Richards Soule. More will I doe: Though all that I can doe, is nothing worth; 304 Since that my Penitence comes after all, Imploring pardon.

Enter Gloucefter.
Glouc. My Liege.
King. My Brother Gloucefters voyce? I :
308 I know thy errand, I will goe with thee:
The day, my friend, and all things fay for me.
Exeunt
13
Enter
67

Enter the Dolphin, Orleance, Ramburs, and

## Beaumont.

Orleance. The Sunne doth gild our Armour vp, my Lords.

Dolph. Monte Cheual: My Horfe, Verlot Lacquay: Ha.

Orleance. Oh braue Spirit.
Dolph. Via les ewes छ犬 terre.
Orleance. Rien puis le air छఠf feu.
Dolph. Cein, Coufin Orleance. Enter Conffable.
Now my Lord Conftable?
Comf. Hearke how our Steedes, for prefent ${ }^{\circ}$ Seruice 8 - neigh.

Dolph. Mount them, and make incifion in their Hides, That their hot blood may fpin in Englifh eyes,
And doubt them with fuperfluous courage: ha.
Ram. What, wil you haue them weep our Horfes blood? 12
How fhall we then behold their naturall tears ?
Enter Meffenger.
Meffeng. The Englifh are embattail'd, you French Peeres.

Confl. To Horfe you gallant Princes, ftraight to Horfe.
Doe but behold yond poore and ftarued Band,
And your faire fhew fhall fuck away their Soules, Leauing them but the fhales and huskes of men.
There is not worke enough for all our hands,
Scarce blood enough in all their fickly Veines, 20
To giue each naked Curtleax a ftayne,
That our French Gallants thall to day draw out, And theath for lack of fport. Let vs but blow on them, The vapour of our Valour will o're-turne them.
" T 'is pofitiue againft all exceptions, Lords, That our fuperfluous Lacquies, and our Pefants,
[IV. 2] Who in vuneceffarie action fwarme
28 About our Squares of Battaile, were enow
To purge this field of fuch a hilding Foe; Though we vpon this Mountaines Batis by,
Tooke ftand for idle fpeculation :
32 But that our Honours muft not. What's to fay?
A very little little let vs doe,
And all is done: then let the Trumpets found
The Theket Somuance, and the Note to mount:
36 For our approach thall fo much dare the fiedd,
That England thall conch downe in feare, and yedd.
Entir Graundpreco.
Grandpree. Why do you tiay fo long, my Lords of France?
Yond Iland Cartions, defjerate of their bones, 40 III-fatoredly become the Morning field:

Their ragged Curtanes poorely are let loofe,
And our Ayre thakes them patting foomefully.
Bigge Mars feemes bangurout in their beggerd Itoalt,
44 And faimly through a rultic Benor peopes.
The Horfemen fit like fixed Camdlefticks, With Torch ftates in their hand: and their poore Iades Lob downe their heads, dropping the hides and hips:
48 The gumme downe roping from their pale-dead eyes, And in their pale dull mouthes the Iymold Bitt Lyes foule with chaw'd-graffe, fill and motionkeffe. And their executors, the knamith Crowes,
52 Fly ore them all, impaticnt for the howre.
Deferiphion camot fute it filfe in words, To demondrate the Life of fuch a Bataile, In life fo liuclefle, as it thews it felfe.
56 Comfi. They hame faid their prayers, And they flay for death.

Dolph. Shall we goe fend them Dimers, and frefh Sutes,

And giue their fafting Horfes Prouender,
Conft. I ftay but for my Guard: on
To the field, I will the Banner from a Trumpet take,
And vfe it for my hafte. Come, come away, The Sunne is high, and we out-weare the day.

Exeunt. 64

Enter Glouceffer, Bedford, Exeter, Erpingham with all his Hoaft: Salisbury, and Weftmerland.

Glouc. Where is the King ?
Bedf. The King himfelfe is rode to view their Battaile.

Wef. Of fighting men they haue full threefcore thoufand.

Exe. There's fiue to one, befides they all are frefh.
Salisb. Gods Arme ftrike with vs, 'tis a fearefull oddes. God buy' you Princes all; Ile to my Charge : If we no more meet, till we meet in Heauen; Then ioyfully, my Noble Lord of Bedford, My deare Lord Gloucefter, and my good Lord Exeter, And my kind Kinfman, Warriors all, adieu.

Bedf. Farwell good Salislury, \& good luck go with thee :
And yet I doe thee wrong, to mind thee of it,
For thou art fram'd of the firme truth of valour.
Exe. Farwell kind Lord: fight valiantly to day.
Bedf. He is as full of Valour as of Kindneffe,
Princely in both.
Enter the King.
Wefl. O that we now had here
But one ten thoufand of thofe men in England, That doe no worke to day.

King. What's he that withes so ?
[IV. 3] My Coufin Weftmerland. No, my faire Coufin : If we are markt to dye, we are enow To doe our Countrey loffe: and if to liue, 24 The fewer men, the greater fhare of honour. Gods will, I pray thee wifh not one man more. By Ioue, I am not couetous for Gold, Nor care I who doth feed vpon my coft : 28 It yernes me not, if men my Garments weare; Such outward things dwell not in my defires. But if it be a finne to couet Honor, I am the moft offending Soule aliue. 32 No faith, my Couze, wifh not a man from England: Gods peace, I would not loofe fo great an Honor, As one man more me thinkes would thare from me, For the beft hope I haue. O, doe not wifh one more : 36 Rather proclaime it (Wefmerland) through my Hoaft, That he which hath no ftomack to this fight, Let him depart, his Pafport fhall be made, And Crownes for Conuoy put into his Purfe: 40 We would not dye in that mans companie, That feares his fellowfhip, to dye with vs. This day is call'd the Feast of Crijpian: He that out-liues this day, and comes fafe home, 44 Will ftand a tip-toe when this day is named, And rowfe him at the Name of Crifpian. He that fhall fee this day, and liue old age, Will yeerely on the Vigil feaft his neighbours, 48 And fay, to morrow is Saint Crifpian. Then will he ftrip his fleeue, and fhew his skarres: Old men forget; yet all thall be forgot :
But hee'le remember, with aduantages,
$5^{2}$ What feats he did that day. Then fhall our Names, Familiar in his mouth as houfehold words,
[col. i.
[IV. 3]
Warwick and Tallot, Salisbury and Glouceffer, Be in their flowing Cups frefhly remembred.$5^{6}$

This ftory fhall the good man teach his fonne :
And Crijpine Crijpian fhall ne're goe by, From this day to the ending of the World, But we in it fhall be remembred;
We few, we happy few, we band of brothers :
For he to day that fheds his blood with me,
Shall be my brother: be he ne're fo vile,
This day fhall gentle his Condition.
And Gentlemen in England, now a bed, Shall thinke themfelues accurft they were not here;
And hold their Manhoods cheape, whiles any fpeakes, That fought with vs vpon Saint Crijpines day.68 Enter Salistury.
Sal. My Soueraign Lord, beftow your felfe with fpeed:
The French are brauely in their battailes fet,
And will with all expedience charge on vs.
King. All things are ready, if our minds be fo.
$W_{e f f}$. Perifh the man, whofe mind is backward now.
King. Thou do'ft not wifh more helpe from England, Couze?
$W_{e} f$. Gods will, my Liege, would you and I alone,
Without more helpe, could fight this Royall battaile.
King. Why now thou haft vnwifht fiue thoufand men:
Which likes me better, then to wilh vs one.
You know your places: God be with you all.
Tucket. Enter Montioy.
Mont. Once more I come to know of thee King Harry, 80 If for thy Ranfome thou wilt now compound, Before thy moft affured Ouerthrow :
[IV. 3] For certainly, thou art fo neere the Gulfe,
84 Thou needs muft be englutted. Befides, in mercy
The Conftable defires thee, thou wilt mind Thy followers of Repentance; that their Soules May make a peacefull and a fweet retyre
88 From off thefe fields: where(wretches)their poore bodies Muft lye and fefter.

King. Who hath fent thee now ?
Mont. The Conftable of France.
92 King. I pray thee beare my former Anfwer back:
Bid them atchieue me, and then fell my bones. Good God, why fhould they mock poore fellowes thus? The man that once did fell the Lyons skin 96 While the beaft liu'd, was kill'd with hunting him. A many of our bodyes thall no doubt Find Natiue Graues : vpon the which, I truft Shall witneffe liue in Braffe of this dayes worke. 100 And thofe that leaue their valiant bones in France, Dying like men, though buryed in your Dunghills, They fhall be fam'd : for there the Sun fhall greet them, And draw their honors reeking vp to Heauen, 104 Leauing their earthly parts to choake your Clyme, The fmell whereof fhall breed a Plague in France. Marke then abounding valour in our Engliih : That being dead, like to the bullets crafing, ro8 Breake out into a fecond courfe of mifchiefe, Killing in relapfe of Mortalitie.
Let me fpeake prowdly : Tell the Conftable, We are but Warriors for the working day :
II2 Our Gayneffe and our Gilt are all befmyrcht
With raynie Marching in the painefull field.
There's not a piece of feather in our Hoaft:
Good argument(I hope)we will not flye:

And time hath worne vs into flouenrie.
But by the Maffe, our hearts are in the trim :
And my poore Souldiers tell me, yet ere Night,
They'le be in frefher Robes, or they will pluck
The gay new Coats o're the French Souldiers heads,
And turne them out of feruice. If they doe this,
As if God pleafe, they fhall ; my Ranfome then
Will foone be leuyed.
Herauld, faue thou thy labour :
Come thou no more for Ranfome, gentle Herauld, They fhall haue none, I fweare, but thefe my ioynts:
Which if they haue, as I will leaue vm them,
Shall yeeld them little, tell the Conftable.
Mont. I fhall, King Harry. And fo fare thee well :
Thou neuer fhalt heare Herauld any more. Exit.
King. I feare thou wilt once more come againe for a Ranfome.

Enter Yorke.
Yorke. My Lord, moft humbly on my knee I begge
The leading of the Vaward.
King. Take it, braue Yorke.
Now Souldiers march away,
And how thou pleafeft God, difpofe the day. Exeunt. $13{ }^{6}{ }^{6}$
Alarum. Excurfions.
Enter Pifioll, French Souldier, Boy.
Piff. Yeeld Curre.
French. Ie penfe que vous eftes le Gentilhome de bon qualitee.

Pif. Qualtitie calmie cufture me. Art thou a Gentle- 4 man ? What is thy Name ? difcuffe.

French. O Seigneur Dieu.
Pijf. O Signicur Dewe fhould be a Gentleman: per-
[IV. 4] pend my words O Signieur Dewe, and marke: O Signieur Dewe, thou dyeft on point of Fox, except O Signieur thou doe giue to me egregious Ranfome.

French. O prennes miferecordie aye pitez de moy.
12 Pift. Moy fhall not ferue, I will haue fortie Moyes: for I will fetch thy rymme out at thy Throat, in droppes of Crimfon blood.

French. Eft il impofille d'efchapper le force de ton bras.
16 Pif. Braffe, Curre ? thou damned and luxurious Mountaine Goat, offer'ft me Braffe ?

French. O perdonne moy.
Pift. Say'ft thou me fo? is that a Tonne of Moyes? 20 Come hither boy, aske me this flaue in French what is his Name.

Boy. Efcoute comment effes vous appelle?
French. Mounfieur le Fer.
24 Boy. He fayes his Name is M.Fer.
Pift. M. Fer: Ile fer him, and firke him, and ferret him : difcuffe the fame in French vito him.

Boy. I doe not know the French for fer, and ferret, and 28 firke.

Piff. Bid him prepare,for I will cut his throat.
French. Que dit il Mounfieur ?
Boy. Il me commande a vous dire que vous faite vous 32 preft, car ce foldat icy est difpofee tout afture de couppes vofire gorge.

Pift. Owy, cuppele gorge permafoy pefant, vnleffe thou give me Crownes, braue Crownes; or mangled fhalt ${ }_{3} 6$ thou be by this my Sword.

French. O Ie vous Jupplie pour l'amour de Dieu : ma pardonner, Ie fuis le Gentilhome de bon maifon, garde ma vie, छ઼ Ie vous donneray deux cent efcus.
40 Pift. What are his words?
Boy. He

Boy. He prayes you to faue his life, he is a Gentleman [IV. 4] of a good houfe, and for his ranfom he will giue you two hundred Crownes.

Pift. Tell him my fury fhall abate, and I the Crownes 44 will take.

Fren.Petit Monfeur que dit il?
Boy. Encore qu'il et contra fon Iurement, de pardonner aucune prifonner: neant-mons pour les efcues que vous layt a pro- 48 mets, il eft content a vous donnes le liberte le franchifement.

Fre. Sur mes genoux fe vous donnes milles remercious, et Ie me eftime heurex que Ie intombe, entre les main. d'vn Cheualier Ie peufe le plus braue valiant et tres diftinie fignieur $5^{2}$ d'Angleterre.

Pijf. Expound vnto me boy.
Roy. He giues you vpon his knees a thoufand thanks, and he efteemes himfelfe happy, that he hath falne into 56 the hands of one (as he thinkes) the moft braue, valorous and thrice-worthy figneur of England.

Pift. As I fucke blood, I will fome mercy fhew. Follow mee.

Boy. Saaue vous le grand Capitaine?
I did neuer know fo full a voyce iffue from fo emptie a heart: but the faying is true, The empty veffel makes the greateft found, Bardolfe and Nym had tenne times more $\sigma_{4}$ valour, then this roaring diuell i'th olde play, that euerie one may payre his nayles with a woodden dagger, and they are both hang'd, and fo would this be, if hee durft fteale any thing aduenturoufly. I muft fay with the 68 Lackies with the luggage of our camp, the French might haue a good pray of vs, if he knew of it, for there is none to guard it but boyes.

Exit.

Enter Conftalle, Orleance, Burlon, Dolphin, and Ramburs.
[IV. 5] Con. O Diable.
Orl. Ofigueur le iour et perdia, toute et perdie.
Dol. Mor Dieu ma vie, all is confounded all,
4 Reproach, and euerlafting thame
Sits mocking in our Plumes.
A Jhort Alarum.
O mefchante Fortune, do not runne away.
Con. Why all our rankes are broke.
8 Dol, O perdurable fhame, let's fab our felues :
Be thefe the wretches that we plaid at dice for ?
Orl. Is this the King we fent too, for his ranfome ?
Bur. Shame, and eternall fhame, nothing but fhame,
12 Let vs dye in once more backe againe,
And he that will not follow Burlon now, Let him go hence, and with his cap in hand Like a bafe Pander hold the Chamber doore, 16 Whilft a bafe flaue, no gentler then my dogge, His faireft daughter is contaminated.

Con. Diforder that hath fpoyl'd vs, friend vs now, Let vs on heapes go offer vp our liues.
20 Orl. We are enow yet liuing in the Field,
To fmother vp the Englifh in our throngs,
If any order might be thought vpon.
Bur. The diuell take Order now, Ile to the throng;
24 Let life be fhort, elfe fhame will be too long. Extt.
[IV. 6] Alarum. Enter the King and his trayne, with PriJoners

King.Well haue we done, thrice-valiant Countrimen, But all's not done, yet keepe the French the field.

Exe. The D. of York commends him to your Maiefty

King.Liues he good Vnckle: thrice within this houre
I faw him downe; thrice vp againe, and fighting,
From Helmet to the fpurre, all blood he was.
Exe. In which array (braue Soldier) doth he lye, Larding the plaine: and by his bloody fide,
(Yoake-fellow to his honour-owing-wounds)
The Noble Earle of Suffolke alfo lyes.
Suffolke firft dyed, and Yorke all hagled ouer
Comes to him, where in gore he lay infteeped,
And takes him by the Beard, kiffes the gafhes
That bloodily did yawne vpon his face.
He cryes aloud ; Tarry my Cofin Suffolke, My foule fhall thine keepe company to heauen :16

Tarry (fweet foule) for mine, then flye a-breft :
As in this glorious and well-foughten field
We kept together in our Chiualrie.
Vpon thefe words I came, and cheer'd him vp,
He fmil'd me in the face, raught me his hand, And with a feeble gripe, fayes: Deere my Lord, Commend my feruice to my Soueraigne, So did he turne, and ouer Suffolkes necke 24
He threw his wounded arme, and kift his lippes, And fo efpous'd to death, with blood he feal'd
A Teftament of Noble-ending-loue:
The prettie and fweet manner of it forc'd
Thofe waters from me, which I would haue ftop'd, But I had not fo much of man in mee, And all my mother came into mine eyes, And gaue me vp to teares.

King. I blame you not, For hearing this, I muft perforce compound With mixtfull eyes, or they will iffue to. But hearke, what new alarum is this fame ?

Alarum 36
[IV. 6] The French haue re-enforc'd their fcatter'd men :
Then euery fouldiour kill his Prifoners, Giue the word through.
[IV. 7] Actus Quartus.

## Enter Fluellen and Gower.

Flu. Kill the poyes and the luggage, 'Tis expreffely againft the Law of Armes, tis as arrant a peece of knauery marke you now, as can bee offert in your Confcience 4 now, is it not ?

Gow. Tis certaine, there's not a boy left aliue, and the Cowardly Rafcalls that ranne from the battaile ha' done this flaughter: befides they haue burned and carried a8 way all that was in the Kings Tent, wherefore the King moft worthily hath caus'd euery foldiour to cut his prifoners throat. O 'tis a gallant King.

Flu. I, hee was porne at Monmouth Captaine Gower: 12 What call you the Townes name where Alexander the pig was borne?

Gow. Alexander the Great.
Flu. Why I pray you, is not pig, great? The pig, or 16 the grear, or the mighty, or the huge, or the magnanimous, are all one reckonings, faue the phrafe is a litle variations.

Gower. I thinke Alexander the Great was borne in 20 Macedon, his Father was called Phillip of Macedon, as I take it.

Flu. I thinke it is in Macedon where Alexander is porne.
porne : I tell you Captaine, if you looke in the Maps of [IV. 7] the Orld, I warrant you fall finde in the comparifons be- 24 tweene Macedon \& Monmouth, that the fituations looke you, is both alike. There is a Riuer in Macedon, \& there is alfo moreouer a Riuer at Monmouth, it is call'd Wye at Monmouth : but it is out of my praines, what is the name 28 of the other Riuer : but 'tis all one, tis alike as my fingers is to my fingers, and there is Salmons in both. If you marke Alexanders life well, Harry of Monmouthes life is come after it indifferent well, for there is figures in all 32 things. Alexander God knowes, and you know, in his rages, and his furies, and his wraths, and his chollers, and his moodes, and his difpleafures, and his indignations, and alfo being a little intoxicates in his praines, did in 36 his Ales and his angers (looke you) kill his beft friend Clytus.

- Gow. Our King is not like him in that, he neuer kill'd any of his friends.

Flu. It is not well done (marke you now) to take the tales out of my mouth, ere it is made and finifhed.I fpeak but in the figures, and comparifons of it: as Alexander kild his friend Clytus, being in his Ales and his Cuppes; fo 44 alfo Harry Monmouth being in his right wittes, and his good iudgements, turn'd away the fat Knight with the great belly doublet: he was full of iefts, and gypes, and knaueries, and mockes, I haue forgot his name.

Gow. Sir Iohn Falfiaffe.
Flu. That is he: Ile tell you, there is good men porne at Monmouth.

Gow. Heere comes his Maiefty.
Alarum. Enter King Harry and Burlon with prifoners. Flourifh.
[IV. 7] King. I was not angry fince I came to France, Vntill this inftant. Take a Trumpet Herald, Ride thou vnto the Horfemen on yond hill: 56 If they will fight with vs, bid them come downe, Or voyde the field: they do offend our fight. If they'l do neither, we will come to them, And make them sker away, as fwift as ftones 60 Enforced from the old Affyrian flings:

Befides, wee'l cut the throats of thofe we haue, And not a man of them that we fhall take, Shall tafte our mercy. Go and tell them fo. Enter Montioy.
64 Exe. Here comes the Herald of the French, my Liege
Glou. His eyes are humbler then they vs'd to be.
King. How now, what meanes this Herald ? Knowf thou not,
That I haue fin'd thefe bones of mine for ranfome?
68 Com'ft thou againe for ranfome ?
Her. No great King :
I come to thee for charitable Licenfe, That we may wander ore this bloody field, 72 To booke our dead, and then to bury them, To fort our Nobles from our common men. For many of our Princes (woe the while) Lye drown'd and foak'd in mercenary blood: 76 So do our vulgar drench their peafant limbes In blood of Princes, and with wounded fteeds Fret fet-locke deepe in gore, and with wilde rage Yerke out their armed heeles at their dead mafters 80 Killing them twice. O giue vs leaue great King, To view the field in fafety, and difpofe Of their dead bodies.

```
a-FOL. 6 8r
```

Kin. I tell thee truly Herald,
I know not if the day be ours or no,
For yet a many of your horfemen peere,
And gallop ore the field.
Her. The day is yours.
Kin. Praifed be God, and not our ftrength for it:88

What is this Caftle call'd that ftands hard by.
Her. They call it Agincourt.
King. Then call we this the field of Agincourt,
Fought on the day of Crijpin Crijpianus.
$9^{2}$
Flu. Your Grandfather of famous memory (an't pleafe your Maiefty) and your great Vncle Edward the Placke Prince of Wales, as I haue read in the Chronicles, fought a moft praue pattle here in France.

Kin. They did Fluellen.
Flu. Your Maiefty fayes very true: If your Maiefties is remembred of it, the Welchmen did good feruice in a Garden where Leekes did grow, wearing Leekes in their 100 Monnouth caps, which your Maiefty know to this houre is an honourable badge of the feruice: And I do belceue your Maiefty takes no feorne to weare the Leeke vppon S. Tauies day.104

King. I weare it for a memorable honor:
For I am Welch you know good Countriman.
Flu. All the water in Wye, cannot wafh your Maiefties Welfh plood out of your pody, I can tell you that: 108 God pleffe it, and preferue it, as long as it pleafes his Grace, and his Maiefty too.

Kin. Thankes good my Countrymen.
Flu. By Iefhu, I am your Maiefties Countreyman, I i 12 care not who know it : I will confeffe it to all the Orld, I need not to be afhamed of your Maiefty, prailed be God fo long as your Maiefty is an honeft man.
[IV. 7] King. Good keepe me fo.
Enter Williams.
Our Heralds go with him, Bring me iuft notice of the numbers dead On both our parts. Call yonder fellow hither.
120 Exe. Souldier, you muft come to the King.
Kin. Souldier, why wear'ft thou that Gloue in thy
Cappe?
Will. And't pleafe your Maiefty, tis the gage of one 124 that I fhould fight withall, if he be aliue.

Kin. An Englifhman ?
Wil. And't pleafe your Maiefty, a Rafcall that fwagger'd with me laft night: who if aliue, and euer dare to 128 challenge this Gloue, I haue fworne to take him a boxe a'th ere: or if I can fee my Gloue in his cappe, which he fwore as he was a Souldier he would weare(if aliue)I wil ftrike it out foundly.
132 Kin. What thinke you Captaine Fluellen, is it fit this fouldier keepe his oath.

Flu. Hee is a Crauen and a Villaine elfe, and't pleafe your Maiefty in my confcience.
${ }_{13} 6$ King. It may bee, his enemy is a Gentleman of great fort quite from the anfwer of his degree.

Flu. Though he be as good a Ientleman as the diuel is, as Lucifer and Belzebub himfelfe, it is neceffary (looke 140 your Grace) that he keepe his vow and his oath: If hee bee periur'd (fee you now) his reputation is as arrant a villaine and a Iacke fawce, as euer his blacke fhoo trodd vpon Gods ground, and his earth, in my confcience law 144 King. Then keepe thy vow firrah, when thou meet'ft the fellow.

Wil. So, I wil my Liege, as I liue.
King. Who feru'ft thou vnder ?

Flu. Gower is a good Captaine, and is good knowledge and literatured in the Warres.

King. Call him hither to me, Souldier.
Will. I will my Liege. Exit.

152
King. Here Fluellen, weare thou this fauour for me, and fticke it in thy Cappe : when Alanfon and my felfe were downe together, I pluckt this Gloue from his Helme : If any man challenge this, hee is a friend to Alanfon, and an 156 enemy to our Perfon; if thou encounter any fuch, apprehend him, and thou do'ft me loue.

Flu. Your Grace doo's me as great Honors as can be defir'd in the hearts of his Subiects: I would faine fee 160 the man, that ha's but two legges, that fhall find himfelfe agreefd at this Gloue; that is all: but I would faine fee it once, and pleafe God of his grace that I might fee.

King. Know'ft thou Gower ?
Flu. He is my deare friend, and pleafe you.
King. Pray thee goe feeke him, and bring him to my Tent.

$$
\text { Flu. I will fetch him. Exit. } 168
$$

King. My Lord of Warwick, and my Brother Glofter, Follow Fluellen clofely at the heeles. The Gloue which I have giuen him for a fauour, May haply purchafe him a box a'th'eare.
It is the Souldiers: I by bargaine fhould Weare it my felfe. Follow good Coufin Warwick:
If that the Souldier ftrike him, as I iudge
By his blunt bearing, he will keepe his word;
Some fodaine mifchiefe may arife of it :
For I doe know Fluellen valiant,
And toucht with Choler, hot as Gunpowder, And quickly will returne an iniurie.
[IV. 7] Follow,and fee there be no harme betweene them. Goe you with me, Vnckle of Exeter.
[IV. 8] Enter Gower and Williams.
Will. I warrant it is to Knight you, Captaine.
Enter Fluellen.
Flu. Gods will, and his pleafure, Captaine, I befeech you now, come apace to the King: there is more good 4 toward you peraduenture, then is in your knowledge to dreame of.

Will. Sir, know you this Gloue?
Flu. Know the Gloue? I know the Gloue is a Gloue.
8 Will. I know this, and thus I challenge it.
Strikes him.
Flu. 'Sblud, an arrant Traytor as anyes in the Vniuerfall World, or in France, or in England.

Gower. How now Sir? you Villaine.
12 Will. Doe you thinke Ile be forfworne?
Flu. Stand away Captaine Gower, I will giue Treafon his payment into plowes, I warrant you.

Will. I am no Traytor.
16 Flu. That's a Lye in thy Throat. I charge you in his Maiefties Name apprehend him, he's a friend of the Duke Alanfons.

Enter Warwick and Gloucefter.
Warw. How now, how now, what's the matter?
20 Flu. My Lord of Warwick, heere is, prayfed be God for it, a moft contagious Treafon come to light, looke you, as you fhall defire in a Summers day. Heere is his Maieftie. Enter King and Exeter.
24 King. How now, what's the matter?
Flu. My Liege, heere is a Villaine, and a Traytor, that looke your Grace, ha's frooke the Gloue which
your Maieftie is take out of the Helmet of Alan- [IV. 8] fon.

Will. My Liege, this was my Gloue, here is the fellow of it: and he that I gaue it to in change, promis'd to weare it in his Cappe : I promis'd to ftrike him, if he did : I met this man with my Gloue in his Cappe, and I haue been as 32 good as my word.

Flu. Your Maieftie heare now, fauing your Maiefties Manhood, what an arrant rafcally, beggerly, lowfie Knaue it is: I hope your Maieftie is peare me teftimonie ${ }_{3} 6$ and witneffe, and will auouchment, that this is the Gloue of Alanfon, that your Maieftie is giue me, in your Confcience now.

King. Giue me thy Gloue Souldier ;
Looke, heere is the fellow of it:
'Twas I indeed thou promifed'ft to ftrike, And thou haft ginen me moft bitter termes.

Flu. And pleafe your Maieftie, let his Neck anfwere 44 for it, if there is any Marfhall Law in the World.

King. How canft thou make me fatisfaction ?
Will. All offences, my Lord, come from the heart: neuer came any from mine, that might offend your Ma- 48 ieftie.

King. It was our felfe thou didft abufe.
Will. Your Maieftie came not like your felfe: you appear'd to me but as a common man; witneffe the 52 Night, your Garments, your Lowlineffe: and what your Highneffe fuffer'd vnder that fhape, I befeech you take it for your owne fault, and not mine: for had you beene as I tooke you for, I made no offence; therefore I 56 befeech your Highneffe pardon me.

King. Here Vnckle Exeter, fill this Gloue with Crownes, And giue it to this fellow. Keepe it fellow,
[IV. 8] And weare it for an Honor in thy Cappe, Till I doe challenge it. Giue him the Crownes : And Captaine, you muft needs be friends with him.

Flu. By this Day and this Light, the fellow ha's met64 tell enough in his belly: Hold, there is twelue-pence for you, and I pray you to ferue God, and keepe you out of prawles and prabbles, and quarrels and diffentions, and I warrant you it is the better for you.
68 Will. I will none of your Money.
Flu. It is with a good will: I can tell you it will ferue you to mend your fhooes: come, wherefore fhould yon be fo pafhfull, your fhooes is not fo good: 'tis a good 72 filling I warrant you, or I will change it.

## Enter Herauld.

King. Now Herauld, are the dead numbred ?
Herald. Heere is the number of the flaught'red French.
$7^{6}$ King. What Prifoners of good fort are taken, Vnckle?

Exe. Charles Duke of Orleance, Nephew to the King, Iohn Duke of Burbon, and Lord Bouchiquald:
80 Of other Lords and Barons, Knights and Squires, Full fifteene hundred, befides common men.

King. This Note doth tell me of ten thoufand French That in the field lye flaine: of Princes in this number, 84 And Nobles bearing Banners, there lye dead One hundred twentie fix : added to thefe, Of Knights, Efquires, and gallant Gentlemen, Eight thoufand and foure hundred : of the which, 88 Fiue hundred were but yefterday dubb'd K nights. So that in thefe ten thoufand they haue loft, There are but fixteene hundred Mercenaries : The reft are Princes, Barons, Lords, Knights, Squires,

## 91 The Life of Henry the Fift.

[col. I.
And Gentlemen of bloud and qualitie.
The Names of thofe their Nobles that lye dead:
Charles Delabreth, High Conftable of France,
Iaques of Chatilion, Admirall of France,
The Mafter of the Croffe-bowes, Lord Rambures,
Great Mafter of France, the braue Sir Guichard Dolphin,
Iohn Duke of Alanfon, Anthonie Duke of Brabant,
The Brother to the Duke of Burgundie,
And Edward Duke of Barr: of luftie Earles,
Grandpree and Roufie, Fauconbridge and Foyes,
Beaumont and Marle, Vandemont and Lefirale.
Here was a Royall fellowfhip of death.
Where is the number of our Englifh dead?
Edward the Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Suffolke,
Sir Richard Ketly, Dauy Gam Efquire;
None elfe of name : and of all other men, But fiue and twentie.

O God, thy Arme was heere :
And not to vs, but to thy Arme alone,
Afcribe we all: when, without ftratagem,
But in plaine fhock, and euen play of Battaile,
Was euer knowne fo great and little loffe ?
On one part and on th'other, take it God,
For it is none but thine.
Exet. 'Tis wonderfull.
King. Come, goe me in proceffion to the Village :
And be it death proclaymed through our Hoaft,
To boaft of this, or take that prayfe from God, Which is his onely.

Flu. Is it not lawfull and pleafe your Maieftie, to tell how many is kill'd ?

King. Yes Captaine : but with this acknowledgement, That God fought for vs.
[IV. 8] Flu. Yes, my confcience, he did vs great good. King. Doe we all holy Rights: Let there be fung Non nolis, and Te Deum, 128 The dead with charitie enclos'd in Clay:

And then to Callice, and to England then, Where ne're from France arriu'd more happy men. Exeunt.

## Enter Chorus.

Vouchfafe to thofe that haue not read the Story, That I may prompt them : and of fuch as haue, I humbly pray them to admit th'excufe
4 Of time, of numbers, and due courfe of things, Which cannot in their huge and proper life, Be here prefented. Now we beare the King Toward Callice : Graunt him there ; there feene, 8 Heaue him away vpon your winged thoughts, Athwart the Sea: Behold the Englifh beach Pales in the flood; with Men, Wiues, and Boyes, Whofe fhouts \& claps out-voyce the deep-mouth'd Sea, 12 Which like a mightie Whiffler 'fore the King, Seemes to prepare his way: So let him land, And folemnly fee him fet on to London. So fwift a pace hath Thought, that euen now 16 You may imagine him vpon Black-Heath : Where, that his Lords defire him, to haue borne His bruifed Helmet, and his bended Sword Before him, through the Citie : he forbids it,
91 The Life of Henry the Fift.[COL. 2.
Being free from vain-neffe, and felfe-glorious pride; ..... [V.Giuing full Trophee, Signall, and Oftent,Quite from himfelfe, to God. But now behold,In the quick Forge and working-houfe of Thought,How London doth powre out her Citizens,24The Maior and all his Brethren in beft fort,Like to the Senatours of th'antique Rome,With the Plebeians fwarming at their heeles,Goe forth and fetch their Conqu'ring Cafar in :28As by a lower, but by louing likelyhood,Were now the Generall of our gracious Empreffe,As in good time he may, from Ireland comming,Bringing Rebellion broached on his Sword;$3^{2}$How many would the peacefull Citie quit,To welcome him ? much more, and much more caufe,Did they this Harry. Now in London place him.As yet the lamentation of the French36
Inuites the King of Englands ftay at home:
The Emperour's comming in behalfe of France,
To order peace betweene them : and omitAll the occurrences, what euer chanc't,40Till Harryes backe returne again to France:There muft we bring him ; and my felfe haue play'dThe interim, by remembring you 'tis paft.Then brooke abridgement, and your eyes aduance,4.4
After your thoughts, ftraight backe againe to France.Exit.Enter Fluellen and Gower.[V. I]
Gower. Nay, that's right : but why weare you your Leeke to day? S. Dauies day is paft.
Flu. There is occafions and caufes why and wherefore
[V. I] in all things: I will tell you affe my friend; Captaine Gower; the rafcally, fcauld, beggerly, lowfie, pragging Knaue Piftoll, which you and your felfe, and all the World, know to be no petter then a fellow, looke you now, of no 8 merits : hee is come to me, and prings me pread and fault yefterday, looke you, and bid me eate my Leeke: it was in a place where I could not breed no contention with him; but I will be fo bold as to weare it in my Cap 12 till I fee him once againe, and then I will tell him a little piece of my defires.

## Enter Piftoll.

Gower. Why heere hee comes, fwelling like a Turkycock.
16 Flu. 'Tis no matter for his fwellings, nor his Turkycocks. God pleffe you aunchient Pistoll:you fcuruie lowfie Knaue, God pleffe you.

Pift. Ha, art thou bedlam ? doeft thou thirft, bafe 20 Troian, to haue me fold vp Parcas fatall Web? Hence; I am qualmifh at the fimell of Leeke.

Flu. I pefeech you heartily, fcuruie lowfie Knaue, at my defires, and my requefts, and my petitions, to eate, 24 looke you, this Leeke; becaufe, looke you, you doe not loue it, nor your affections, and your appetites and your difgeftions doo's not agree with it, I would defire you to eate it.
28 Pift. Not for Cadwallader and all his Goats. Flu. There is one Goat for you. Strikes him. Will you be fo good, fcauld Knaue, as eate it ? Pijt. Bafe Troian, thou fhalt dye.
32 Flu. You fay very true, fcauld Knaue, when Gods will is: I will defire you to liue in the meane time, and eate your Victuals: come, there is fawce for it. You call'd me yefterday Mountaine-Squier, but I will make
you to day a fquire of low degree. I pray you fall too, if [V. I] you can mocke a Leeke, you can eate a Leeke.

Gour. Enough Captaine, you haue aftonifht him.
Flu.I fay, I will make him eate fome part of my leeke, or I will peate his pate foure dayes: bite I pray you, it is 40 good for your greene wound, and your ploodie Coxecombe.

Pift. Muft I bite.
Flu. Yes certainly, and out of doubt and out of que- 44 ftion too, and ambiguities.

Pift. By this Leeke, I will moft horribly reuenge I eate and eate I fweare.

Flu. Eate I pray you, will you haue fome more fauce 48 to your Leeke : there is not enough Leeke to fweare by.

Piff. Quiet thy Cudgell, thou doft fee I eate.
Flu. Much good do you fcald knaue, heartily. Nay, pray you throw none away, the skinne is good for your 52 broken Coxcombe ; when you take occafions to fee Leekes heereafter, I pray you mocke at 'em, that is all.

Piff. Good.
Flu. I, Leekes is good: hold you, there is a groat to $5^{\circ}$ heale your pate.

Piff. Me a gro at ?
Flu Yes verily, and in truth you fhall take it, or I haue another Leeke in my pocket, which you fhall eate.

Pift. I take thy groat in earneft of reuenge.
Flu. If I owe you any thing, I will pay you in Cudgels, you fhall be a Woodmonger, and buy nothing of me but cudgels: God bu'y you, and keepe you, \& heale $\sigma_{+}$ your pate.

Exit
Pijf. All hell fhall ftirre for this.
Gow. Go, go, you are a counterfeit cowardly Knaue, will you mocke at an ancient Tradition began vppon an 68
[V. I] honourable refpect, and worne as a memorable Trophee of predeceafed valor, and dare not auouch in your deeds any of your words. I haue feene you gleeking \& galling 72 at this Gentleman twice or thrice. You thought, becaufe he could not fpeake Englifh in the native garb, he could not therefore handle an Englifh Cudgell: you finde it otherwife, and henceforth let a Welih correction, teach 76 you a good Englifh condition, fare ye well. Exit
Pift. Doeth fortune play the hufwife with me now ? Newes haue I that my Doll is dead i'th Spittle of a malady of France, and there my rendeuous is' quite cut off: 80 Old I do waxe, and from my wearie limbes honour is Cudgeld. Well, Baud Ile turne, and fomething leane to Cut-purfe of quicke hand: To England will I fteale, and there Ile fteale :
84 And patches will I get vinto thefe cudgeld fcarres, And fwore I got them in the Gallia warres. Exit.
[V. 2] Enter at one doore, King Henry, Exeter, Bedford, Warwicke, and other Lords. At another, Queene Ifabel, the King, the Duke of Bourgongne, and other French.
King. Peace to this meeting, wherefore we are met ; Vnto our brother France, and to our Sifter Health and faire time of day: Ioy and good wifhes 4 To our moft faire and Princely Cofine Katherine: And as a branch and member of this Royalty, By whom this great affembly is contriu'd, We do falute you Duke of Burgogne, 8 And Princes French and Peeres health to you all.

Fra. Right ioyous are we to behold your face. Moft worthy brother England, fairely met, So are you Princes (Englifh) euery one.

Quee. So happy be the Iffue brother Ireland
Of this good day, and of this gracious meeting, As we are now glad to behold your eyes, Your eyes which hitherto haue borne In them againft the French that met them in their bent,16

The fatall Balls of murthering Bafiliskes:
The venome of fuch Lookes we fairely hope
Haue loft their qualitie, and that this day
Shall change all griefes and quarrels into loue.
Eng. To cry Amen to that, thus we appeare.
Quee. You Englifh Princes all, I doe falute you.
Burg. My dutie to you both, on equall loue.
Great Kings of France and England : that I haue labour'd
With all my wits, my paines, and ftrong endeuors,
To bring your moft Imperiall Maiefties
Vnto this Barre, and Royall enterview ;
Your Mightineffe on both parts beft can witneffe.
Since then my Office hath fo farre preuayl'd, That Face to Face, and Royall Eye to Eye, You haue congreeted : let it not difgrace me, If I demand before this Royall view,
What Rub, or what Impediment there is, Why that the naked, poore, and mangled Peace, Deare Nourfe of Arts, Plentyes, and ioyfull Births, Should not in this beft Garden of the World, Our fertile France, put vp her louely Vifage ? Alas, fhee hath from France too long been chas'd, And all her Husbandry doth lye on heapes, Corrupting in it owne fertilitie.
Her Vine, the merry chearer of the heart, Vnpruned, dyes : her Hedges euen pleach'd, Like Prifoners wildly ouer-growne with hayre, Put forth diforder'd Twigs : her fallow Leas,44
[V. 2] The Darnell, Hemlock, and ranke Femetary, Doth root vpon; while that the Culter rufts, That fhould deracinate fuch Sauagery : 48 The euen Meade, that erft brought fweetly forth The freckled Cowlip, Burnet, and greene Clouer, Wanting the Sythe, withall vncorrected, ranke; Conceiues by idleneffe, and nothing teemes,
52 But hatefull Docks, rough Thiftles, Kekfyes, Burres, Loofing both beautie and vtilitie; And all our Vineyards, Fallowes, Meades, and Hedges Defectiue in their natures, grow to wildneffe.
56 Euen fo our Houfes, and our felues, and Children, Haue loft, or doe not learne, for want of time, The Sciences that fhould become our Countrey; But grow like Sauages, as Souldiers will, 60 That nothing doe, but meditate on Blood, To Swearing, and fterne Lookes, defus'd Attyre, And euery thing that feemes vnnaturall. Which to reduce into our former fauour, 64 You are affembled : and my feeech entreats, That I may know the Let, why gentle Peace Should not expell thefe inconueniences, And bleffe vs with her former qualities.
68 Eng. If Duke of Burgonie, you would the Peace, Whofe want giues growth to th'imperfections Which you haue cited; you muft buy that Peace With full accord to all our iuft demands,
72 Whofe Tenures and particular effects You haue enfchedul'd briefely in your hands. Burg. The King hath heard them: to the which, as yet There is no Anfwer made.
76 Eng. Well then : the Peace which you before fo vrg'd, Lyes in his Anfwer:

France. I

France. I haue but with a curfelarie eye
O're-glanc't the Articles : Pleafeth your Grace
To appoint fome of your Councell prefently
To fit with vs once more, with better heed
To re-furuey them; we will fuddenly
Paffe our accept and peremptorie Anfwer.
England. Brother we fhall. Goe Vnckle Exeter,
And Brother Clarence, and you Brother Gloucefier,
Warwick, and Huntington, goe with the King,
And take with you free power, to ratifie, Augment, or alter, as your Wifdomes beft
Shall fee aduantageable for our Dignitie,
Any thing in or out of our Demands,
And wee'le configne thereto. Will you, faire Sifter,
Goe with the Princes, or ftay here with vs?
Quee. Our gracious Brother, I will goe with them :
Happily a Womans Voyce may doe fome good,
When Articles too nicely vrg'd,be ftood on.
England. Yet leaue our Coufin Katherine here with vs,
She is our capitall Demand,compris'd
Within the fore-ranke of our Articles.
Quee. She hath good leaue.
Exeunt omnes.

Manet King and Katherine.
King. Faire Katherine, and moft faire,
Will you vouchfafe to teach a Souldier tearmes, Such as will enter at a Ladyes eare, And pleade his Loue-fuit to her gentle heart.

Kath. Your Maieftie fhall mock at me, I cannot fpeake $10+$ your England.

King. O faire Katherine, if you will loue me foundly with your French heart, I will be glad to heare you confeffe it brokenly with your Englifh Tongue. Doe you 108
[V. 2] like me, Kate ?
Kath. Pardonne moy, I cannot tell wat is like me.
King. An Angell is like you Kate, and you are like an 112 Angell.

Kath. Que dit il que Ie fuis femllable a les Anges?
Lady. Ouy verayment ( (auf voftre Grace) ainfidit il.
King. I faid fo, deare Katherine, and I muft not blufh I 16 to affirme it.

Kath. O bon Dieu, les langues des hommes font plein de tromperies.

King. What fayes fhe, faire one? that the tongues of $\mathbf{1 2 0}$ men are full of deceits ?

Lady. Ouy,dat de tongeus of de mans is be full of deceits : dat is de Princeffe.

King. The Princeffe is the better Englifh-woman : 124 yfaith Kate, my wooing is fit for thy vnderfanding, I am glad thou canft fpeake no better Englifh, for if thou could'ft, thou would'ft finde me fuch a plaine King, that thou wouldft thinke, I had fold my Farme to buy my 128 Crowne. I know no wayes to mince it in loue, but directly to fay, I loue you; then if you vrge me farther, then to fay, Doe you in faith? I weare out my fuite: Giue me your anfwer, yfaith doe, and fo clap hands, and a bar132 gaine: how fay you, Lady?

Kath. Sauf voftre honeur, me vnderftand well.
King. Marry, if you would put me to Verfes, or to Dance for your fake, Kate, why you vndid me: for the one 136 I haue neither words nor meafure; and for the other, I haue no ftrength in meafure, yet a reafonable meafure in ftrength. If I could wime a Lady at Leape-frogge, or by vawting into my Saddle, with my Armour on my backe; 140 vnder the correction of bragging be it fpoken, I fhould quickly leape into a Wife: Or if I might buffet for my

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
a \text {-FOL. } & 7 & 97
\end{array}
$$

Loue, or bound my Horfe for her fauours, I could lay on [V. 2] like a Butcher, and fit like a Iack an Apes, neuer off. But before God Kate, I cannot looke greenely, nor gafpe out 144 my eloquence, nor I haue no cunning in proteftation: onely downe-right Oathes, which I neuer vfe till vrg'd, nor neuer breake for vrging. If thou canft loue a fellow of this temper, Kate, whofe face is not worth Sunne-bur- 148 ning? that neuer lookes in his Glaffe, for lone of any thing he fees there? let thine Eye be thy Cooke. I fpeake to thee plaine Souldier: If thou canft loue me for this, take me ? if not ? to fay to thee that I hall dye, is true; but 152 for thy loue, by the L. No: yet I loue thee too. And while thou liu'ft, deare Kate, take a fellow of plaine and vncoyned Conftancie, for he perforce muft do thee right, becaufe he hath not the gift to wooe in other places: for 156 thefe fellowes of infinit tongue, that can ryme themfelues into Ladyes fanours, they doe alwayes reafon themfelues out againe. What? a fpeaker is but a prater, a Ryme is but a Ballad; a good Legge will fall, a ftrait Backe will 160 ftoope, a blacke Beard will turne white, a curl'd Pate will grow bald, a faire Face will wither, a full Eye will wax hollow: but a good Heart, Kate, is the Sunne and the Moone, or rather the Sunne, and not the Moone; for it 164 fhines bright, and neuer changes, but keepes his courfe truly. If thou would haue fuch a one, take me ? and take me; take a Souldier: take a Souldier; take a King. And what fay'ft thou then to my Loue? fpeake my faire, 168 and fairely, I pray thee.

Kath. Is it poffible dat I fould loue de ennemie of Fraunce ?

King. No, it is not poffible you fhould loue the Ene- 172 mie of France, Kate; but in louing me, you fhould loue the Friend of France: for I loue France fo well, that I
[V. 2] will not part with a Village of it: I will haue it all mine: 176 and Kate, when France is mine, and I am yours; then yours is France, and you are mine.

Kath. I cannot tell wat is dat.
King. No, Kate? I will tell thee in French, which I am 180 fure will hang vpon my tongue, like a new-married Wife about her Husbands Necke, hardly to be fhooke off; Ie quand fur le polféfion de Fraunce, छ์ quand vous aues le pofSeflion de moy. (Let mee fee, what then ? Saint Dennis bee 184 my fpeede) Donc voftre eft Fraunce, छ์ vous eftes mienne. It is as eafie for me, Kate, to conquer the Kingdome, as to fpeake fo much more French: I thall neuer moue thee in French, vnleffe it be to laugh at me.
188 Kath. Sauf vofire honeur, le Francois ques vous parleis, il E' melieus que l'Anglois le quel Ie parle.

King. No faith is't not, Kate: but thy fpeaking of my Tongue, and I thine, moft truely falfely, muft 192 needes be graunted to be much at one. But Kate, doo'ft thou vnderftand thus much Englifh? Canft thou loue mee ?

Kath. I cannot tell.
196 King. Can any of your Neighbours tell, Kate? Ile aske them. Come, I know thou loueft me: and at night, when you come into your Clofet, you'le queftion this Gentlewoman about me; and I know, Kate, you will to 200 her difprayfe thofe parts in me, that you loue with your heart : but good Kate, mocke me mercifully, the rather gentle Princefle, becaufe I loue thee cruelly. If euer thou beeft mine, Kate, as I haue a fauing Faith within me tells 204 me thou fhalt; I get thee with skambling, and thou muft therefore needes proue a good Souldier-breeder: Shall not thou and I, betweene Saint Dennis and Saint George, compound a Boy, halfe French halfe Englifh,
that thall goe to Conftantinople, and take the Turke by [V.2] the Beard. Shail wee not? what fay'ft thou, my faire Flower-de-Luce.

Kate. I doe not know dat.
King. No: 'tis hereafter to know, but now to promife : 212 doe but now promife Kate, you will endeauour for your French part of fuch a Boy ; and for my Englifh moytie, take the Word of a King, and a Batcheler. How anfwer you, La plus belle Katherine du monde mon trefcher E̛ deuin 216 deeflè.

Kath. Your Maieftee aue faufe Frenche enough to deceiue de moft fage Damoifeil dat is en Fraunce.

King. Now fye vpon my falle French: by mine Honor 220 in true Englifh, I loue thee Kate; by which Honor, I dare not fweare thou loueft me, yet my blood begins to flatter me, that thou doo'ft; notwithftanding the poore and vntempering effect of my Vifage. Now befhrew my 224 Fathers Ambition, hee was thinking of Ciuill Warres when hee got me, therefore was I created with a ftubborne out-fide, with an afpect of Iron, that when I come to wooe Ladyes, I fright them : but in faith Kate, the el- 228 der I wax, the better I fhall appeare. My comfort is, that Old Age, that ill layer vp of Beautie, can doe no more fpoyle vpon my Face. Thou haft me, if thou haft me, at the worft; and thou fhalt weare me, if thou weare me, 232 better and better: and therefore tell me, moft faire $K^{r} a$ therine, will you haue me? Put off your Maiden Blufhes, auouch the Thoughts of your Heart with the Lookes of an Empreffe, take me by the hand, and fay, Harry of 236 England, I am thine: which Word thou fhalt no fooner bleffe mine Eare withall, but I will tell thee alowd, England is thine, Ireland is thine, France is thine, and Henry Plantaginet is thine; who, though I fpeake it before his $24^{\circ}$
[V. 2] Face, if he be not Fellow with the beft King, thou fhalt finde the beft King of Good-fellowes. Come your Anfwer in broken Mufick; for thy Voyce is Mufick, and
244 thy Englifh broken: Therefore Queene of all, Katherine, breake thy minde to me in broken Englifh; wilt thou haue me?

Kath. Dat is as it dhall pleafe de Roy mon pere.
248 King. Nay, it will pleafe him well, Kate; it fhall pleafe him, Kate.

Kath. Den it fall alfo content me.
King. Vpon that I kiffe your Hand, and I call you my $25_{2}$ Queene.

Kath. Laịfè mon Seigneur, laịfè, laị/fé, may foy: Ie ne veus point que vous ablaife vofire grandeus, en baifant le main d'une nostre Seigneur indignie feruiteur excufe moy. Ie 256 vous fupplie mon tref-pui!fànt Seigneur.

King. Then I will kiffe your Lippes, Kate.
Kath. Les Dames छ' Damoifels pour eftre baifee deuant leur nopcefe il net pas le coftume de Fraunce.
260 King. Madame, my Interpreter, what fayes fhee ?
Lady. Dat it is not be de fathon pour le Ladies of Fraunce; I cannot tell wat is buiffe en Anglifh.

King. To kiffe.
264 Lady. Your Maieftee entendre bettre que moy.
King. It is not a fafhion for the Maids in Fraunce to kiffe before they are marryed, would fhe fay ?

Lady. Ouy verayment.
268 King. O Kate, nice Cuftomes curfie to great Kings. Deare Kate, you and I cannot bee confin'd within the weake Lyft of a Countreyes fafhion: wee are the makers of Manners, Kate; and the libertie that followes 272 our Places, ftoppes the mouth of all finde-faults, as I will doe yours, for vpholding the nice fafhion of your

Countrey, in denying me a Kiffe: therefore patiently, [V. 2] and yeelding. You haue Witch-craft in your Lippes, Kate : there is more eloquence in a Sugar touch of 276 them, then in the Tongues of the French Councell; and they fhould fooner perfwade Harry of England, then a generall Petition of Monarchs. Heere comes you Father.

## Enter the French Power, and the Englifh <br> Lords.

Burg. God faue your Maieftie, my Royall Coufin, teach you our Princeffe Englifh ?

King. I would haue her learne, my faire Coufin, how perfectly I loue her, and that is good Englifh. 284

Burg. Is thee not apt ?
King. Our Tongue is rough, Coze, and my Condition is not fmooth: fo that hauing neyther the Voyce nor the Heart of Flatterie about me, I cannot fo coniure vp 288 the Spirit of Loue in her, that hee will appeare in his true likeneffe.

Burg. Pardon the frankneffe of my mirth, if I anfwer you for that. If you would coniure in her, you muft 292 make a Circle: if coniure vp Loue in her in his true likeneffe, hee muft appeare naked, and blinde. Can you blame her then, being a Maid, yet ros'd ouer with the Virgin Crimfon of Modeftie, if thee deny the apparance 296 of a naked blinde Boy in her naked feeing felfe? It were (my Lord) a hard Condition for a Maid to configne to.

King. Yet they doe winke and yeeld, as Loue is blind 300 and enforces.

Burg. They are then excus'd, my Lord, when they fee
[V. 2] not what they doe.
304 King. Then good my Lord, teach your Coufin to confent winking.
B.rrg. I will winke on her to confent, my Lord, if you will teach her to know my meaning: for Maides well 308 Summer'd, and warme kept, are like Flyes at Bartholo-mew-tyde, blinde, though they haue their eyes, and then they will endure handling, which before would not abide looking on.
312 King. This Morall tyes me ouer to Time, and a hot Summer; and fo I thall catch the Flye, your Coufin, in the latter end, and thee muft be blinde to.

Burg. As Loue is my Lord, before it loues.
316 King. It is fo: and you may, fome of you, thanke Loue for my blindneffe, who cannot fee many a faire French Citie for one faire French Maid that ftands in my way.
320 French King. Yes my Lord, you fee them perfpectiuely: the Cities turn'd into a Maid; for they are all gyrdled with Maiden Walls, that Warre hath entred.
324 England. Shall Kate be my Wife ?
France. So pleafe you.
Eng/and. I am content, fo the Maiden Cities you talke of, may wait on her: fo the Maid that ftood in 328 the way for my With, hall fhew me the way to my Will.

France. Wee haue confented to all tearmes of reafon.
3.32 England. Is't fo, my Lords of England ?

Weft. The King hath graunted euery Article :
His Daughter firft ; and in fequele, all, According to their firme propofed natures.

Exet. Onely

Exet. Onely he hath not yet fubficribed this:
Where your Maieftie demands, That the King of France hauing any occafion to write for matter of Graunt, fhall name your Highneffe in this forme, and with this additi-
on, in French: Nofire trefcher filz Henry Roy d' Angleterre 340
Heretere de Fraunce: and thus in Latine; Preclarifimus Filius nofer Henricus Rex Anglia Ơ Heres Francice. $^{2}$

France. Nor this I haue not Brother fo deny'd, But your requeft thall make me let it paffe.

England. I pray you then, in loue and deare allyance,
Let that one Article ranke with the reft,
And thereupon giue me your Daughter.
France. Take her faire Sonne, and from her blood rayfe vp 348
Iffue to me, that the contending Kingdomes
Of France and England, whofe very fhoares looke pale,
With enuy of each others happineffe,
May ceafe their hatred; and this deare Coniunction $35^{2}$
Plant Neighbour-hood and Chriftian-like accord
In their fweet Bofomes : that neuer Warre aduance
His bleeding Sword 'twixt England and faire France.
Lords. Amen.
King. Now welcome Kate: and beare me witneffe all, That here I kiffe her as my Soueraigne Queene. Flouri/h.
Quee. God, the beft maker of all Marriages, Combine your hearts in one, your Realmes in one:
As Man and Wife being two,are one in loue,
So be there 'twixt your Kingdomes fuch a Spoufall, That neuer may ill Office, or fell Iealoufie,
Which troubles oft the Bed of bleffed Marriage,
Thruft in betweene the Pation of thefe Kingdomes,
To make diuorce of their incorporate League:
That Englifh may as French, French Englifhmen,
[V. 2] Receiue each other. God fpeake this Amen. All. Amen.
King. Prepare we for our Marriage : on which day, My Lord of Burgundy wee'le take your Oath 372 And all the Peeres, for furetie of our Leagues, Then fhall I fweare to Kate, and you to me, And may our Oathes well kept and profp'rous be.

Senet.
Exeunt.

## Enter Chorus.

Thus farre with rough, and all-vnable Pen, Our bending Author hath purfu'd the Story, In little roome confining mightie men,
4 Mangling by ftarts the full courle of their glory. Small time : but in that finall, moft greatly liued This Starre of England. Fortune made his Sword ; By which, the Worlds beft Garden he atchiened :
8 And of it left his Sonne Imperiall Lord. Henry the Sixt, in Infant Bands crown'd King Of France and England, did this King fucceed : Whofe State fo many had the managing,
12 That they loft France, and made his England bleed : Which oft our Stage hath fhowne; and for their fake, In your faire minds let this acceptance take.

## FIN I S.

[Triangular tail-piece as generally inserted in original whenever sufficient space is left.]
k 2


## THE TWO NOBLE KINSMEN.

AReprint of the Quarto, 1634.

## THE

## TW0 NOBLE KINSMEN.

REPRINT OF THE QUARTO, 1634.

EDITED BY

## HAROLD LITTLEDALE.

PUBLISHED FOR

BY N. TRÜBNER \& CO., 57, 59, LUDGATE HILL, LONDON, 1876.

Eeries II. 䈭。 7.
john childs and son, printers.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY.

The Quarto, 1634 , is here for the first time reprinted literally. The original arrangement of the text has been exactly followed, even to the division of the pages; and care has been taken to render this virtually a facsimile reproduction

No Collation (properly so called) of the two earliest editions has hitherto appeared. Accordingly, in attempting one for the first time, I have been under the disadvantage of having no such predecessor as the Cambridge Shakespeare or Mr Furness' splendid Variorum to supply a test of the accuracy of my work. ${ }^{1}$ This disadvantage I have tried to remedy by a very careful comparison of the proof-sheets with the original texts ; and I trust that very few errors have escaped correction.

Indeed, I am almost disposed to fear censure for over-exactness in my Collation of the Folio (Appendix A) ; but a Collation (some scholars whose opinions are worth having agree in this) should be virtually a reprint, for what seems trivial to one reader may yet be of considerable service to another.

The following descriptive list includes most of the English Editions I have seen, all I have collated :-
I. Quarto, 1634. The earliest extant or known edition of this play, here reprinted from Mr P. A. Daniel's copy. The text is evidently taken, as the directions and actors' names (e. g. pp. $14,64,80$ ) shew, from the stage copy at the Blackfriars Theatre. It is noteworthy that between the two copies I have seen, viz. one belonging to P. A. Daniel, Esq. (kindly lent for the purposes of this reprint), and the other in the Library of Trinity College, Dublin,-there are several variations, one of which is important as clearing up an old editorial crux, and (still more so !) as explaining and establishing the Folio reading, doubted by Dye. ${ }^{2}$ One other variation is of some importance. I have collated the Daniel and T. C. D. quartos carefully, and find the following variations between them :

Daniel Qu: I. i. 179, 1 evy-I. ii. 77, glory on [no stop]-I. iv. 20, succard-v. ii. 3 I , hon ${ }^{\text {est }},-58 \mathrm{H}^{\mathrm{e} \text { 's a-59, } \mathrm{Di}^{\text {d you, }} \text {,-where }}$ the Dublin Qo (revised as the volume was being issued, probably), reads :-levy-glory on[;]-smeard-honest-He's a-1 )id you. ${ }^{\text {. }}$

[^0]2. Folio, 1679. The second folio edition of B. and F. Title : "Fifty Comedies and Tragedies written by \{Francis Beaumont And John Fletcher,\} Gentlemen. All in one Volume. Published by the Authors Original Copies, the Songs to each Play being added. Si quid habent veri Vatum prasagia, vivam. [Device] London, Printed by F. Macock, for Fohn Martyn, Henry Herringman, Richard Marriot, MDCLXXIX."

From the Preface-The Booksellers to the Reader-we learn that..." Besides, in this Edition you have the addition of no fewer than Seventeen Plays more than were in the former, which we have taken the pains and care to collect, and Print out of 4 to in this Volume, which for distinction sake are markt with a Star in the Catalogue of them facing the first Page of the Book." . . Accordingly we find

47 Two Noble Kinsmen.*
which shews, as a collation of the texts clearly confirms, that the Folio text was taken from the Quarto ; and the revised Quarto, the reading smear'd tells us.

The numerous corrections are evidently the work of an intelligent compositor, who has removed misprints and modernised spelling as he went along. Traces of an editorial revision of the text are nowhere apparent, though the fact of a list of dramatis personce being given would indicate that some little attention had been paid to the reprint. Hence for critical purposes the collation I have made is of small independent value ; nevertheless I have thought it deserving of a place at the end of the reprint : a thorough collation was needed, and had not hitherto been supplied. This collation, it may be added, gives some interesting illustrations of the progress which forty-five years had caused towards attaining a standard orthography. The $e$ final (againe, etc.) is omitted; -our (armour, etc.) generally altered to -or; terminations in -les, -nes, etc. (careles, busines,) have the $s$ doubled (more regard being had to uniformity than to etymology); and other similar modifications appear. I do not mean to affirm that the changes here indicated were introduced into all books of the period; that the spelling had become fixed; I only call attention to the noteworthy fact that in a reprint of a book published in 1634, there were in 1679 introduced certain changes of spelling which, with a few exceptions, are observed consistently throughout.
3. ED. 1711 . B. and F. "in seven volumes.-Adorned with cuts.-Revised and Corrected : with some account of the life and writings of the Authors.-London : Printed for Facob Tonson, at Shakespear's Head over-against Catherine-Street in the Strand. MDCCXI."

The prefatory "account" is little more than a combination of Dryden's note on Rymer's Tragedies of the Last Age, considered and examined (1673) ; and the passages in Gerard Langbaine's Account of the English Dramatick Poets (1691), relating to B. and F. This Preface cannot be considered accurate. For instance, the writer (p. xxvii) quotes 27 lines from Langbaine, in which extensive transcript he inserts one word, omits thirty-two, and substitutes for the word decease the word death. He then gives, with-
out acknowledgment, an alphabetical list of B. and F.'s plays, almost verbally from Langbaine's list : the few additions to the older account being of no value.

The reference to our play is as follows :--" Two Noble Kinsmen, a Tragi-Comedy. This Play was written by Mr Fletcher, and Mr Shakespear. The Story is taken from Chaucer's Knight's Tale, which Mr Dryden has admirably put into modern English ; it is the first Poem in his Fables" (vol. I. p. xxxix). This-which is an unusually wide variation from Langbaine's "Two Noble Kinsmen, a Tragi-Comedy. This Play was written by Mr. Fletcher, and Mr.Shakespear." (p.215)-gives no support to the tradition of Shakspere's authorship beyond the inference that no contradiction of the tradition had been put forward. Langbaine is generally careful in his statements, and we may consider that he knew no reason for doubting the title-page of the Quarto, from which he probably derived his information. In the Preface, he tells us that he has given the reader "a large Account of the Title-page of each Play" which he has seen. His "large Account" of the $2 N$. K. has been given above.

The text of this 1711 edition is taken from the Folio, and is quite worthless; only one important var. lect. appears, viz., Tylters for Tytlers, V. iii. 83/95. Strange to state, not one of the Editors have noticed the older reading! all read tilters.
4. ED. 1750. B. and F. ten vols. "Collated with all the former Editions, and Corrected. With Notes Critical and Explanatory. By The Late Mr Theobald, Mr Seward of Eyam in Derbyshire, and Mr Sympson of Gainsborough. London, Printed for J. and R. Tonson, and S. Draper in the Strand .MDCCL."

This is the first so-called critical edition, with Introductions, Notes, \&c., but the fact of the existence of these notes is rather to be regretted than otherwise (except perhaps as illustrating the ignorance of Elizabethan literature which prevailed in the last century), for the necessity has thereby been imposed upon subsequent editors of transcribing, combating, and exposing, the miserable displays of ignorance and vanity which Mr Seward of Eyam in Derbyshire has embodied in the form of notes. Coleridge asks, "Did the name of criticism ever descend so low as in the hands of those two fools and knaves, Seward and Sympson?" (Table Talk, p. 212, ed. 1852). And if this be thought rather hard on the good easy men, the following from Gifford's preface to Ben Jonson (p. 68, ed. 1853, Moxon) shews that Coleridge was not alone in thinking lightly of their editorial qualities :- "Whether Whalley [in his edition of Jonson] was diffident of himself, or the gentlemen volunteered their assistance, I have no means of knowing, but he availed himself occasionally of the aid of Sympson and Seward, (the editors of Beaumont and Fletcher,) who led him astray, and where he would have been simply wrong, if left to himself, rendered him absurd. In one pleasant way of making notes, and swelling the bulk of the book, they all agreed. None of them printed from the earliest editions; they took up the latest which they could find, and went smoothly on till they were stopt by some palpable error of the press. This, as the clown says, zeas meat and drink to them; they immediately set themselves to con-
jecture what the word should be, and after a little burst of vanity, at which it is impossible to forbear a smile, they turned, for the first time, to the old copy, and invited the public to witness their sagacity, and partake in their triumph."

I have omitted all such conjectures of Seward's as I found anticipated in the old editions, with a few exceptions preserved as specimens. Theobald, who died before the edition had advanced very far, has left a few good notes; Sympson's are occasionally presentable, but as for Seward-Seward "never deviates into sense." I regret that my duty as an Editor has necessitated a reproduction of so many of the notes from the edition of 1750; far sooner would I leave them in obscure repose. Not that I wish to speak uncharitably of any one ; rather, with the gentle Coleridge, I would say :--" Mr. Seward! Mr. Seward! you may be, and I trust you are, an angel; but you were an ass." (Shakesp. Notes and Lect., p. 286, ed. 1874.)
5. ED. I778. B. and F. ten vols., the notes by various editors, viz. G. Colman, J. N., R[eed], and others. This edition was reprinted in 1811, with Whalley's ed. of Ben Jonson, the B. and F. occupying three of the four volumes. While some part of the notes is devoted to exposing not only the "carelessness," but also "the more unpardonable faults of faithlessness and misrepresentation," which characterised Messrs Seward and Sympson's edition, the remaining portion consists chiefly of quotations from those commentators, with a few insignificant and generally worthless additions. The best of the new notes are perhaps those signed $R$. (Reed) ; Colman's share in the work does not appear to have been important.

Although the text is not stretched or lopped as it had been by the metrical Procrustes (of Eyam in Derbyshire), it is nevertheless full of inaccuracies, these arising mainly from ignorance of Elizabethan words and usages, and a few also from careless revision of the proof-sheets,-Seward's errors being exposed in a note, and yet left standing in the text. But, with all its imperfections, this edition is still widely separated from its predecessor, and must be regarded as the first true critical edition of Beaumont and Fletcher's works. The editors, it may be added, hold that our play has been falsely ascribed to Shakspere (pref. ix).
6. ED. 18ı2. Henry Weber's, fourteen vols. 8vo. The text has been reprinted by E. Moxon (1839, 1851, re-issued lately among Routledge's "Old Dramatists"), in two vols., with a preface by George Darley, and a glossary, but without notes.

Weber benefited by the notes of Monck Mason (1798), and produced a comparatively accurate text. My references to B. and F.'s plays are, unless where otherwise stated, to Moxon's ed., 185 I, 2 vols. roy. 8vo.
7. Knight's Pictorial Sh., eight vols., 8vo., i839-184i.

Considering Knight's fine scholarship, it is strange that the $2 N . K$. text in this ed. should be almost worthless; yet such is actually the case. And the cause is not far to seek. Knight believed that the non-Fletcherian portions were by Chapman, consequently gave the play a grudging admittance into his Shakspere, and only out of deference to tradition and opinion on the subject.

## Billiography.

ix

Mr Hickson also attributes the careless manner in which Knight printed the play to his having "prejudged the question" of authorship (N. Sh. Tr. 1874, I. 26*).

Knight's text is little more than a reprint of that of 1778 , with a few changes, not always for the better, one or two readings in some degree worthy of him, and many marks of perfect indifference about the accuracy of the text.

Dyce, following soon after with his ed. of B. and F., pointed out many blunders of preceding editors, and Knight in the 2nd ed. of the "Pictorial" adopted the majority of Dyce's corrections, and indeed may be said to have based his revised text exclusively upon Dyce's. Except that Knight's second text might afford some corroboration of Dyce's authority, it possesses no intrinsic value, and cannot be regarded as an independent critical effort. A few passages have been excluded from the text on the score of grossness, but, as is usual in "bowdlerised " editions, others just as obnoxious have been retained.
8. ed. Dyce. B. and F. 1843-6, eleven vols. It is unnecessary to speak at any length of this masterly work, which must long remain the standard edition of these authors. The text and notes are of real importance, and, considering the great extent of the undertaking, wonderfully accurate. In the second edition of his Shakspere, Dyce admitted the $2 \mathrm{~N} . \mathrm{K}$. (adopting the division made by Spalding in his Letter, \&c. 1833), and revised the text and notes carefully. The 3rd edition, 1876, with Dyce's latest corrections, has been taken as the basis of this revised text, and I have to thank Messrs Chapman and Hall for their kindness in enabling me to use the proof-sheets for some time before the actual publication of the eighth vol. of Dyce. This last edition, so far as the $2 N . K$. is concerned, is almost exactly the same as that of 1867, even such a slip as is made in the Preface (Dyce's Sh. vol. viii. p. 117), where it is stated that our play is printed "in the folios of Shakespeare, 1664 and 1685," remaining uncorrected. ${ }^{\text {. }}$
9. ed. H. Tyrrell. "Doubtful Plays," in one vol. s. a. I had not been able to obtain access to a copy of this edition until April, 1876, when I found that Mr Tyrrell had occasionally anticipated me in my restorations of the old readings. But I also found that he had followed the Quarto as an absolute and infallible guide (even in punctuation) in many places where I had felt myself compelled to depart from its authority. All Mr Tyrrell's most important readings have been noted in the critical collation affixed to the revised text, but I studied his edition too late to be able to insert his readings among my general notes. The annotations are worthless, being based chiefly upon Mr Seward's ; and the text is occasionally so bad (e. g. V. iv. io) that one cannot help thinking that its special merits are due rather to the accuracy of the Quarto text than to the editor's judicious discrimination.
10. ED. SkEAT, 1875. A school edition, with Introduction,
${ }^{1} \mathrm{Mr}$ W. C. Hazlitt repeats this mistake in his ed. of Hazlitt's Eliz. Literature (Bell and Daldy, 1870, p. 119, n.) : but Mr Hazlitt is, I regret to say, not conspicuous for his accuracy. (e.g. contrast the prefatory note with the mistakes or inaccurate quotations on $\mathrm{pp} .30,37,75,88,106,127$, etc.)

## Billiography.

Notes, critical and explanatory, and Index of words explained, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. (Pitt Press, Cambridge). I can recommend this (the first) edition, for its systematic and apparently laborious preparation, but cannot speak very highly of the text and some of the critical notes, as they seem to be:, (a) not up to dateMr Skeat collated no edition later than Dyce's first ( $1843-6$ ), and consequently lost both Dyce's later corrections and the revisions of Knight's second edition ; (b) excessively expurgated-at least the moral purification of the text has occasionally engendered much critical corruption-this however is but a matter of individual opinion, and need not be insisted on ; (c) inaccurately collated and revised, leading Mr Skeat ( I ) to propose ( $\mathrm{p} .119,1$. 112; p. 150, 1. 15) as conjectural emendations two readings which appear in the old editions: (2) to misquote preceding texts in the critical notes: (3) to neglect some important old readings. These faults, however, are due to hasty execution of the work, and will doubtless be corrected in a new edition. The general plan is excellent; and many illustrative and explanatory notes are, as was to be expected, very suggestive. The Introduction, however, is plainly the work of a scholar new to the subject; and is decidedly disappointing. We find in it Mr Skeat's usual regularity of arrangement and inclusive plan of treatment, but we miss the firmness of grasp and thoroughness of execution which render his editions of Early English texts so serviceable. The Introduction,treating of the various questions of origin, authorship, date, evidence, tests, opinion, etc.,-appears to have been written before Mr Skeat had reached that stage of knowledge of his subject at which the work of preceding inquirers, so far as un-original, becomes merged in and replaced by the productions of his own independent and special researches. A student, tolerably familiar with his materials, cannot afford to take his information at second-hand : does not do so, at least, without sufficient verification of his authorities. This indicates a capital defect in Mr Skeat's prefatory remarks,-he has in certainly two instances of importance suffered loss by not taking his materials at first-hand. In one case, he misses all that is of the slightest interest-viz. Elizabeth's criticisms-in Wood's accounts of Edwarde's play acted before the queen at Oxford, by quoting Knight's meagre excerpt from one of Wood's narratives, in place of hunting up the originals (as given, for example, by Nicholls, Progr. of Eliz.; see Introduction to the present edition) under date 1566 . But Mr Skeat had a more serious loss in not studying Mr Spalding's Letter, etc., the most important dissertation (Mr Hickson's review hardly excepted,) yet published on the preliminary considerations about the authorship of this play. Mr Skeat contents himself (p. xv ) with quoting (and not quite literally) three lines from Mr Spalding's Letter ( $\mathrm{p} . \mathrm{6}_{1}$ ), which lines are to be found (also quoted inexactly) in Mr Hickson's paper (p. 29*). Moreover, Mr Skeat repeats the careless slip made at p. 26* of the Transactions, where the signature is wrongly given. ${ }^{\text { }}$
${ }^{1}$ Skeat, Introd. p. xv. : "a letter signed J. S." F., note in N. S. Trans. '74, p. I. p. $26^{*}$, "The Preface is signed J. S." The Letter has no " Preface "-it has Mr Spalding's initials on the last page (III) :-"W. S."

The pity of it is that Mr Skeat's Introduction omits demonstration of the many really valuable arguments put forward by Spalding at the outset of his consideration-deductions from various points of external probability, historical evidence, etc. Certainly, opinion must play an important part in an examination of the kind, but it might rest on as firm a basis of fact and logical inference as could possibly be got together, remembering that conviction
> "must be grounded
> On knowledge, not opinion, (for opinion Relies on probability and accident, But knowledge on necessity and truth)."

(Ford, Broken Heart, III. i.)
I have derived a good deal of help from Mr Skeat's book, and I believe I have in every case acknowledged my obligation, even so far as occasionally, when we happened to coincide, giving my note the benefit of Mr Skeat's authority. I am also indebted to Mr Skeat for many valuable communications, for which I sincerely thank him ; and, I may be allowed to add, he has only his own high reputation as a scholar to thank for the detailed, perhaps excessively minute, criticisms I have ventured to make upon his book.

The following sources should also be mentioned as important :-
a. Heath's $M S$. notes, quoted by Dyce.
b. Monck Mason's Comments on the Plays of B. and F. 1798 : containing some comparatively good notes.
c. Sidney Walker's Critical Examination of the Text of Shakespeare. Walker's notes are especially valuable for the metrical rearrangements of particular passages, suggested by him.
d. Dr C. M. Ingleby and Dr B. Nicholson, two of my felloweditors for our Society, have had the kindness to send me some important critical and illustrative comments upon this play, all of which will be found among the general notes to the revised text. I beg to return both these gentlemen my earnest thanks for their assistance. Dr Nicholson is at present preparing a complete edition of the "Doubtful Plays,"-I do but hope that the present edition may, as far as possible, serve to lighten his work on one such play.

Present edition. The plan of this edition is Mr Furnivall's, the execution my own. In at least one respect, I heartily agree with Mr Furnivall's design, viz. in the retention (as far as possible) of the old forms of spelling in the revised text. Modernised Shakspere may be very well for people who won't read him at all if he is "wrongly spelt ;" but surely scholars should rather seek to have his works, if not possibly as they were written, at least certainly as they were pronounced. Who ever wades through Dryden's Palamon and Arcite in preference to the old Knightes Tale? Who has ever suggested that we should discard old Homer's dialect, and robe that ancient person's poetry in modern Greek ?

And if modernisation be once granted, who will shew us where to draw the line? Are we to hew down our author to the most sweet understandings of his readers? or may we hope that by

## Billiography.

leaving him above them a little they may eventually reach him, and that without their suffering either "sickness in will, or wrestling strength in reason ?"

But I should have been better satisfied if dire Necessity (in this instance, not Mr Furnivall, but the common custom of Editors) had spared me and my readers the infliction of explanatory notes. Let us have various readings to any extent, and a carefully prepared text, but why must the wretched student of modern Shakspere go wading through a vast quagmire of critical opinion and confutation, before he is allowed to catch a glimpse of the pure Shakspere stream, as it gleams faintly and far out over the tangled mazes of this dismal editorial swamp?

The present is only a trial-edition, in which some attempt is made to place the oldest texts before the student, to bring the chief editorial variations into a serviceable focus, and to supply a concise summary of the most important criticisms and explanations. I have done my best to render the criticism and explanations useful to the general student, but the first commentators on this play struck a note so "compact of jars," that even the last two editors have not succeeded in reducing this critical discord to an uniformly harmonious tone. To this variorum selection, in deference to the ground-plan of this edition, further notes have been added, which the reader might have had the luck to have been spared, but for certain contributions from friendly hands which induced me to let mine own ill-favoured attempts go forth in such respectable company. After all, notes are but excrescences, necessary evils; and so long as folk accept the variorum theory of Shakspere study, so long must they submit to commentaries that are incomparable (save to Dr Parr's wig) in their immensity and density. We have "bowdlerised" editions in plenty; when will the Hercules come who will bowdlerise the editors? when the critic who, taking his stand at 1700 , will give us adequate collations of the old texts, and concise explanations of any real difficulties; who though he may read the commentators for his private delectation, will let us hear nothing of them,-preferring instead to disclaim all originality, and so truly to become-original? Till then the editors and not the editee must hold first place in the general student's mind.

In addition to the gentlemen already mentioned, I beg to acknowledge my obligations to Professors J. K. Ingram, R. Atkinson, and E. Dowden, of Trinity College, Dublin ; to Rev. A. S. Palmer, Mr F. J. Furnivall, and to my fellow-members of the " Mermaid Shakspere Club," for many valuable suggestions and corrections. The whole Society owes a fresh debt of gratitude to Mr P. A. Daniel for his kindness in allowing his copy of the Quarto to be used for the purposes of this reprint.

Harold Littledale.

## ABBREVIATIONS.

Editions collated marked*.

* Q. Quarto, 1634.
* F. or F2. B. and F., 2d Fol. 1679. Denoted by O. Edd.
* T. or ed. 17 II . Tonson's ed. 7 vols. $\}$ when they agree.
* S. or ed. 1750. $(\mathrm{Se} .=)$ Seward, $(\mathrm{Sy} .=)$ Sympson, $(\mathrm{Th} .=)$ Theobald's ed. 1750 .

Heath. Heath's MS. notes, quoted by Dyce.

* C. or Edd. 1778. Colman, or the Editors (or ed., the edition) of 1778 .

Mason. Comments by Monck Mason, 1798.

* C. 181I. Reprint of C. 1778.
* W. Weber's ed. 1812.
* K. ('41). Knight's first ed. of the "Pictorial," 1838-41.
* D. ('46). Dyce's first ed. B. and F. 1843-6.
* Ty. Tyrrell's Shakspere. "Doubtful Plays," I vol. s. a Sid. Walker. Critical Exam. of the text of Sh., 1860.
* K. ('67). Knight's " Pictorial," second ed.
* D. ('67). Dyce's Sh., second ed. 1867.
* Sk. Skeat's ed. 1875.
* D. ('76). Dyce's Sh., third ed. (vol. viii.) 1876.
D. (' 67,76 ) shews that both have the same reading.
K. shews that Knight's reading is the same in all his edd.
D. shews that Dyce's reading is the same in all his edd.

Note. Where similar readings differ only in immaterial points of spelling or type, I have given the spelling as in the oldest of the several editions.

For convenience of reference, the number of the lines in both Reprint and Revised text are given when necessary. Thus, V. iii. $83 / 95$ may be read : Act V., scene iii., line 83 in Revised text [numbered metrically], line 95 in simple Reprint [numbered according to the lines of type].
(A)

# THE T WO NOBLE KINSMEN : 

## Prefented at the Blackfriers

 by the Kings Maiefties fervants, with great applaufe:Written by the memorable Worthies of their time; $\left\{\begin{array}{l}\mathrm{M}^{\mathrm{r}} . \text { John Fletcher, and } \\ \mathrm{M}^{\mathrm{r}} . \text { William Shak/peare. }\end{array}\right\}$ Gent.


Printed at London by Tho. Cotes, for John Waterfon: and are to be fold at the figne of the Crown in Pails Church-yard. 1634 .

## PROLOGVE.

Florifh.

| N Ew Playes, and Maydenheads, are neare a kin, Much follow'd both, for both much mony g'yn, If they fiand found, and well: And a good Play |  |
| :---: | :---: |
| (Whofe modeft Sceanes llufh on his marriage day, | 4 |
| And Shake to loofe his honour) is like hir |  |
| That after holy Tye, and firft nights fiir |  |
| Yet fill is Modefiie, and fiill retaines |  |
| More of the maid to fight, than Huslands paines; | 8 |
| We pray our Play may be fo; For I am fure |  |
| It has a noble Breeder, and a pure, |  |
| $A$ learned, and a Poet never uent |  |
| More famous yet twixt Po and flver Trent | 12 |
| Chaucer (of all admir'd) the Story gives, |  |
| There conftant to Eternity it lives; |  |
| If we let fall the Nollenẹfe of this, |  |
| And the firft found this child heare, be a hịfe, | ı6 |
| How will it Jhake the lones of that good man, And make him cry from under ground, O fan |  |
| From me the witles chaffe of Juch a wrighter (lighter |  |
| That blaftes my Bayes, and my fam'd workes makes | 0 |
| Then Rolin Hood? This is the feare we lring; |  |
| For to fay Truth, it were an endlefle thing, |  |
| And too ambitious to afpire to him; |  |
| Weake as we are, and almoft lreathleffe fuim | 24 |
| In this deepe water. Do but you hold out |  |
| Your helping hands, and we Shall take alout, |  |
| And Jomething doe to Save us: You Jhall heare |  |
| Sceanes though belou' his Art, may yet appeare | 28 |
| Worth two houres travell. To his lones fweet leepe: |  |
| Content to you. If this play doe not keepe, |  |
| A little dull time from us, we perceave |  |
| Our loffes fall fo thicke, we muft needs leave. | 32 |

Florifh.


## THE TWO NOBLE Kinfmen.

[I. I]
Actus Primus.

Enter Hymen with a Torch burning: a Boy, in a white Rove lefore finging, and firewing Flowres: After Hymen, a Nimph, encompaft in her Tre@es, learing a wheaten Garland. Then Thefeus letweene two other Nimphs with wheaten Chaplets on their heades. Then Hipolita the Bride, lead by Thefeus, and another holding a Garland over her head (her Treffes likewife hanging.) After her Emilia holding up her Traine.

The Song, Mufike.


Ofes their Jharpe Jpines leing gon, Not royall in their fmels alone, But in their hew.

4 Maiden Pinckes, of odour faint, Dazies fmel-lefle, yet mof quaint And Sweet Time true.

Prim-rofe firft lorne, child of Ver,
8 Merry Spring times Herlinger, With her vels dimme. Oxlips, in their Cradles growing, Mary-golds, on death beds blowing,
Larkef-heeles trymme.

$$
a-\mathrm{Q}_{\mathrm{I} .} \quad \mathrm{I}
$$

All deere natures children : fweete-
Ly fore Bride and Bridegroomes feete
Blefling their fence.
Strew
Flowers.
Not an angle of the aire, 16
Bird melodious, or lird faire,
Is alfent hence.
The Crow, the Jaundrous Cuckoe, nor
The boding Raven, nor Clough hee
Nor chattring Pie,
May on our Bridehoufe pearch or fing,
Or with them any difcord bring
But from it fly.
Enter 3. Queenes in Blacke, with vailes faind, with imperiall Crownes. The 1. Queene fals downe at the foote of Thefeus; The 2. fals downe at the foote of Hypolita. The 3. lefore Emilia.

1. Qu. For pitties fake and true gentilities,

Heare, and refpect me.
2. Qu. For your Mothers fake,

And as you wifh your womb may thrive with faire ones, 28
Heare and refpect me,
3. Qu. Now for the love of him whom Iove hath markd

The honour of your Bed, and for the fake
Of cleere virginity, $b^{\prime}$ Advocate
For us, and our diftreffes: This good deede
Shall raze you out o'th Booke of Trefpaffes
All you are fet downe there.
Thefeus. Sad Lady rife.
Hypol. Stand up.
Emil. No knees to me.
What woman I may fteed that is diftreft, Does bind me to her.

Thef. What's your requeft ? Deliver you for all.
I. Qu. We are 3. Queenes, whofe Soveraignes fel before

The wrath of cruell Creon; who endured
The Beakes of Ravens, Tallents of the Kights,
[I. I] And pecks of Crowes, in the fowle feilds of Thebs.
. He will not fuffer us to burne their bones,
To urne their afhes, nor to take th' offence
48 Of mortall loathfomenes from the bleft eye
Of holy Phalus, but infects the windes
With ftench of our flaine Lords. O pitty Duke,
Thou purger of the earth, draw thy feard Sword
52 That does good turnes to'th world ; give us the Bones
Of our dead Kings, that we may Chappell them;
And of thy boundles goodnes take fome note
That for our crowned heades we have no roofe,
56 Save this which is the Lyons, and the Beares,
And vault to every thing.
Thef. Pray you kneele not,
I was tranfported with your Speech, and fuffer'd
60 Your knees to wrong themfelves; I have heard the fortunes Of your dead Lords, which gives me fuch lamenting As wakes my vengeance, and revenge for'em• King Capaneus, was your Lord the day
64 That he fhould marry you, at fuch a feafon, As noss it is with me, I met your Groome, By Marfis Altar, you were that time faire; Not Iunos Mantle fairer then your Treffes,
68 Nor in more bounty fpread her. Your wheaten wreathe Was then nor threafhd, nor blafted; Fortune at you
Dimpled her Cheeke with fmiles : Hercules our kinefman (Then weaker than your eies) laide by his Club,
72 He tumbled downe upon his Nenuan hide
And fwore his finews thawd: O greife, and time, Fearefull confumers, you will all devoure.

I, Qu. O I hope fome God,
76 Some God hath put his mercy in your manhood
Whereto heel infufe powre, and preffe you forth
Our undertaker.
Thef. O no knces, none Widdow,
80 Vnto the Helmeted-Belona ufe them,
And pray for me your Souldier.
Troubled I am.
turnes away.
B 2
2. Qu.

## 4 The Two Noble Kinfmen.

2. Qu. Honoured Hypolita [I. r]

Moft dreaded Amazonian, that ha'ft flaine
The Sith-tuskd-Bore; that with thy Arme as ftrong As it is white, waft neere to make the male To thy Sex captive ; but that this thy Lord Borne to uphold Creation, in that honour
Firft nature ftilde it in, fhrunke thee into
The bownd thou waft ore-flowing; at once fubduing
Thy force, and thy affection : Soldireffe
That equally canft poize fternenes with pitty,
Whom now I know haft much more power on him
Then ever he had on thee, who ow'ft his ftrength,
And his, Love too: who is a Servant for
The Tenour of the Speech. Deere Glaffe of Ladies 96
Bid him that we whom flaming war doth fcortch,
Vnder the fhaddow of his Sword, may coole us:
Require him he advance it ore our heades;
Speak't in a womans key : like fuch a woman
As any of us three; weepe ere you faile; lend us a knee;
But touch the ground for us no longer time
Then a Doves motion, when the head's pluckt off:
Tell him if he i'th blood cizd field, lay fwolne
Showing the Sun his Teeth; grinning at the Moone
What you would doe.
Hip. Poore Lady, fay no more :
I had as leife trace this good action with you
As that whereto I am going, and never yet
Went I fo willing, way. My Lord is taken
Hart deepe with your diftreffe: Let him confider :
Ile fpeake anon.
I 12
3. Qu. O my petition was kneele to Emilia.

Set downe in yce, which by hot greefe uncandied
Melts into drops, fo forrow wanting forme
Is preft with deeper matter.
Emilia. Pray ftand up,
Your greefe is written in your cheeke.
3. Qu. O woe,

You cannot reade it there; there through my teares,
[I. r] Like wrinckled peobles in a glaffe ftreame
You may behold 'em (Lady, Lady, alacke)
He that will all the Treafure know o'th earth
124 Muft know the Center too; he that will fifh
For my leaft minnow, let him lead his line
To catch one at my heart. O pardon me,
Extremity that fharpens fundry wits
128 Makes me a Foole.
Emili. Pray you fay nothing, pray you, Who cannot feele, nor fee the raine being in't, Knowes neither wet, nor dry, if that you were
132 The ground-peece of fome Painter, I would buy you
T'inftruct me gainft a Capitall greefe indeed
Such heart peirc'd demonftration ; but alas
Being a naturall Sifter of our Sex
136 Your forrow beates fo ardently upon me,
That it fhall make a counter reflect gainft
My Brothers heart, and warme it to fome pitty Though it were made of fone: pray have good comfort.
140 Thef. Forward to'th Temple, leave not out a Iot
O'th facred Ceremony.

1. Qu. O This Celebration

Will long laft, and be more coftly then,
144 Your Suppliants war: Remember that your Fame
Knowles in the eare, o'th world: what you doe quickly,
Is not done rafhly ; your firft thought is more.
Then others laboured meditance : your premeditating
148 More then their actions: But oh Iove, your actions
Soone as they mooves as Afprayes doe the fifh, Subdue before they touch, thinke, deere Duke thinke
What beds our flaine Kings have.
152 2. Qu. What greifes our beds
That our deere Lords have none.
3, Qu. None fit for'th dead:
Thofe that with Cordes, Knives, drams precipitance,
156 Weary of this worlds light, have to themfelves
Beene deathes moft horrid Agents, humaine grace
Affords them duft and fhaddow.

- Qu. But our Lords

Lie

## 6

## The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Ly bliftring fore the vifitating Sunne,
And were good Kings, when living.
Thef. It is true. and I will give you comfort, To give your dead Lords graves:
The which to doe, muft make fome worke with Creou;
I. Qu. And that worke prefents it felfe to'th doing :

Now twill take forme, the heates are gone to morrow.
Then, booteles toyle muft recompence it felfe,
With it's owne fweat ; Now he's fecure,
Not dreames, we ftand before your puiffance
Wrinching our holy begging in our eyes
To make petition cleere.
2. Qu. Now you may take him,

Drunke with his victory.
3. Qu. And his Army full

Of Bread, and floth.
Thef. Artefuis that beft knoweft
How to draw out fit to this enterprife,
The prim'ft for this proceeding, and the number
To carry fuch a bufineffe, forth and Ievy
Our worthieft Inftruments, whilft we defpatch
This grand act of our life, this daring deede
Of Fate in wedlocke.

1. Qu. Dowagers, take hands

Let us be Widdowes to our woes, delay 184
Commends us to a famifhing hope.
All. Farewell.
2. Qu. We come unfeafonably: But when could greefe

Cull forth as unpanged judgement can, fit'ft time
For beft folicitation.
Thef. Why good Ladies,
This is a fervice, whereto I am going,
Greater then any was; it more imports me
Then all the actions that I have foregone,
Or futurely can cope.
I. $\mathrm{Q} u$. The more proclaiming

Our fuit fhall be neglected, when her Armes
196
Able to locke Iove from a Synod, fhall

## The Two Noble Kinfmen.

[I. r] By warranting Moone-light corllet thee, oh when
Her twyning Cherries fhall their fweetnes fall
200 Vpon thy taftefull lips, what wilt thou thinke
Of rotten Kings or blubberd Queenes, what care
For what thou feelft not? what thou feelf being able
To make Mars fpurne his Drom. O if thou couch
204 But one night with her, every howre in't will
Take hoftage of thee for a hundred, and
Thou fhalt remember nothing more, then what
That Banket bids thee too.
208 Hip. Though much unlike
You fhould be fo tranfported, as much forry
I fhould be fuch a Suitour ; yet I thinke
Did I not by th'abftayning of my joy
212 Which breeds a deeper longing, cure their furfeit
That craves a prefent medcine, I fhould plucke
All Ladies fcandall on me. Therefore Sir
As I thall here make tryall of my prayres,
216 Either prefuming them to have fome force,
Or fentencing for ay their vigour dombe, Prorogue this bufines, we are going about, and hang
Your Sheild afore your Heart, about that necke
220 Which is my ffee, and which I freely lend
To doe thefe poore Queenes fervice.
All Queens. Oh helpe now
Our Caufe cries for your knee.
224 Emil. If you grant not
My Sifter her petition in that force,
With that Celerity, and nature which
Shee makes it in : from henceforth ile not dare
228 To aske you any thing, nor be fo hardy
Ever to take a Husband.
Thef. Pray fand up.
I am entreating of my felfe to doe
${ }_{2} 32$ That which you k neele to have me ; Pyrithous
Leade on the Bride; get you and pray the Gods
For fucceffe, and returne; omit not any thing
In the pretended Celebration: Queenes
Follow

## 8

## The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Follow your Soldier (as before) hence you
And at the banckes of Anly meete us with
The forces you can raife, where we fhall fiude
The moytie of a number, for a bufines,
More bigger look't; fince that our Theame is hafte
I famp this kiffe upon thy currant lippe,
Sweete keepe it as my Token ; Set you forward
For I will fee you gone. Exeunt towards the Temple.
Farewell my beauteous Sifter: Pyrithous
Keepe the feaft full, bate not an howre on't.
Pirithous. Sir
Ile follow you at heeles; The Feafts folempnity
Shall want till your returne.
Thef. Cofen I charge you
Boudge not from Athens; We fhall be returning
Ere you can end this Feaft ; of which I pray you
Make no abatement ; once more farewell all.
r. Qu. Thus do'it thou ftill make good the tongue o'th
2. Qu. And earnft a Deity equal with Mars, (world.
3. Qu. If not above him, for

Thou being but mortall makeft affections bend $\quad 256$
To Godlike honours ; they themfelves fome fay
Grone under fuch a Maftry.
Thef. As we are men
Thus fhould we doe, being fenfually fubdude
We loofe our humane tytle; good cheere Ladies.
Florifh.
Now turne we towards your Comforts.
Exeunt.
Scæna 2. Enter Palamon, and Arcite.
Arcite. Deere Palamon, deerer in love then Blood
And our prime Cofen, yet unhardned in
The Crimes of nature ; Let us leave the Citty
Thebs, and the temptings in't, before we further
4
Sully our gloffe of youth,
And here to keepe in abftinence we fhame
As in Incontinence ; for not to fwim
I'th aide o'th Current, were almoft to fincke,
[I. 2] At leaft to fruftrate ftriving, and to follow The common Streame, twold bring us to an Edy Where we fhould turne or drowne; if labour through, 12 Our gaine but life, and weakenes. Pal. Your advice
Is cride up with example: what ftrange ruins Since firft we went to Schoole, may we perceive
16 Walking in Thebs ? Skars, and bare weedes The gaine o'th Martialift, who did propound To his bold ends, honour, and golden Ingots, Which though he won, he had not, and now flurted 20 By peace for whom he fought, who then fhall offer To Marfs fo fcornd Altar ? I doe bleede When fuch I meete, and wifh great luno would Refume her ancient fit of Ielouzie
24 To get the Soldier worke, that peace might purge
For her repletion, and retaine anew
Her charitable heart now hard, and harfher
Then ftrife, or war could be.
28 Arcite, Are you not out?
Meete you no ruine, but the Soldier in
The Cranckes, and turnes of Thebs ? you did begin
As if you met decaies of many kindes :
32 Perceive you none, that doe arowfe your pitty
But th'un-confiderd Soldier?
Pal. Yes, I pitty
Decaies where ere I finde them, but fuch moft
${ }_{3} 6$ That fweating in an honourable Toyle
Are paide with yce to coole 'em.
Arcite, Tis not this
I did begin to fpeake of: This is vertue
40 Of no refpect in Thebs, I fpake of Thebs
How dangerous if we will keepe our Honours,
It is for our refyding, where every evill
Hath a good cullor ; where eve'ry feeming good's
44 A certaine evill, where not to be ev'n Iumpe
As they are, here were to be ftrangers, and
Such things to be meere Monfters.

Pal. Tis in our power,
(Vnleffe we feare that Apes can Tutor's) to
Be Mafters of our manners: what neede I
Affect anothers gate, which is not catching Where there is faith, or to be fond upon
Anothers way of fpeech, when by mine owne
I may be reafonably conceiv'd; fav'd too,
Speaking it truly ; why am I bound
By any generous bond to follow him
Followes his Taylor, haply fo long untill
The follow'd, make purfuit? or let me know,
Why mine owne Barber is unbleft, with him
My poore Chinne too, for tis not Cizard iuft
To fuch a Favorites glaffe: What Cannon is there
That does command my Rapier from my hip
To dangle't in my hand, or to go tip toe
Before the ftreete be foule? Either I am
The fore-horfe in the Teame, or I am none
That draw i'th fequent trace: thefe poore fleight fores,
Neede not a plantin; That which rips my bofome
Almoft to'th heart's,
Arcite. Our Vncle Creon.
Pal. He,
A moft unbounded Tyrant, whofe fucceffes
Makes heaven unfeard, and villany affured
Beyond its power :there's nothing, almoft puts
Faith in a feavour, and deifies alone
Voluble chance, who onely attributes
The faculties of other Inftruments
To his owne Nerves and act ; Commands men fervice,
And what they winne in't, boot and glory on
That feares not to do harm ; good, dares not ; Let
The blood of mine that's fibbe to him, be fuckt
From me with Leeches, Let them breake and fall
Off me with that corruption.
Arc. Cleere fpirited Cozen
Lets leave his Court, that we may nothing fhare, Of his lowd infamy : for our milke,

## The Two Noble Kinfmen.

[I. 2] Will relifh of the pafture, and we muft
Be vile, or difobedient, not his kinefmen
In blood, unleffe in quality.
88 Pal. Nothing truer:
I thinke the Ecchoes of his fhames have dea'ft
The eares of heav'nly Iuftice : widdows cryes
Defcend againe into their throates, and have not: Enter Va-
92 Due audience of the Gods: Valerius (lerius.
Val. The King cals for you; yet be leaden footed
Till his great rage be off him. Phelus when
He broke his whipftocke and exclaimd againft
96 The Horfes of the Sun, but whifperd too
The lowdeneffe of his Fury.
Pal. Small windes fhake him,
But whats the matter ?
100 Val. Thefeus (who where he threates appals,) hath fent
Deadly defyance to him, and pronounces
Ruine to Thebs, who is at hand to feale
The promife of his wrath.
104 Arc. Let him approach;
But that we feare the Gods in him, he brings not
A jot of terrour to us; Yet what man
Thirds his owne worth (the cafe is each of ours)
108 When that his actions dregd, with minde affurd
Tis bad he goes about.
Pal. Leave that unreafond.
Our fervices ftand now for Thebs, not Creon,
112 Yet to be neutrall to him, were difhonour ;
Rebellious to oppofe: therefore we muft
With him ftand to the mercy of our Fate,
Who hath bounded our laft minute.
116 Arc. So we muft ;
Ift fed this warres a foote? or it hall be
On faile of fome condition.
Val. Tis in motion
120 The intelligence of fate came in the inftant With the defier.

$$
\mathrm{C}_{2}
$$

Pal.

## 12 The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Pal. Lets to the king, who, were he
A quarter carrier of that honour, which
His Enemy come in, the blood we venture
Should be as for our health, which were not fpent,
Rather laide out for purchafe: but alas
Our hands advanc'd before our hearts, what will The fall o'th ftroke doe damage ?

Arci. Let th'event,
That never erring Arbitratour, tell us
When we know all our felves, and let us follow The becking of our chance.

Scæna 3. Enter Pirithous, Hipolita, Emilia.

Pir. No further.
Hip. Sir farewell; repeat my wifhes
To our great Lord, of whofe fucces I dare not
Make any timerous queftion, yet I wifh him
Exces, and overflow of power, and't might be
To dure ill-dealing fortune; fpeede to him, Store never hurtes good Gouernours.
Pir. Though I know
His Ocean needes not my poore drops, yet they
Muft yeild their tribute there: My precious Maide,
Thofe beft affections, that the heavens infufe
In their beft temperd peices, keepe enthroand
In your deare heart.
Emil. Thanckes Sir; Remember me
To our all royall Brother, for whofe fpeede
The great Bellona ile follicite; and
Since in our terrene State petitions are not
Without giftes underftood : Ile offer to her
What I fhall be advifed the likes; our hearts
Are in his Army, in his Tent.
Hip. In's bofome:
We have bin Soldiers, and wee cannot weepe
When our Friends don their helmes, or put to fea,
Or tell of Babes broachd on the Launce, or women

> The Two Noble Kinfmen.
[I. 3] That have fod their Infants in (and after eate them)
The brine, they wept at killing 'em; Then if
You ftay to fee of us fuch Spincfters, we
28 Should hold you here for e ver.
Pir. Peace be to you
As I purfue this war, which fhall be then Beyond further requiring.

Exit Pir.
32 Emil. How his longing
Followes his Friend ; fince his depart, his fportes
Though craving ferioufnes, and skilll, paft flightly
His careles execution, where nor gaine
36 Made him regard, or loffe confider, but
Playing ore bufines in his hand, another
Directing in his head, his minde, nurfe equall
To thefe fo diffring Twyns ; have you obferv'd him,
40 Since our great Lord departed ?
Hip. With much labour :
And I did love him fort, they two have Cabind
In many as dangerous, as poore a Corner,
44 Perill and want contending, they have skift
Torrents whofe roring tyranny and power
I'th leaft of thefe was dreadfull, and they have
Fought out together, where Deaths-feffe was lodgd,
48 Yet fate hath brought them off: Their knot of lov
Tide, weau'd, intangled, with fo true, fo long,
And with a finger of fo deepe a cunning
May be outworne, never undone. I thinke
52 Thefeus cannot be umpire to himfelfe
Cleaving his confcience into twaine, and doing
Each fide like Iuftice, which he loves beft.
Emil. Doubtleffe
56 There is a beft, and reafon has no manners
To fay it is not you: I was acquainted
Once with a time, when I enjoyd a Play-fellow;
You were at wars, when the the grave enrichd,
6o Who made too proud the Bed, tooke leave o'th Moone
(which then lookt pale at parting) when our count
Was each a eleven.

$$
\text { C } 3
$$

Hip.

## 14

 The Two Noule Kinfmen.$$
\begin{array}{lc}
\text { Hip. Twas Flauia. } & \text { [I. 3] } \\
\text { Emil. Yes } & 64
\end{array}
$$

You talke of Pirithous and The eeus love;
Theirs has more ground, is more maturely feafond,
More buckled with ftrong Iudgement. and their needes
2. Hearfes ready with Palamon : and Arcite : the 3 . Queenes. Theseus: and his Lordes ready.

The one of th'other may be faid to water
Their intertangled rootes of love, but I
And thee (I figh and fpoke of) were things innocent, Lou'd for we did, and like the Elements
That know not what, nor why, yet doe effect $\quad \mathbf{7}^{2}$
Rare iffues by their operance; our foules
Did fo to one another; what the lik'd,
Was then of me approov'd, what not condemd
No more arraignement, the flowre that I would plncke $\quad 76$
And put betweene my breafts, oh (then but beginning
To fwell about the bloffome) the would long
Till thee had fuch another, and commit it
To the like innocent Cradle, where Phenix like 80
They dide in perfume: on my head no toy
But was her patterne, her affections (pretty
Though happely, her careles, were, I followed
For my moft ferious decking, had mine eare
Stolne fome new aire, or at adventure humd on
From mificall Coynadge; why it was a note
Whereon her fpirits would fojourne (rather dwell on)
And fing it in her flumbers; This rehearfall
(Which fury-innocent wots well) comes in
Like old importments baftard, has this end,
That the true love tweene Mayde, and mayde, may be
More then in fex individuall.
Hip. Y'are ont of breath
And this high fpeeded-pace, is but to fay
That you fhall never (like the Maide Flavina)
Love any that's calld Man.
Emil. I am fure I fhall not.
Hip. Now alacke weake Sifter,
I muft no more beleeve thee in this point
(Though, in't I know thou doft beleeve thy felfe,)
[I. 3] Then I will truft a fickely appetite, That loathes even as it longs; but fure my Sifter If I were ripe for your perfwafion, you
104 Have faide enough to thake me from the Arme Of the all noble Thefeus, for whofe fortunes, I will now in, and kneele with great affurance, That we, more then his Pirothous, poffeffe
ıo8 The high throne in his heart.
Emil. I am not againft your faith,
Yet I continew mine.
Exeunt.
Cornets.
[I. 4] Scæna 4. A Battaile ftrooke withim: Then a Retrait : Florifh.
Then Enter Thefeus (victor) the three Queenes meete him, and fall on their faces lefore him.
I. Qu. To thee no farre be darke.
2. Qu. Both heaven and earth

Friend thee for ever.
4 3. Qu. All the good that may
Be wifhd upon thy head, I cry Amen too't.
(vens
Thef. Th'imparciall Gods, who from the mounted hea-
View us their mortall Heard, behold who erre,
8 And in their time chaftice : goe and finde out
The bones of your dead Lords, and honour them
With treble Ceremonie, rather then a gap
Should be in their deere rights, we would fuppl'it.
${ }_{12}$ But thofe we will depute, which fhall inveft
You in your dignities, and even each thing
Our haft does leave imperfect ; So adiew
And heavens good eyes looke on you, what are thofe ?
Exeunt Queenes.
16 Herald. Men of great quality, as may be judgd
By their appointment ; Some of Thebs have told's
They are Sifters children, Nephewes to the King.
Thef. By'th Helme of Mars, I faw them in the war,
20 Like to a paire of Lions, fuccard with prey,
Make lanes in troopes agaft. I fixt my note
Conftantly on them; for they were a marke

## 16 The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Worth a god's vicw : what prifoner was't that told me [I. 4]
When I enquired their names?
Herald. We leave, they'r called
Arcite and Palamon,
Thef. Tis right, thofe, thofe
They are not dead?
Her. Nor in a ftate of life, had they bin taken
3. Hearfes ready.

When their laft hurts were given, twas poffible
They might have bin recovered; Yet they breathe
And haue the name of men.
Thef. Then like men ufe 'em
The very lees of fuch (millions of rates)
Exceede the wine of others: all our Surgions
Convent in their behoofe, our richef̣t balmes
Rather then niggard waft, their lives concerne us,
Much more then Thebs is worth, rather then have 'em
Freed of this plight, and in their morning ftate
(Sound and at libcrty) I would 'em dead,
But forty thoufand fold, we had rather have 'em
Prifoners to us, then death ; Beare 'em fpeedily
From our kinde aire, to them unkinde, and minifter
What man to man may doe for our fake more,
Since I have knowne frights, fury, friends, beheaftes,
Loves, provocations, zeale, a miftris Taske,
Defire of liberty, a feavour, madnes,
Hath fet a marke which nature could not reach too
Without fome impofition, ficknes in will
Or wraftling ftrength in reafon, for our Love
And great Appollos mercy, all our beft,
Their beft skill tender. Leade into the Citty,
Where having bound things fcatterd, we will poft To Athens for our Army.
[I. 5] Our dole more deadly lookes than dying
4 Balmes, and Gummes, and heavy cheeres,
Sacred vials fill'd with teares, And clamors through the wild ayre flying.

Come all fad, and Solempne Showes, 8 That are quick-eyd pleafures foes;

We convent nought elfe lut woes. We convent, Soc.
3. Qu. This funeral path, brings to your houfholds grave:

Ioy ceaze on you againe : peace fleepe with him.
2. Qu. And this to yours.
I. Qu. Yours this way : Heavens lend

A thoufand differing waies, to one fure end.
3. Qu. This world's a Citty full of ftraying Streetes, 16 And Death's the market place, where each one meetes.

Exeunt Severally.
[II. 1] Actus Secundus.

## Scæna 1. Enter Iailor, and Wooer.

Iailor. I may depart with little, while I live, fome thing I
May caft to you, not much : Alas the Prifon I
Keepe, though it be for great ones, yet they feldome
4 Come; Before one Salmon, you fhall take a number Of Minnowes: I am given out to be better lyn'd
Then it can appeare, to me report is a true
Speaker : I would I were really, that I am
8 Deliverd to be : Marry, what I have (be it what it will) I will affure upon my daughter at The day of my death.
$W_{\text {ooer. }}$ Sir I demaund no more then your owne offer,
12 And I will eftate your Daughter in what I
Have promifed,
D Iailor. $a-Q_{\mathrm{I} .} \quad 2$

## 18

 The Two Nolle Kinfmen..Iailor. Wel, we will talke more of this, when the folemnity [II. I] Is paft ; But have you a full promife of her ?

Enter Daughter.
When that fhall be feene, I tender my confent.
Wooer. I have Sir ; here fhee comes.
Iailor. Your Friend and I have chanced to name
You here, upon the old bufines: But no more of that.
Now, fo foone as the Court hurry is over, we will
Have an end of it : I'th meane time looke tenderly
To the two Prifoners. I can tell you they are princes.
Daug. Thefe ftrewings are for their Chamber ; tis pitty they
Are in prifon, and twer pitty they fhould be out: I
Doe thinke they have patience to make any adverfity
Afham'd ; the prifon it felfe is proud of 'em; and
They have all the world in their Chamber.
Iailor. They are fam'd to be a paire of abfolute men. 28
Daugh. By my troth, I think Fame but ftammers 'em, they
Stand a greife above the reach of report.
(doers.
Iai. I heard them reported in the Battaile, to be the only
Daugh. Nay moft likely, for they are noble fuffrers;I
Mervaile how they would have lookd had they beene
Victors, that with fuch a conftant Nobility, enforce
A freedome out of Bondage, making mifery their Mirth, and affliction, a toy to jeft at.

Iailor. Doe they fo ?
Daug. It feemes to me they have no more fence of their
Captivity, then I of ruling Athens : they eate
Well, looke merrily, difcourfe of many things,
But nothing of their owne reftraint, and difafters :
Yet fometime a devided figh, martyrd as twer
I'th deliverance, will breake from one of them.
When the other prefently gives it-fo fweete a rebuke,
That I could wifh my felfe a Sigh to be fo chid,
Or at leaft a Sigher to be comforted.
Wooer. I never faw em.
lailor. The Duke himfelfe came privately in the night, 48
Enter Palamon, and Arcite, alove.
And fo did they, what the reafon of it is, I
Know
[II. r] Know not : Looke yonder they are ; that's Arcite lookes out.
52 Daugh. No Sir, no, that's Palamon: Arcite is the Lower of the twaine; you may perceive a part Of him.

Iai. Goe too, leave your pointing ; they would not 56 Make us their object ;out of their fight.

Daugh. It is a holliday to looke on them :Lord, the Diffrence of men.

Exeunt,
[II. 2] Scæna 2. Enter Palamon, and Arcite in prifon.
Pal. How doe you Noble Cofen ?
Arcite. How doe you Sir?
Pal. Why ftrong inough to laugh at mifery,
4 And beare the chance of warre yet, we are prifoners I feare for ever Cofen.

Arcite. I beleeve it,
And to that deftiny have patiently
8 Laide up my houre to come.
Pal. Oh Cofen Arcite,
Where is Thebs now ? where is our noble Country?
Where are our friends, and kindreds? never more
12 Muft we behold thofe comforts, never fee
The hardy youthes ftrive for the Games of honour (Hung with the painted favours of their Ladies)
Like tall Sbips under faile:then ftart among'ft 'em
i6 And as an Eaftwind leave 'em all behinde us, Like lazy Clowdes, whilft Palamon and Arcite, Even in the wagging of a wanton leg
Out-Atript the peoples praifes, won the Garlands,
20 Ere they have time to wifh 'em ours. O never
Shall we two exercife, like Twyns of honour,
Our Armes againe, and feele our fyry horfes
Like proud Seas under us, our good Swords, now
24 (Better the red-eyd god of war nev'r were)
Bravifhd our fides, like age muft run to ruft,
And decke the Temples of thofe gods that hate us, D 2

There

## Thefe hands fhall never draw'em out like lightning

To blaft whole Armies more.

No figures of our felves fhall we ev'r fee, To glad our age, and like young Eagles teach 'em Boldly to gaze againft bright armes, and fay
Remember what your fathers were, and conquer. 40
The faire-eyd Maides, fhall weepe our Banifhments, And in their Songs, curfe ever-blinded fortune Till fhee for thame fee what a wrong the has done To youth and nature ; This is all our world;
We fhall know nothing here but one another, Heare nothing but the Clocke that tels our woes. The Vine fhall grow, but we fhall never fee it: Sommer fhall come, and with her all delights;48

But dead-cold winter muft inhabite here ftill. Pal. Tis too true Arcite. To our Theban houndes, That fhooke the aged Forreft with their ecchoes, No more now muft we halloa, no more flake
Our pointed Iavelyns, whilft the angry Swine
Flyes like a parthian quiver from our rages,
Strucke with our well-fteeld Darts :All valiant ufes.
(The foode, and nourifhment of noble mindes,)
In us two here fhall perith ; we thall die
(which is the curfe of honour) laftly
Children of greife, and Ignorance.
Arc. Yet Cofen,
60
Even from the bottom of thefe miferies
From all that fortune can inflict upon us, I fee two comforts ryfing, two meere bleffings, If the gods pleafe, to hold here abrave patience,

## The Tu'o Noble Kinfmen.

[II. 2] And the enjoying of our greefes together.
Whilf Palamon is with me, let me perifh
If I thinke this our prifon.
68 Pala. Certeinly,
Tis a maine goodnes Cofen, that our fortunes
Were twyn'd together ; tis moft true, two foules
Put in two noble Bodies, let 'em fuffer
72 The gaule of hazard, fo they grow together, Will never fincke, they muft not, fay they could
A willing man dies fleeping, and all's done. Arc. Shall we make worthy ufes of this place
76 That all men hate fo much ?
Pal. How gentle Cofen?
Arc. Let's thinke this prifon, holy fanctuary,
To keepe us from corruption of worfe men,
80 We are young and yet defire the waies of honour, That liberty and common Converfation
The poyfon of pure fpirits; might like women Wooe us to wander from. What worthy bleffing
84 Can be but our Imaginations
May make it ours ? And heere being thus together,
We are an endles mine to one another;
We are one anothers wife, ever begetting
88 New birthes of love; we are father, friends, acquaintance,
We are in one another, Families,
I am your heire, and you are mine: This place
Is our Inheritance : no hard Oppreffour
92 Dare take this from us; here with a little patience
We fhall live long, and loving: No furfeits feeke us:
The hand of war hurts none here, nor the Seas
Swallow their youth: were we at liberty, 96 A wife might part us lawfully, or bufines, Quarrels confume us, Envy of ill men Crave our acquaintance, I might ficken Cofen, Where you thould never know it, and fo perifh
roo Without your noble hand to clofe mine eies, Or praiers to the gods ;a thoufand chaunces Were we from hence, would feaver us.

Pal. You have made me
(I thanke you Cofen Arcite) almoft wanton
With my Captivity: what a mifery
It is to live abroade? and every where :
Tis like a Beaft me thinkes: I finde the Court here, I am fure a more content, and all thofe pleafures
That wooe the wils of men to vanity,
I fee through now, and am fufficient
To tell the world, tis but a gaudy fhaddow,
That old Time, as he paffes by takes with him,
What had we bin old in the Court of Creon,
Where fin is Iuftice, luft, and ignorance,
The vertues of the great ones: Cofen Arcite,
Had not the loving gods found this place for us
We had died as they doe, ill old men, unwept,
And had their Epitaphes, the peoples Curfes,
Shall I fay more?
Arc. I would heare you ftill.
Pal. Ye thall.
Is there record of any two that lov'd
Better then we doe Arcite:
Arc. Sure there cannot.
Pal. I doe not thinke it poffible our friendfhip Should ever leave us.

Arc. Till our deathes it cannot
Enter Emilia and her woman.
And after death our fpirits fhall be led
To thofe that love eternally. Speake on Sir.
This garden has a world of pleafures in't.
Emil. What Flowre is this?
IVom. Tis calld Narciffus Madam.
Emil. That was a faire Boy certaine, but a foole,
To love himfelfe, were there not maides enough ?
Arc. Pray forward.
Pal. Yes.
Emil. Or were they all hard hearted ?
Wom. They could not be to one fo faire.
Emil. Thou wouldft not.
[II. 2] Wom. I thinke I fhould not, Madam.
Emil. That's a good wench :
But take heede to your kindnes though.
Wom. Why Madam?
144 Emil. Men are mad things. Arcite. Will ye goe forward Cofen ?
Emil. Canft not thou worke fuch flowers in filke wench ? Wom. Yes.
148 Emil. Ile have a gowne full of 'em and of thefe,
This is a pretty colour, wilt not doe
Rarely upon a Skirt wench?
Wom. Deinty Madam.
152 Arc. Gofen, Cofen, how doe you Sir? Why Palamon?
Pal. Never till now I was in prifon Arcite.
Arc. Why whats the matter Man?
Pal. Behold, and wonder.
${ }^{5} 56$ By heaven thee is a Goddeffe.
Arcite. Ha.
Pal. Doc reverence.
She isa Goddeffe Arcite.
160 Emil. Of all Flowres.
Me thinkes a Rofe is beft.
Wom. Why gentle Madam ?
Emil. It is the very Embleme of a Maide.
164 For when the weft wind courts her gently
How modeftly the blowes, and paints the Sun,
With her chafte blufhes? When the North comes neere her,
Rude and impatient, then, like Chaftity
168 Shee lockes her beauties in her bud againe,
And leaves him to bafe briers.
Wom. Yet good Madam,
Sometimes her modefty will blow fo far
172 She fals for't: a Mayde
If fhee have any honour, would be loth
To take example by her.
Emil. Thou art wanton.
1,6 Arc. She is wondrous faire.
Pal. She is all the beauty extant.

Emil. The Sun grows high, lets walk in, keep thefe flowers, [II. 2]
Weele fee how neere Art can come neere their colours; I am wondrous merry hearted, I could laugh now.

Wom. I could lie downe I am fure.
Emil. And take one with you?
Wom. That's as we bargaine Madam,
Emil. Well, agree then. 184
Exeunt Emilia and woman.
Pal. What thinke you of this beauty ?
Arc. Tis a rare one.
Pal. Is't but a rare one ?
Arc. Yes a matchles beauty.
Pal. Might not a man well lofe himfelfe and love her ?
Arc. I cannot tell what you have done, I bave,
Beflhrew mine eyes for't, now I feele my Shackles.
Pal. You love her then ?
Arc. Who would not?
Pal. And defire her ?
Arc. Be fore my liberty.
Pal. I faw her firft. 196
Arc. That's nothing
Pal. But it thall be.
Arc. I faw her too.
Pal. Yes, but you inuft not love her. 200
Arc. I will not as you doe; to worlhip her;
As fhe is heavenly, and a bleffed Goddes;
(I love her as a woman, to enjoy her)
So both may love.
Pal. You fhall not love at all.
Arc. Not love at all.
Who fhall deny me?
Pal. I that firft faw her ; I that tooke poffeffion 208
Firft with mine eye of all thofe beauties
In her reveald to mankinde : if thou lou'ft her,
Or entertain'ft a hope to blaft my wifhes,
Thou art a Traytour Arcite and a fellow
Falfe as thy Title to her: friendfhip, blood
And all the tyes betweene us I difclaime
[II. 2] If thou once thinke upon her.
216 Arc, Yes I love her, And if the lives of all my name lay on it, I muft doe fo, I love her with my foule, If that will lofe ye, farewell Palamon, 220 I fay againe, I love, and in loving her maintaine

I am as worthy, and as free a lover
And have as juft a title to her beauty
As any Palamon or any living
224 That is a mans Sonne.
Pal. Have I cald thee friend?
Arc. Yes, and have found me fo ;why are you mov'd thus?
Let me deale coldly with you, am not I
228 Part of you blood, part of your foule ? you have told me That I was Palamon, and you were Arcite.

Pal. Yes.
Arc. Am not I liable to thofe affections,
232 Thofe joyes, greifes, angers, feares, my friend fhall fuffer ?
Pal. Ye may be.
Arc. Why then would you deale fo cunningly,
So ftrangely, fo vnlike a noble kinefman
236 To love alone ? fpeake truely, doe you thinke me
Vnworthy of her fight?
Pal. No ; but unjuft, If thou purfue that fight.
240 Arc. Becaufe an other
Firft fees the Enemy, fhall I ftand ftill
And let mine honour downe, and never charge ?
Pal. Yes, if he be but one.
244 Arc. But fay that one
Had rather combat me ?
Pal. Let that one fay fo,
And ufe thy freedome; els if thou purfueft her,
248 Be as that curfed man that hates his Country,
A branded villaine.
$A \iota c$. You are mad.
Pal. I muft be.
252 Till thou art worthy, Arcite, it concernes me,

And in this madnes, if I hazard thee
And take thy life, I deale but truely. $A r c$. Fie Sir.
You play the Childe extreamely : I will love her,
I muft, I ought to doe fo, and I dare,
And all this juftly.
Pal. O that now, that now
Thy falfe-felfe and thy friend, had but this fortune
To be one howre at liberty, and grafpe
Our good Swords in our hands, I would quickly teach thee
What tw'er to filch affection from another :
Thou art bafer in it then a Cutpurfe ;
Put but thy head out of this window more,
And as I have a foule, Ile naile thy life too't.
Arc. Thou dar'ft not foole, thou canft not, thou art feeble.
Put my head out? Ile throw my Body out,
And leape the garden, when I fee her next
Enter Keeper.
And pitch between her armes to anger thee.
Pal. No more ;the keeper's comming ; I hall live
To knocke thy braines out with my Shackles.
Arc. Doe.
Keeper. By your leave Gentlemen :
Pala. Now honeft keeper?
Keeper. Lord Arcite, you mult prefently to'th Duke ; ${ }_{2} 76$
The caufe I know not yet.
Arc. I am ready keeper.
Keeper, Prince Palamon, I muft awhile bereave you
Of your faire Cofens Company.
Exeunt Arcite, and Keeper.
Pal. And me too,
Even when you pleafe of life; why is he fent for?
It may be he fhall marry her, he's goodly, And like enough the Duke hath taken notice
Both of his blood and body :But his falfehood,
Why fhould a friend be treacherous? If that
Get him a wife fo noble, and fo faire;
Let honeft men ne're love againe. Once more288
[II. 2] I would but fee this faire One: Bleffed Garden, And fruite, and flowers more bleffed that ftill bloffom As her brighr eies fhine on ye. would I were
292 For all the fortune of my life hereafter
Yon little Tree, yon blooming Apricocke;
How I would fpread, and fling my wanton armes
In at her window ;I would bring her fruite 296 Fit for the Gods to feed on :youth and pleafure

Still as the tafted fhould be doubled on her, And if the be not heavenly I would make her So neere the Gods in nature, they thould feare her.

Enter Keeper.
300 And then I am fure fhe would love me: how now keeper Wher's Arcite,

Keeper, Banithd:Prince Pirithous
Obtained his liberty ; but never more
304 Vpon his oth and life muft he fet foote
Vpon this Kingdome.
Pal. Hees a bleffed man, He fhall fee Thebs againe, and call to Armes
308 The bold yong men, that when he bids 'em charge, Fall on like fire: Arcite fhall have a Fortune, If he dare make himfelfe a worthy Lover, Yet in the Feild to ftrike a battle for her ;
312 And if he lofe her then, he's a cold Coward; How bravely may he beare himfelfe to win her If he be noble Arcite; thoufand waies.
Were I at liberty, I would doe things
316 Of fuch a vertuous greatnes, that this Lady, This blufhing virgine fhould take manhood to her
And feeke to ravifh me.
Keeper, My Lord for you
320 I have this charge too.
Pal. To difcharge my life.
Keep. No, but from this place to remoove your Lordfhip, The windowes are too open.
324 Pal. Devils take 'em
That are fo envious to me; pre'thee kill me.
Keeper

Keep. And hang for't afterward. [II. 2]
Pal. By this good light
Had I a fword I would kill thee. 328
Keep, Why my Lord?
Pal. Thou bringft fuch pelting fcuruy news continually
Thou art not worthy life; I will not goe.
Keep. Indeede yon muft my Lord.
Pal. May I fee the garden?
Keep. Noe.
Pal. Then I am refolud, I will not goe. (rous
Keep. I muft conftraine you then : and for you are dange- 336
Ile clap more yrons on you.
Pal. Doe good keeper.
Ile fhake 'em fo, ye fhall not fleepe,
Ile make ye a new Morriffe, muft I goe ? 340
Keep. There is no remedy.
Pal. Farewell kinde window.
May rude winde never hurt thee. O my Lady
If ever thou haft felt what forrow was,
Dreame how I fuffer. Come ; now bury me.
Exeunt Palamon, and Keeper.
Scæna 3. Enter Arcıte.
[II. 3]
Arcite. Banifhd the kingdome ? tis a benefit,
A mercy I muft thanke 'em for, but banifhd
The free enjoying of that face I die for,
Oh twas a ftuddied punifhment, a death
Beyond Imagination: Such a vengeance
That were I old and wicked, all my fins
Could never plucke upon me. Palamon;
Thou ha'ft the Start now, thou fhalt ftay and fee
Her bright eyes breake each morning gainft thy window,
And let in life into thee; thou fhalt feede
Vpon the fweetenes of a noble beauty,
That nature nev'r exceeded, nor nev'r thall:
Good gods? what happines has Palamon?
Twenty to one, hee'le come to fpeake to her,
And if fhe be as gentle, as fhe's faire,
[II. 3] I know fhe's his, he has a Tongue will tame (can come' Tempefts, and make the wild Rockes wanton. Come what The worft is death; I will not leave the Kingdome, I know mine owne, is but a heape of ruins,
20 And no redreffe there, if I goe, he has her.
I am refolu'd an other fhape fhall make me.
Or end my fortunes. Either way, I am happy :
Ile fee her, and be neere her, or no more.
Enter .4. Country people, छ' one with a garlond lefore them.
24 I, My Mafters, ile be there that's certaine.
2. And Ile be there.
3. And I.
4. Why then have with ye Boyes; Tis but a chiding,

28 Let the plough play to day, ile tick'lt out
Of the Iades tailes to morrow.
I. I am fure

To have my wife as jealous as a Turkey :
32 But that's all one, ile goe through, let her mumble.
2. Clap her aboard to morrow night, and ftoa her,

And all's made up againe.
3. I, doe but put a feskue in her fift, and you fhall fee her

36 Take a new leffon out, and be a good wench.
Doe we all hold, againft the Maying ?
4. Hold? what fhould aile us?
3. Arcas will be there.

40 2. And Sennois.
And Rycas, and 3. better lads nev'r dancd under green Tree, And yet know what wenches: ha ?
But will the dainty Domine, the Schoolemafter keep touch
44 Doe you thinke : for he do's all ye know.
3. Hee'l eate a hornebooke ere he faile : goe too, the mat-
ter's too farre driven betweene him, and the Tanners danghter, to let flip now, and fhe muft fee the Duke, and fhe muft
48 daunce too.
4. Shall we be lufty.
2. All the Boyes in Athens blow wind i'th breech on's,

E 3 and
and heere ile be and there ile be, for our Towne, and here [II. 3] againe, and there againe: ha, Boyes, heigh for the wea- 52 vers.

1. This muft be done i'th woods.
2. O pardon me.
3. By any meanes our thing of learning fees fo: where he 56 himfelfe will edific the Duke moft parloufly in our behalfes : hees excellent i'th woods, bring him to'th plaines, his learning makes no cry.
4. Weele fee the fports, then every man to's Tackle: and 60 Sweete Companions lets rehearfe by any meanes, before The Ladies fee us, and doe fweetly, and God knows what May come on't.
5. Content ; the fports once ended, wee'l parforme. Away $6_{4}$ Boyes and hold.

Arc. By your leaves honeft friends: pray you whither goe you.
4. Whither? why, what a queftion's that ?

Arc. Yes, tis a queftion, to me that know not.
3. To the Games my Friend.
2. Where were you bred you know it not ?

Arc. Not farre Sir,
Are there fuch Gamcs to day?

1. Yes marry are there:

And fuch as you neuer faw ; The Duke himfelfe Will be in perfon there.

Arc. What paftimes are they ?
2, Wraftling, and Running ; Tis a pretty Fellow.
3. Thou wilt not goe along.

Arc. Not yet Sir.
4. Well Sir

Take your owne time, come Boyes
I. My minde mifgives me

This fellow has a veng'ance tricke o'th hip, 84
Marke how his Bodi's made for't
2. Ile be hangd though

If he dare venture, hang him plumb porredge,
He wraftle? he roft eggs. Come lets be gon Lads. Exeunt 4.88
[II. 3] Arc. This is an offerd oportunity
I durft not wifh for. Well, I could have wreftled,
The beft men calld it excellent, and run
92 Swifter, then winde upon a feild of Corne
(Curling the wealthy eares) never flew : Ile venture,
And in fome poore difguize be there, who knowes
Whether my browes may not be girt with garlands ?
96 And happines preferre me to a place,
Where I may ever dwell in fight of her. Exit Arcite,
[II. 4] Scæna 4. Enter Iailors Daughter alone.
Daugh. Why fhould I love this Gentleman ? Tis odds
He never will affcet me; I am bafe,
My Father the meane Keeper of his Prifon,
4 And he a prince ; To marry him is hopeleffe;
To be his whore, is witles; Out upon't ;
What pufhes are we wenches driven to
When fifteene once has found us ? Firft I faw him,
8 I (feeing) thought he was a goodly man ;
He has as much to pleafe a woman in him,
(If he pleafe to beftow it fo) as ever Thefe eyes yet lookt on ; Next, I pittied him, 12 And fo would any young wench o' my Confcience
'That ever dream'd, or vow'd her Maydenhead To a yong hanfom Man; Then I lov'd him, (Extreame!y lov'd him) infinitely lov'd him ;
16 And yet he had a Cofen, faire as he too.
But in my heart was Palamon, and there
Lord, what a coyle he keepes? To heare him
Sing in an evening, what a heaven it is?
20 And yet his Songs are fad-ones; Fairer fpoken, Was never Gentleman. When I come in To bring him water in a morning, firft He bowes his noble body, then falutes me, thus:
24 Faire, gentle Mayde, good morrow, may thy goodnes, Get thee a happy husband ; Once he kift me,
I lov'd my lips the better ten daies after,
Would he would doe fo ev'ry day ; He greives much, 28 And me as much to fee his mifery.

What fhould I doe, to make him know I love him,
For I would faine enjoy him ? Say I ventur'd
To fet him free? what faies the law then? Thus much For Law, or kindred : I will doe it,
And this night, or to morrow he fhall love me. Scæna 4. Enter Thefeus, Hipolita, Pirithous,

32
Exit.
[II. 5]
Thef: You have done worthily; I have not feene
Since Hercules, a man of tougher fynewes;
What ere you are, you run the beft, and wraftle,
That thefe times can allow.
Arcite. I am proud to pleafe you.
Thef. What Countrie bred you?
Arcite. This ; but far off, Prince.
Thef. Are you a Gentleman ?
Arcite. My father faid fo;
And to thofe gentle ufes gave me life.
Thef. Are you his heire?
Arcite. His yongeft Sir.
The $\int$. Your Father
Sure is a happy Sire then: what prooves you ?
Arcite. A little of all noble Quallities :
I could have kept a Hawke, and well have holloa'd
To a deepe crie of Dogges ; I dare not praife
My feat in horfemanthip : yet they that knew me
Would fay it was my beft peece : laft, and greateft,
I would be thought a Souldier.
Thef. You are perfect.
Pirith. Vpon my foule, a proper man.
Emilia. He is fo.
Per. How doe you like him Ladie ?
Hip. I admire him,
I have not feene fo yong a man, fo noble
(If he fay true,) of his fort.
Emil. Beleeve,
His mother was a wondrous handfome woman, His face me thinkes, goes that way.

Hyp. But his Body
[II. 5] And firie minde, illuftrate a brave Father.
Per. Marke how his vertue, like a hidden Sun
Breakes through his bafer garments. Hyp. Hee's well got fure.
36 Thef. What made you feeke this place Sir? Arc. Noble Thefeus.
To purchafe name, and doe my ableft fervice
To fuch a well-found wonder, as thy worth,
40 Fo onely in thy Court, of all the world dwells faire-eyd honor. Per. All his words are worthy. Thef. Sir, we are much endebted to your travell,
44 Nor hhall you loofe your wifh : Perithous
Difpofe of this faire Gentleman.
Perith. Thankes Thefeus.
What ere you are y'ar mine, and I fhall give you
48 To a moft noble fervice, to this Lady,
This bright yong Virgin; pray obferve her goodneffe;
You have honourd hir faire birth-day, with your vertues,
And as your due y'ar hirs: kiffe her faire hand Sir.
52 Arc. Sir, y'ar a noble Giver : deareft Bewtie,
Thus let me feale my vowd faith : when your Servant
(Your moft unworthie Creature) but offends you.
Command him die, he fhall.
56 Emil. That were too cruell.
If you deferve well Sir ; I thall foone fee't :
(you.
Y'ar mine, aud fomewhat better than your rancke Ile ufe Per. Ile fee you furnifh'd, and becaufe you fay
60 You are a horfeman, I muft needs intreat you
This after noone to ride, but tis a rough one. Arc. I like him better (Prince) I fhall not then
Freeze in my Saddle.
64 Thef. Sweet, you muft be readie,
And you Emilia, and you (Friend) and all
To morrow by the Sun, to doe obfervance
To flowry May, in Dians wood: waite well Sir
68 Vpon your Miftris: Emely, I hope
He fhall not goe a foote.
Emil.

Emil. That were a fhame Sir,
While I have horfes: take your choice, and what
You want at any time, let me but know it;
If you ferve faithfully, I dare affure you
You'l finde a loving Miftris.
Arc. If I doe not,
Let me finde that my Father ever hated,
Difgrace, and blowes.
Thef. Go leade the way; you have won it:
It thall be fo; you thall receave all dues
Fit for the honour you have won; Twer wrong elfe,
Sifter, befhrew my heart, you have a Servant,
That if I were a woman, would be Mafter, But you are wife.

Florifh.
Emil. I hope too wife for that Sir. Exeunt omnes. 84
Scæna 6. Enter Iaylors Daughter alone.
Daughter. Let all the Dukes, and all the divells rore,
He is at liberty: I have venturd for him,
And out I have brought him to a little wood
A mile hence, I have fent him, where a Cedar
Higher than all the reft, fpreads like a plane
Faft by a Brooke, and there he thall keepe clofe, Till I provide him Fyles, and foode, for yet His yron bracelets are not off. O Love
What a ftout hearted child thou art! My Father
Durft better have indur'd cold yron, than done it :
I love him, beyond love, and beyond reafon,
Or wit, or fafetie: I have made him know it
I care not, I am defperate, If the law
Finde me, and then condemne me for't ; fome wenches,
Some honeft harted Maides, will fing my Dirge.
And tell to memory, my death was noble,
Dying almoft a Martyr: That way he takes,
I purpofe is my way too: Sure he cannot
Be fo unmanly, as to leave me here,
If he doe, Maides will not fo eafily
Truft men againe : And yet he has not thank'd me For what I have done: no not fo much as kift me,
[II. 6] And that (me thinkes) is not fo well ; nor fcarcely
24 Could I perfwade him to become a Freeman,
He made fuch fcruples of the wrong he did
To me, and to my Father. Yet I hope
When he confiders more, this love of mine 28 Will take more root within him: Let him doe

What he will with me, fo he ufe me kindly, For ufe me fo he fhall, or ile proclaime him And to his face, no-man : Ile prefently 32 Provide him neceffaries, and packe my cloathes up,

And where there is a path of ground Ile venture
So hee be with me; By him, like a fhadow
Ile ever dwell; within this houre the whoobub 36 Will be all ore the prifon: I am then

Kiffing the man they looke for: farewell Father; Get many more fuch prifoners, and fuch daughters, And fhortly you may keepe your felfe. Now to him :
[III. I] Actus Teriius.

## Scæna 1. Enter Arcite alone.

A feverall land. This is a folemne Right
They owe bloomd May, and the Athenians pay it
4 To'th heart of Ceremony: O Queene Einilia
Frefher then May, fweeter
Then hir gold Buttons on the bowes, or all
Th' enamelld knackes o'th Meade, or garden, yea
8 (We challenge too) the bancke of any Nfmph
That makes the freame feeme flowers; thou o Iewell
O'th wood, o'th world, haft likewife bleft a pace
With thy fole prefence, in thy rumination
12 That I poore man might eftfoones come betweene
And chop on fome cold thought, thrice bleffed chance
To drop on fuch a Miftris, expectation
moft giltleffe on't : tell me $\mathbf{O}$ Lady Fortune
16 (Next after Emely my Soveraigne) how far

$$
\mathrm{F}_{2}
$$

## $3^{6}$

 The Two Nolle Kinfmen.I may be prowd. She takes ftrong note of me, Hath made me neere her; and this beuteous Morne
(The prim'ft of all the yeare) prefents me with
A brace of horfes, two fuch Steeds might well
Be by a paire of Kings backt, in a Field
That their crownes titles tride: Alas, alas
Poore Cofen Palamon, poore prifoner, thou
So little dream'ft upon my fortune, that
Thou thinkft thy felfe, the happier thing, to be
So neare Emilia, me thou deem'ft at Thels,
And therein wretched, although free; But if
Thou knew'ft my Miftris breathd on me, and that
I ear'd her language, livde in her eye; O Coz
What paffion would enclofe thee.
Enter Palamon as out of a Bu/h, with his Shackles: lends his fift at Arcite.
Palamon. Traytor kinfeman,
Thou fhouldit perceive my paffion, if thefe fignes
Of prifonment were off me, and this hand
But owner of a Sword: By all othes in one
I, and the iuftice of my love would make thee
A confeft Traytor, o thou moft perfidious
That ever gently lookd the voydes of honour.
That eu'r bore gentle Token; falleft Cofen
That ever blood made kin, call'ft thou hir thine ?
Ile prove it in my Shackles, with thefe hands,
Void of appointment, that thou ly'ft, and art
A very theefe in love, a Chaffy Lord
Nor worth the name of villaine : had I a Sword
And thefe houfe clogges away.
Arc. Deere Cofin Palamon,
Pal. Cofoner Arcite, give me language, fuch
As thou haft fhewd me feate.
Arc. Not finding in
The circuit of my breaf, any groffe fuffe
To forme me like your blazon, holds me to
This gentleneffe of anfwer ; tis your paffion
That thus miftakes, the which to you being enemy,
Cannot to me be kind: honor, and honeftie
[III. I] I cherifh, and depend on, how fo ev'r
You skip them in me, and with them faire Coz
56 Ile maintaine my proceedings; pray be pleaf'd To fhew in generous termes, your griefes, fince that Your queftion's with your equall, who profeffes To cleare his owne way, with the minde and Sword 6o Of a true Gentleman.

Pal. That thou durft Arcite.
Arc. My Coz, my Coz, you have beene well advertif'd
How much I dare, y'ave feene me ufe my Sword
64 Againft th'advice of feare : fure of another
You would not heare me doubted, but your filence
Should breake out, though i'th Sanctuary.
Pal. Sir,
68 I have feene you move in fuch a place, which well Might juftifie your manhood, you were calld (faire
A good knight and a bold; But the whole weeke's not If any day it rayne: Their valiant temper
72 Men loofe when they encline to trecherie, And then they fight like compelld Beares, would fly Were they not tyde.

Arc. Kinfman, you might as well
76 Speake this, and act it in your Glaffe, as to
His eare, which now difdaines you.
Pal. Come up to me,
Quit me of thefe cold Gyves, give me a Sword
80 Though it be ruftie, and the charity
Of one meale lend me; Come before me then
A good Sword in thy hand, and doe but fay
That Emily is thine, I will forgive
84 The trefpaffe thou haft done me, yea my life
If then thou carry't, and brave foules in fhades
That have dyde manly, which will feeke of me
Some newes from earth, they fhall get none but this
88 That thou art brave, and noble.
Arc. Be content,
Againe betake you to your hawthorne houfe,
With counfaile of the night, I will be here
92 With wholefome viands; thefe impediments

## $3^{8}$

The Two Noble Kinfmen.
Will I file off, you fhall have garments, and
Perfumes to kill the fmell o'th prifon, after
When you fhall fretch your felfe, and fay but Arcite
I am in plight, there fhall be at your choyce
Both Sword, and Armour.
Pal. Oh you heavens, dares any
So noble beare a guilty bufines!none
But onely Arcite, therefore none but Arcite
In this kinde is fo bold.
Arc. Sweete Palamon.
Pal. I doe embrace you, and your offer, for
Your offer doo't I onely, Sir your perion 104
Without hipocrify I may not wifh
Winde hornes of Cornets.
More then my Swords edge ont.
Arc. You heare the Hornes ;
Enter your Muficke leaft this match between's
Be croft, er met, give me your hand, farewell.
Ile bring you every needfull thing : I pray you
Take comfort and be ftrong.
Pal. Pray hold your promife ;
And doe the deede with a bent brow, moft crtaine
You love me not, be rough with me, and powre
This oile out of your language ; by this ayre
I could for each word, give a Cuffe: my ftomach
not reconcild by reafon,
Arc. Plainely fpoken,
Yet pardon me hard language, when I fpur
Winde hornes.
My horfe, I chide him nor ; content, and anger
In me have but one face. Harke Sir, they call
The fcatterd to the Banket ; you muft guefle I have an office there.

Pat. Sir your attendance
Cannot pleafe heaven, and I know your office
Vnjuftly is atcheev'd.
Arc. If a good title,
I am perfwaded this queftion ficke between's,
[III. I] By bleeding muft be cur'd.I am a Suitour,
That to your Sword you will bequeath this plea
And talke of it no more.
132 Pal. But this one word:
You are going now to gaze upon my Miftris,
For note you, mine the is. Arc, Nay then.
${ }_{13} 6$ Pal. Nay pray you,
You talke of feeding me to breed me ftrength
You are going now to looke upon a Sun
That ftrengthens what it lookes on, there
140 You have a vantage ore me, but enjoy't till
I may enforce my remedy. Farewell.
Exeunt.
[III. 2] Scæna 2. Enter Iaylors daughter alone.
Daugh. He has miftooke; the Beake I meant, is gon
After his fancy, Tis now welnigh morning,
No matter, would it were perpetuall night,
4 And darkenes Lord o'th world, Harke tis a woolfe :
In me hath greife flaine feare, and but for one thing
I care for nothing, and that's Palamon.
I wreake not if the wolves would jaw me, fo
8 He had this File; what if I hallowd for him ?
I cannot hallow: if I whoop'd; what then ?
If he not anfweard, I fhould call a wolfe,
And doe him but that fervice. I have heard
12 Strange howles this live-long night, why may't not be
They have made prey of him? he has no weapons,
He cannot run, the Iengling of his Gives
Might call fell things to liften, who have in them
i6 A fence to know a man unarmd, and can
Smell where refiftance is. Ile fet it downe
He's torne to peeces, they howld many together
And then they feed on him : So much for that,
20 Be bold to ring the Bell; how ftand I then?
All's char'd when he is gone, No, no I lye,
My Father's to be hang'd for his efcape,
My felfe to beg, if I prizd life fo much
24 As to deny my act, but that I would not,

Should I try death by duffons: I am mop't,
Sipt fome water. I have not clofd mine eycs
Save when my lids fcowrd off their bine ; alas
Diffolue my life, Let not my fence unfettle
Leaft I fhould drowne, or ftab or hang my felfe.
O ftate of Nature, faile together in me,
Since thy beft props are warpt: So which way now?
The beft way is, the next way to a grave :
Each errant ftep befide is torment. Loe
The Moone is down, the Cryckets chirpe, the Schreichowle Calls in the dawne; all offices are done
Save what I faile in: But the point is this
An end, and that is all. Exit.
Scæna 3. Enter Arcite, with Meate, Wine, and Files. [III. 3] Arc. I fhould be neere the place, hoa. Cofen Palamon.

Enter Palamon.
Pal. Arcite.
Arc. The fame : I have brought you foode and files,
Come forth and feare not, her'esno Thefeus.
Pal. Nor none fo honeft Arcite.
Arc. That's no matter,
Wee'l argue that hereafter: Come take courage,
You fhall not dye thus beaftly, here Sir drinke
I know you are faint, then ile talke further with you Pal. Arcite, thou mightft now poyfon me. Arc. I might.
But I muft feare you firft: Sit downe, and good now I2
No more of thefe vaine parlies, let us not
Having our ancient reputation with us
Make talke for Fooles, and Cowards, To your health, \&c. Pal. Doe.
Arc. Pray fit downe then, and let me entreate you
By all the honefty and honour in you,
No mention of this woman, t'will difturbe us,
We fha! l have time enough.
Pal. Well Sir, Ile pledge you.
(blood man.
Arc. Drinke a good hearty draught, it breeds good
[III. 3] Doe not you feele it thaw you?
24 Pal. Stay, Ile tell you after a draught or two more.
Are. Spare it not, the Duke has more Cuz : Eate now.
Pal. Yes.
Arc. I am glad you have fo good a ftomach.
28 Pal. I am gladder I have fo good meate too't.
Arc. Is't not mad lodging, here in the wild woods Cofen
Pal. Yes, for then that have wilde Confciences. (I fee,
Arc. How tafts your vittails? your hunger needs no fawce
32 Pal. Not much.
But if it did, yours is too tart : fweete Cofen: what is this?
Arc. Venifon.
Pal. Tis a lufty meate :
36 Giue me more wine ; here Arcite to the wenches
We have known in our daies. The Lord Stewards daughter.
Doe you remennber her ?
Arc. After you Cuz.
40 Pal. She lov'd a black-haird man.
Arc. She did fo; well Sir.
Pal. And I have heard fome call him Arcite. and
Arc. Out with't faith.
44 Pal. She met him in an Arbour :
What did the there Cuz? play o'th virginals?
Arc. Something the did Sir.
Pal. Made her groane a moneth for't ; or 2. or 3. or 10 .
48 Arc. The Marfhals Sifter,
Had her fhare too, as I remember Cofen,
Elfe there be tales abroade, you'l pledge her? Pal. Yes.
52 Arc. A pretty broune wench t'is-There was a time
When yong men went a hunting, and a wood,
And a broade Beech : and thereby hangs a tale: heigh ho.
Pal. For Emily, upon my life; Foole
56 Away with this ftraind mirth; I fay againe That figh was breathd for Emily; bafe Cofen, Dar'ft thou breake firft ?

Are. you are wide.
6o Pal. By heaven and earth, ther's nothing in thee honeft.

## 42

## The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Arc, Then Ile leave you : you are a Beaft now :
[IIl. 3]
Pal. As thou makft me, Traytour.
(fumes :
Arc. Ther's all things needfull, files and fhirts, and, per-
Ile come againe fome two howres hence, and bring
That that hall quiet all,
Pal. A Sword and Armour.
Arc. Feare me not; you are now too fowle; farewell.
Get off your Trinkets, you fhall want nought;
Pal. Sir ha:
Arc. Ile heare no more.
Exit.
Pal. If he keepe touch, he dies for't. Scæna 4, Enter Iaylors daughter.
Daugh. I am very cold, and all the Stars are out too,
The little Stars, and all, that looke like aglets :
The Sun has feene my Folly : Palamon;
Alas no; hees in heaven; where am I now?
Yonder's the fea, and ther'sa Ship; how't tumbles
And ther's a Rocke lies watching under water ; Now, now, it beates upon it ; now, now, now,
Ther's a leak fprung, a found one, how they cry ?
Vpon her before the winde, you'l loofe all els:
Vp with a courle or two, and take about Boyes.
Good night, good night, y'ar gone; I am very hungry, Would I could finde a fine Frog; he would tell me
Newes from all parts o'th world, then would I make
A Carecke of a Cockle thell, and fayle
By eaft and North Eaft to the King of Pigmes, For he tels fortunes rarely. Now my Father
Twenty to one is truft up in a trice
To morrow morning, Ile fay never a word.
Sing. For ile cut my greene coat, afoote above my knee, And ile clip my yellow lockes; an inch below mine eie. 20 hey, nonny, nonny, nonny, He's buy me a white Cut, forth for to ride And ile goe Seeke him, throw the world that is fo wide
hey nonny, nonny, nonny. 24
O for a pricke now like a Nightingale, to put nry breaft
Againit
[III. 4] Againft. I fhall fleepe like a Top elfe.
Exit.
[III. 5] Scæna 6. Enter a Schoole mafter. 4. Countrymen : and Baum. 2. or 3. wenches, with a Talorer.
Sch. Fy, fy, what tediofity, \& difenfanity is here among ye? have my Rudiments bin labourd fo long with ye? milkd unto ye, and by a figure even the very plumbroth \& marrow of 4 my underftanding laid upon ye? and do you ftill cry where, and how, \& wherfore? you moft courfe freeze capacities, ye jave Iudgements, have I faide thus let be, and there let be, and then let be, and no man underftand mee, proh deum, 8 medius fidius, ye are all dunces: For why here ftand I. Here the Duke comes, there are you clofe in the Thicket; the Duke appeares, I meete him and unto him I utter learned things, and many figures, he heares, and nods, and hums, and
12 then cries rare, and I goe forward, at length I fling my Cap up; marke there; then do you as once did Meleager, and the Bore break comly out before him : like true lovers, caft your felves in a Body decently, and fweetly, by a figure trace, and 16 turne Boyes.
I. And fweetly we will doe it Mafter Gerrold.
2. Draw up the Company, Where's the Taborour.
3. Why Timothy.

20 Tal. Here my mad boyes, have at ye.
Sch. But I fay where's their women ?
4. Here's Friz and Maudline.
(Barlery.
2. And little Luce with the white legs, and bouncing

24 I. And freckeled Nel ; that never faild her Mafter.
Sch. Wher be your Ribands maids? fiwym with your Bodies
And carry it fweetly, and deliverly
And now and then a fauour, and a friske.
28 Nel. Let us alone Sir.
Sch. Wher's the reft o'th Muficke.
3. Difperfd as you commanded.

Sch. Couple then
32 And fee what's wanting ; wher's the Bavian?

- My friend, carry your taile without offence

Or fcandall to the Ladies; and be fure
You tumble with audacity, and manhood,

And when you barke doe it with judgement.
Bau. Yes Sir.
Sch. Quo usque taudem. Here is a woman wanting
4. We may goe whiftle : all the fat's i'th fire.

Sch. We have,
As learned Authours utter, wafhd a Tile, We have beene fatuus, and laboured vainely.
2. This is that fcornefull peece, that fcurvy hilding

That gave her promife faithfully, fhe would be here,
Cicely the Sempfters daughter :
The next gloves that I give her fhall be dog skin ;
Nay and the faile me once, you can tell Arcas
She fwore by wine, and bread, the would not breake.
Sch. An Eele and woman,
A learned Poet fayes: unles by'th taile
And with thy teeth thou hold, will either faile,
In manners this was falfe pofition
i. A fire ill take her ; do's fhe flinch now ?
3. What

Shall we determine Sir?
Sch. Nothing,
Our bufines is become a nullity
Yea, and a woefull, and a pittious nullity.
4. Now when the credite of our Towne lay on it, Now to be frampall, now to piffe o'th nettle,
Goe thy waies, ile remember thee, ile fit thee,
Enter Iaylors daughter.
The George alow, came from the South, from
Daughter. The coaft of Barlary a.
And there he met with brave gallants of war
By one, ly two, by three, a
Well haild, well haild, you jolly gallants,
And whither now are you bound a
O let me have your company till come to the found a
There was three fooles, fell out alout an hou'let
The one fed it was an owle
The other he fed nay,
The third he fed it u'as a hawke, and her bels wer cut au'ay. 72
3. Ther's
[III. 5] 3. Ther's a dainty mad woman Mr. comes i'th Nick as mad as a march hare: if wee can get her daunce, wee are made againe : I warrant her, fhee'l doe the rareft gambols.
76 I. A mad woman? we are made Boyes.
Sch. And are you mad good woman?
Daugh. I would be forry elfe,
Give me your hand.
8o Sch. Why ?
Daugh. I can tell your fortune.
You are a foole : tell ten, I have pozd him : Buz
Friend you muft eate no white bread, if you doe
84 Your teeth will bleede extreamely, fhall we dance ho ?
I know you, y'ar a Tinker: Sirha Tinker
Stop no more holes, but what you thould.
Sch. Dij boni. A Tinker Damzell ?
(play
88 Daug, Or a Conjurer : raife me a devill now, and let him Quipalfa, o'th bels and bones.

Sch, Goe take her, aud fluently perfwade her to a peace :
Et opus exegi, quod nec Iouis ira, nec ignis.
92 Strike up, and leade her in.
2, Come Laffe, lets trip it.
Daugh. Ile leade.
(Winde Hornes:
3. Doe, doe.

96 Sch. Perfwafively, and cunningly : away boyes,
Ex. all but Schoolemafter.
I heare the hornes: give me fome
Meditation, and marke your Cue;
Pallas infpire me.
Enter Thef. Pir. Hip. Emil. Arcite : and traine.
100 Thef. This way the Stag tooke.
Sch. Stay, and edifie.
Thef. What have we here ?
Per. Some Countrey fport, upon my life Sir.
104 Per. Well Sir, goe forward, we will edifie.
Ladies fit downe, wee'l ftay it.
(Ladies.
Sch. Thou doughtie Duke all haile: all haile fweet Thef. This is a cold beginning.
108 Sch. If you but favour ; our Country paftime made is, G 3

We
We are a few of thofe collected here
That ruder Tongues diftinguifh villager, And to fay veritie, and not to fable; We are a merry rout, or elfe a rable
Or company, or by a figure, Choris
That fore thy dignitie will dance a Morris.
And I that am the rectifier of all
By title Pedagogus, that let fall
The Birch upon the breeches of the fmall ones, And humble with a Ferula the tall ones, Doe here prefent this Machine, or this frame, And daintie Duke, whofe doughtie difmall fame
From Dis to Dedalus, from poft to pillar
Is blowne abroad ; helpe me thy poore well willer, And with thy twinckling eyes, looke right and ftraight Vpon this mighty Morr-of mickle waight
Is-now comes in, which being glewd together
Makes Morris, and the caufe that we came hether.
The body of our fport of no finall ftudy
I firt appeare, though rude, and raw, and muddy,
To fpeake before thy noble grace, this tenner :
At whofe great feete I offer up my penner.
The next the Lord of May, and Lady bright,
The Chambermaid, and Servingman by night
That feeke out filent hanging: Then mine Hoft
And his fat Spowfe, that welcomes to their coft
The gauled Traveller, and with a beckning
Informes the Tapfter to inflame the reckning :
Then the beaft eating Clowne, and next the foole,
The Bavian with long tayle, and eke long toole,
Cum multis aliijs that make a dance,
Say I, and all fhall prefently advance.
Thef. I, I by any meanes, deere Domine.
Per. Produce.
Muficke Dance.
Intrate filij, Come forth, and foot it,
Knocke for
Schoole. Enter Ladies, if we have leene merry
J44
The Dance. And have pleafd thee with a derry,
And a derry, and a downe
[III. 5] Say the Schoolemafter's no Clowne:
148 Duke, if we have pleafd three too
And have done as good Boyes Jhould doe,
Give us but a tree or twaine
For a Maypole, and againe
152 Ere another yeare run out,
Wee'l make thee laugh and all this rout.
Thef. Take 20. Domine; how does my fweet heart.
Hip. Never fo pleafd Sir.
1.56 Emil. Twas an excellent dance, and for a preface

I never heard a better.
(warded.
Thef. Schoolemafter, I thanke yon, One fee'em all rePer. And heer's fomething to paint your Pole withall.
160 Thef. Now to our fports againe.
Sch. May the Stag thou huntft fand long,
And thy dogs be fwift and ftrong:
May they kill him without lets,
164 And the Ladies eate his dowfets: Come we are all made. Winde Hornes.
Dij Deaq; omnes, ye have danc'd rarely wenches. Exeunt.
[III. 6] Scæna 7. Enter Palamon from the Bufh.
Pal. About this houre my Cofen gave his faith
To vifit me againe, and with him bring
Two Swords, and two good Armors; if he faile
4 He's neither man, nor Souldier ; when he left me
I did not thinke a weeke could have reftord
My loft ftrength to me, I was growne fo low,
And Creft-falne with my wants: I thanke thee Arcite,
8 Thou art yet a faire Foe; and I feele my felfe
With this refrefhing, able once againe
To out dure danger: To delay it longer
Would make the world think when it comes to hearing,
12 That I lay fatting like a Swine, to fight
And not a Souldier: Therefore this bleft morning
Shall be the laft; and that Sword he refufes,
If it but hold, I kill him with; tis Iuftice:
16 So love, and Fortune for me: O good morrow.
Enter Arcite with Armors and Swords.
Arcite.

Arc. Good morrow noble kinefman,
Pal. I have put you
To too much paines Sir.
Arc. That too much faire Cofen,
Is but a debt to honour, and my duty.
Pal. Would you were fo in all Sir; I could wih ye
As kinde a kinfman, as you force me finde
A beneficiall foe, that my embraces
Might thanke ye, not my blowes.
Arc. I thall thinke either
Well done, a noble recompence.
Pal. Then I fhall quit you.
Arc. Defy me in thefe faire termes, and you fhow
More then a Miftris to me, no more anger
As you love any thing that's honourable;
We were not bred to talke man, when we are arm'd
And both upon our guards, then let our fury
Like meeting of two tides, fly frongly from us,
And then to whom the birthright of this Beauty Truely pertaines (without obbraidings, fcornes,
Difpifings of our perfons, and fuch powtings
Fitter for Girles and Schooleboyes) will be feene
And quickly, yours, or mine : wilt pleafe you arme Sir, Or if you feele your felfe not fitting yet
And furnifhd with your old ftrength, ile ftay Cofen
And ev'ry day difcourfe you into health,
As I am fpard: your perfon I am friends with,
And I could with I had not faide I lov'd her
Though I had dide ; But loving fuch a Lady
And juftifying my Love, I muft not fly from't.
Pal. Arcite, thou art fo brave an enemy
That no man but thy Cofen's fit to kill thee,
I am well, and lufty, choofe your Armes.
Arc. Choofe you Sir.
Pal. Wilt thou exceede in all, or do'ft thou doe it
To make me ípare thee ?
Arc. If you thinke fo Cofen,
You are deceived, for as I am a Soldier.
[III. 6] I will not fpare you.
56 Pal. That's well faid.
Arc. You'l finde it
Pal. Then as I am an honeft man and love,
With all the juftice of affection
60 Ile pay thee foundly: This ile take.
Arc. That's mine then,
Ile arme you firft.
Pal. Do : pray thee tell me Cofen,
64 Where gotft thou this good Armour.
Arc: Tis the Dukes,
And to fay true, I fole it ; doe I pinch you?
Pal. Noe.
68 Arc. Is't not too heavie?
Pal. I have worne a lighter,
But I fhall make it ferve.
Arc. Ile buckl't clofe.
72 Pal. By any meanes.
Arc. You care not for a Grand guard ?
Pal. No, no, wee'l ufe no horfes, I perceave
You would faine be at that Fight.
${ }_{76}$ Arc. I am indifferent.
Pal. Faith fo am I : good Cofen, thruft the buckle
Through far enough.
Arc. I warrant you.
80 Pal. My Caske now.
Arc. Will you fight bare-armd ?
Pal. We thall be the nimbler.
Arc. But ufe your Gauntlets though; thote are o'th leaft,
84 Prethee take mine good Cofen.
Pal. Thanke you Arcite.
How doe I looke, am I falne much away ?
Arc. Faith very little; love has ufd you kindly.
88 Pal. Ile warrant thee, Ile ftrike home.
Arc. Doe, and fpare not;
Ile give you caufe fweet Cofen.
Pal. Now to you Sir,
92 Me thinkes this Armo'rs very like that, Arcite,
H
Thou
$a-Q_{\text {I }} \quad 4$

## $5^{\circ}$

 The Two Noble Kinfmen.Thou wor'ft that day the 3 . Kings fell, but lighter.
Arc. That was a very good one, and that day
I well remember, you outdid me Cofen,
I never faw fuch valour: when you chargd
Vpon the left wing of the Enemie,
I fpurd hard to come up, and under me
I had a right good horfe.
Pal. You had indeede
A bright Bay I remember.
Arc. Yes but all
Was vainely labour'd in me, you outwent me,
Nor could my wifhes reach you; yet a little
I did by imitation.
Pal. More by vertue,
You are modeft Cofen.
Arc. When I faw you charge firft, 108
Me thought I heard a dreadfull clap of Thunder
Breake from the Troope.
Pal. But ftill before that flew
The lightning of your valour: Stay a little,
Is not this peece too ftreight?
Arc. No, no, tis well.
Pal. I would have nothing hurt thee but my Sword,
A bruife would be difhonour.
Arc. Now I am perfect.
Pal. Stand off then.
Arc. Take my Sword, I hold it better.
Pal. I thanke ye : No, keepe it, your life lyes on it, 120
Here's one, if it but hold, I aske no more,
For all my hopes: My Caufe and honour guard me.
Arc. And me my love: * Is there ought elfe to fay ?
Pal. This onely, and no more: Thou art mine Aunts Son. 124
verall wayes: then advance and ftand.

And that blood we defire to fhed is mutuall,
In me, thine, and in thee, mine : My Sword
Is in my hand, and if thou killft me
The gods, and I forgive thee; If there be
A place prepar'd for thofe that fleepe in honour, I wifh his wearie foule, that falls may win it:
[III. 6] Fight bravely Cofen, give me thy noble hand.
132 Arc. Here Palamon: This hand fhall never more
Come neare thee with fuch friendihip.
Pal. I commend thee.
Arc. If I fall, curfe me, and fay I was a coward,
I 36 For none but fuch, dare die in thefe juft Tryalls.
Once more farewell my Cofen,
Pal. Farewell Arcite.
Fight.
Hornes within: they fand.
Arc. Loe Cofen, loe, our Folly has undon us.
140 Pal. Why ?
Arc. This is the Duke, a hunting as I told you,
If we be found, we are wretched, $O$ retire
For honours fake, and fafely prefently
144 Into your Bufh agen; Sir we fhall finde
Too many howres to dye in, gentle Cofen :
If you be feene you perifh inftantly
For breaking prifon, and I, if you reveale me,
148 For my contempt ; Then all the world will fcorne us,
And fay we had a noble difference,
But bafe difpofers of it.
Pal. No, no, Cofen
${ }_{5}{ }_{52}$ I will no more be hidden, nor put off
This great adventure to a fecond Tryall.
I know your cumning, and I know your caufe,
He that faints now, thame take him, put thy felfe
${ }_{156}$ Vpon thy prefent guard.
Arc. You are not mad?
Pal. Or I will make th'advantage of this howre
Mine owne, and what to come fhall threaten me,
160 I feare leffe then my fortune: know weake Cofen
I love Emilia, and in that ile bury
Thee, and all croffes elfe.
Arc. Then come, what can come
164 Thou fhalt know Palamon, I dare as well
Die, as difcourfe, or fleepe: Onely this feares me,
The law will have the honour of our ends.
Have at thy life.

Fight againe. Hornes.
Enter Thefeus, Hipolita, Emilia, Perithous and traine.
Thefeus. What ignorant and mad malicious Traitors,
Are you? That gainft the tenor of my Lawes
Are making Battaile, thus like Knights appointed, Without my leave, and Officers of Armes ?
By Cafor both thall dye.
Pal. Hold thy word Thefeus,
We are certainly both Traitors, both defpifers
Of thee, and of thy goodneffe: I am Palamon
That cannot love thee, he that broke thy Prifon, Thinke well, what that deferves; and this is Arcite
A bolder Traytor never trod thy ground
A Falfer neu'r feem'd friend: This is the man
Was begd and banifh'd, this is he contemnes thee
And what thou dar'ft doe ; and in this difguife
Againft this owne Edict followes thy Sifter,
That fortunate bright Star, the faire Emilia
Whofe fervant, (if there be a right in feeing,
And firft bequeathing of the foule to) juftly
I am, and which is more, dares thinke her his.
This treacherie like a moft trufty Lover,188

I call'd him now to anfwer; if thou bee'ft
As thou art fpoken, great and vertuous,
The true defcider of all injuries,
Say, Fight againe, and thou thalt fee me The eus
Doe fuch a Iuftice, thou thy felfe wilt envie,
Then take my life, Ile wooe thee too't.
Per. O heaven,
What more then man is this!
Thef. I have fworne.
Arc. We feeke not
Thy breath of mercy Thefeus, Tis to me
A thing as foone to dye, as thee to fay it,
200
And no more mov'd : where this man calls me Traitor.
Let me fay thus much; if in love be Treafon,
In fervice of fo excellent a Beutie,
[III. 6] As I love moft, and in that faith will perifh,
As I have brought my life here to confirme it,
As I have ferv'd her trueft, worthieft,
As I dare kill this Cofen, that denies it,
208 So let me be moft Traitor, and ye pleafe me:
For fcorning thy Edict Duke, aske that Lady
Why fhe is faire, and why her eyes command me
Stay here to love her ; and if the fay Traytor,
212 I am a villaine fit to lye unburied.
Pal. Thou fhalt have pitty of us both, o Thefeus, If unto neither thou thew mercy, ftop,
(As thou art juft) thy noble eare againft us,
216 As thou art valiant ; for thy Cofens foule
Whofe 12. ftrong labours crowne his memory,
Lets die together, at one inftant Duke,
Onely a little let him fall before me,
220 That I may tell my Soule he fhall not have her.
Thef. I grant your with, for to fay true, your Cufen
Has ten times more offended, for I gave him
More mercy then you found, Sir, your offenfes
224 Being no more then his : None here fpeake for 'em
For ere the Sun fet, both fhall fleepe for ever.
Hipol. Alas the pitty, now or never Sifter
Speake not to be denide ; That face of yours
228 Will beare the curfes elfe of after ages
For thefe loft Cofens.
Emil. In my face deare Sifter
I finde no anger to 'em; nor no ruyn,
232 The mifadventure of their owne eyes kill 'em ;
Yet that I will be woman, and have pitty,
My knees hall grow to'th ground but Ile get mercie.
Helpe me deare Sifter, in a deede fo vertuous,
${ }_{23} 6$ The powers of all women will be with us,
Moft royall Brother.
Hipol. Sir by our tye of Marriage.
Emil. By your owne fpotleffe honour.
240 Hip. By that faith,
That faire hand, and that honeft heart you gave me.

## 54

 The Two Noule Kinfmen.Emil. By that you would have pitty in another,
By your owne vertues infinite.
Hip. By valour,
By all the chafte nights I have ever pleafd you.
Thef. Thefe are ftrange Conjurings. (our dangers,
Per. Nay then Ile in too: By all our friendihip Sir, by all By all you love moft, warres; and this fweet Lady.

Emil. By that you would have trembled to deny
A blufhing Maide.
Hip. By your owne eyes: By ftrength
In which you fwore I went beyond all women, 252
Almoft all men, and yet I yeelded Thefeus.
Per. To crowne all this; By your moft noble foule
Which cannot want due mercie, I beg firft.
Hip. Next heare my prayers.
Emil. Laft let me intreate Sir.
Per. For mercy.
Hip. Mercy.
Emil. Mercy on thefe Princcs.
Thef. Ye make my faith reele : Say I felt
Compaffion to'em both, how would you place it ?
Emil. Vpon their lives: But with their banifhments.
Thef. You are a right woman, Sifter ; you have pitty, 264
But want the vnderftanding where to ufe it.
If you defire their lives, invent a way
Safer then banifhment: Can thefe two live And have the agony of love about 'em,268

And not kill one another ? Every day
The'yld fight about yov ; howrely bring your honour
In publique queftion with their Swords; Be wife then
And here forget 'em ; it concernes your credit,
And my oth equally: I have faid they die,
Better they fall by'th law, then one another.
Bow not my honor.
Emil. O my noble Brother,
That oth was rafhly made, and in your anger,
Your reafon will not hold it, if fuch vowes
Stand for expreffe will, all the world muft perifh.
[III. 6] Befide, I have another oth, gainft yours
Of more authority, I am fure more love,
Not made in paffion neither, but good heede. Thef. What is it Sifter?
284 Per. Vrge it home brave Lady.
Emil. That you would nev'r deny me any thing
Fit for my modeft fuit, and your free granting :
I tye you to your word now, if ye fall in't, 288 Thinke how you maime your honour ;
(For now I am fet a begging Sir, I am deafe
To all but your compaffion) how, their lives
Might breed the ruine of my name; Opinion, 292 Shall any thing that loves me perifh for me?

That were a cruell wifedome, doe men proyne
The ftraight yong Bowes that blufh with thoufand Bloffoms
Becaufe they may be rotten? O Duke Thefeus 296 The goodly Mothers that have groand for thefe,

And all the longing Maides that ever lov'd, If your vow ftand, fhall curfe me and my Beauty, And in their funerall fongs, for thefe two Cofens 300 Defpife my crueltie, and cry woe worth me, Till I am nothing but the fcorne of women; For heavens fake fave their lives, and banifh 'em.

Thef. On what conditions?
304 Emil. Sweare'em never more
To make me their Contention, or to know me,
To tread upon thy Dukedome, and to be
Where ever they fhall travel, ever ftrangers to one another.
308 Pal. Ile be cut a peeces
Before I take this oth, forget I love her?
O all ye gods difpife me.then : Thy Banifhment
I not miflike, fo we may fairely carry
312 Our Swords, aud caufe along : elfe never trifle, But take our lives Duke, I muft love and will, And for that love, muft and dare kill this Cofen On any peece the earth has.
316 Thef. Will you Arcite
Take thefe conditions ?

Pal. H'es a villaine then.
Per. Thefe are men.
Arcite. No, never Duke: Tis worfe to me'than begging 320
To take my life fo bafely, though I thinke
I never fhall enjoy her, yet ile preferve
The honour of affection, and dye for her.
Make death a Devill.
The $f$. What may be done? for now I feele compaffion. Per. Let it not fall agen Sir. Thef. Say Emilia
If one of them were dead, as one muff, are you
Content to take th'other to your husband ?
They cannot both enjoy you; They are Princes
As goodly as your owne eyes, and as noble
As ever fame yet fpoke of; looke upon'em,
And if you can love, end this difference, I give confent, are you content too Princes ?

Both. With all our foules.
Thef. He that the refufes
Muft dye then.
Both. Any death thou canft invent Duke.
Pal. If I fall from that mouth, I fall with favour,
And Lovers yet unborne fhall bleffe my athes.
Arc. If the refufe me, yet my grave will wed me,
And Souldiers fing my Epitaph.
Thef. Make choice then.
Emil. I cannot Sir, they are both too excellent 344
For me, a hayre fhall never fall of thefe men.
Hip. What will become of 'em?
Thef. Thus I ordaine it,
And by mine honor, once againe it ftands, $\quad 348$
Or both fhall dye. You thall both to your Countrey,
And each within this moneth accompanied
With three faire Knights, appeare againe in this place,
In which Ile plant a Pyramid; and whether
Before us that are here, can force his Cofen
By fayre and knightly ftrength to touch the Pillar,
He fhall enjoy her: the other loofe his head,
[III. 6] And all his friends; Nor fhall he grudge to fall,
Nor thinke he dies with intereft in this Lady :
Will this content yee ?
Pal. Yes :here Cofen Arcite
360 I am friends againe, till that howre.
Arc. I embrace ye.
Thef. Are you content Sifter ${ }^{2}$
tmil, Yes, I muft Sir, 364 Els both mifcarry.

Thef. Come fhake hands againe then, And take heede, as you are Gentlemen, this Quarrell Sleepe till the howre prefixt, and hold your courfe.
368 Pal. We dare not faile thee Thefeus.
Thef. Come, Ile give ye
Now ufage like to Princes, and to Friends :
When ye returne, who wins, Ile fettle heere,
372 Who loofes, yet Ile weepe upon his Beere.
Excunt.
[IV. r]
Actus Quartus.

Scæna I. Enter Iailor, and his friend.
Iailor. Heare you no more, was nothing faide of me
Concerning the efcape of Palamon?
Good Sir remember.
4 I. Fr. Nothing that I heard,
For I came home before the bufines
Was fully ended: Yet I might perceive
Ere I departed, a great likelihood
8 Of both their pardons: For Hipolita,
And faire-eyd Emilie, upon their knees
Begd with fuch hanfom pitty, that the Duke
Me thought ftood ftaggering, whether he fhould follow
12 His rafh o'th, or the fweet compaffion
Of thofe two Ladies ; and to fecond them,
That truely noble Prince Perithous
Halfe his owne heart, fet in too, that I hope
16 All thall be well: Neither heard I one queftion

Of your name, or his fcape.
Enter 2. Frieud. [IV. 1] Iay. Pray heaven it hold fo.
2. Fr : Be of good comfort man ; I bring you newes,

Good newes.
Iay. They are welcome, 2. Fr. Palamon has cleerd you,

And got your pardon, and difcoverd (Daughters,
How, and by whofe meanes he efcapt, which was your 24
Whofe pardon is procurd too, and the Prifoner
Not to be held ungratefull to her goodnes,
Has given a fumme of money to her Marriage,
A large one ile affure you.
Iay. Ye are a good man
And ever bring good newes.
I. Fr. How was it ended?
2. Fr. Why, as it fhould be; they that nev'r begd

But they prevaild, had their fuites fairely granted, The prifoners have their lives.
r. Fr. I knew t'would be fo.
2. Fr. But there be new conditions, which you'l heare of36

At better time.
Iay. I hope they are good.
2. Fr. They are honourable,

How good they'l prove, I know not.
Enter Wooer.
I. Fr. T'will be knowne.

Woo. Alas Sir, wher's your Daughter ?
Iay. Why doe you aske?
Woo. O Sir when did you fee her ?
2. Fr. How he lookes?

Iay. This morning.
(fhe fleepe ?
Woo. Was fhe well? was fhe in health ? Sir, when did
I. Fr. Thefe are ftrange Queftions.

Iay, I doe not thinke fhe was very well, for now
You make me minde her, but this very day
I ask'd her queftions, and the anfwered me
So farre from what the was, fo childifhly.
So fillily, as if fhe were a foole,
[IV. I] An Inocent, and I was very angry.
But what of her Sir?
(as good by me
$5^{6}$ Woo. Nothing but my pitty ; but you muft know it, and As by an other that leffe loves her: Iay. Well Sir.

1. Fr. Not right?

60 2. Fr. Not well?-Wooer, No Sir not well. Woo. Tis too true, the is mad. I. Fr. It cannot be. Woo. Beleeve you'l finde it fo.
64 Iay. I halfe fufpected
What you told me: the gods comfort her :
Either this was her love to Palamon,
Or feare of my mifcarrying on his fcape,
68 Or both.
Woo. Tis likely. Iay. But why allthis hafte Sir?
Woo. Ile tell you quickly. As I late was angling
72 In the great Lake that lies behind the Pallace,
From the far fhore, thicke fet with reedes, and Sedges,
As patiently I was attending fport,
I heard a voyce, a fhrill one, and attentive
76 I gave my eare, when I might well perceive
T'was one that fung, and by the fmallneffe of it
A boy or woman. I then left my angle
To his owne skill, came neere, but yet perceivd not
80 Who made the found; the rufhes, and the Reeds
Had fo encompaft it: I laide me downe
And liftned to the words fhe fong, for then
Through a fmall glade cut by the Fifher men,
84 I faw it was your Daughter.
lay. Pray goe on Sir ?
Woo. She fung much, but no fence; onely I heard her Repeat this often. Palamon is gone,
88 Is gone to'th wood to gather Mulberies,
Ile finde him out to morrow.
I. Fr. Pretty foule.

Woo. His hackles will betray him, hee'l be taken,

And what fhall I doe then? Ile bring a beavy,
A hundred blacke eyd Maides, that love as I doe
With Chaplets on their heads of Daffadillies,
With cherry-lips, and cheekes of Damaske Rofes,
And all wee'l daunce an Antique fore the Duke,
And beg his pardon; Then the talk'd of you Sir ;
That you muft loofe your head to morrow morning,
And fhe muft gather flowers to bury you,
And fee the houfe made handfone, then fhe fnng
Nothing but Willow, willow, willow, and betweene
Ever was, Palamon, faire Palamon,
And Palamon, was a tall yong man. The place
Was knee deepe where fhe fat; her careles Treffes.
A wreake of bull-rufh rounded; about her ftucke
Thoufand frefh water flowers of feverall cullors.
That me thought fhe appeard like the faire Nimph
That feedes the lake with waters, or as Iris
Newly dropt downe from heaven; Rings fhe made
Of rufhes that grew by, and to 'em fpoke
The prettieft pofies: Thus our true love's tide,
This you may loofe, not me, and many a one :
And then the wept, and fung againe, and figh'd,
And with the fame breath fmil'd, and kift her hand.
2. Fr. Alas what pitty it is ?

Wooer. I made in to her.
She faw me, and ftraight fought the flood, I fav'd her,
And fet her fafe to land: when prefently
She flipt away, and to the Citty made,
With fuch a cry, and fwiftnes, that beleeve me
Shee left me farre behinde her ; three, or foure,
I faw from farre off crolfe her, one of 'em
I knew to be your brother, where the ftaid,
And fell, fcarce to be got away : I left them with her.
Enter Brother, Daughter, and others.
And hether came to tell you: Here they are.
Daugh. May you never more enjoy the light, छ'c.
Is not this a fine Song?
Bro. O a very fine one.

## The Two Nolle Kinjmen.

[IV. I] Daugh. I can fing twenty more.
Bro. I thinke you can,
Daugh Yes truely can I, I can fing the Broome,
132 And Bony Robin. Are not you a tailour ?
Bro. Yes,
Daugh. Wher's my wedding Gowne ?
Bro. Ile bring it to morrow.
${ }_{136}$ Daugh. Doe, very rarely, I muft be abroad elfe
To call the Maides, and pay the Minftrels
For I muft loofe my Maydenhead by cocklight
Twill never thrive elfe.
140 O faire, oh fweete, E厅c.
Singes.
Bro. You muft ev'n take it patiently.
Iay. Tis true,
Daugh. Good 'ev'n, good men, pray did you ever heare
144 Of one yong Palamon?
Iay. Yes wench we know him.
Daugh. Is't not a fine yong Gentleman ?
Iay. Tis, Love.
148 Bro. By no meane croffe her, the is then diftemperd For worfe then now fhe flowes.
I. Fr. Yes, he's a fine man.

Daugh. O, is he fo ? you have a Sifter.
152 I. Fr. Yes.
Daugh. But fhe fhall never have him, tell her fo, For a tricke that I know, y'had beft looke to her, For if fhe fee him once, fhe's gone, fhe's done, 156 And undon in an howre. All the young Maydes

Of our Towne are in love with him, but I laugh at 'em
And let 'em all alone, Is't not a wife courfe?
r. Fr. Yes.
(by him,
160 Daugh. There is at leaft two hundred now with child There muft be fowre ; yet I keepe clofe for all this, Clofe as a Cockle; and all thefe muft be Boyes, He has the tricke on't, and at ten yeares old
164 They muft be all gelt for Mufitians, And fing the wars of Thefeus.
2. Fr. This is ftrange.

## 62

 The Two Nolle Kinfmen.Daugh. As ever you heard, but fay nothing.
[IV. I]
(him, 168 i. Fr. No.

Daugh. They come from all parts of the Dukedome to
Ile warrant ye, he had not fo few laft night
As twenty to difpatch, hee'l tickl't up
In two howres, if his hand be in.
Iay. She's loft
Paft all cure.
Bro. Heaven forbid man.
Daugh. Come hither, you are a wife man.

1. Fr. Do's fhe know him?
I. Fr. No, would the did.

Daugh. You are mafter of a Ship ?
Iay. Yes.
Daugh. Wher's your Compaffe ?
Iay. Heere.
Daugh. Set it too'th North.
And now direct your conrfe to th wood, wher Palamon 184
Lyes longing for me; For the Tackling
Let me alone; Come waygh my hearts, cheerely.
All. Owgh, owgh, owgh, tis up, the wind's faire, top the
Bowling, out with the maine faile, wher's your
Whiftle Mafter ?
Bro. Lets get her in.
Iay. V p to the top Boy.
Bro. Wher's the Pilot?
I. Fr. Heere,

Daugh. What ken'f thou?
2. Fr. A faire wood,

Daugh. Beare for it mafter: take about: Singes. 196
When Cinthia with her borrowed light, E'c. Exeunt.
Scæna 2. Enter Emilia alone, with 2. Pictures.
Emilia. Yet I may binde thofe wounds up, that muft
And bleed to death for my fake elfe ; Ile choofe, (open
And end their ftrife: Two fuch yong hanfom men
Shall never fall for me, their weeping Mothers,
Following the dead cold afhes of their Sonnes
Shall never curfe my cruelty: Good heaven,
What
[IV. 2] What a fweet face has Arcite? if wife nature
8 With all her beft endowments, all thofe beuties
She fowes into the birthes of noble bodies, Were here a mortall woman, and had in her The coy denialls of yong Maydes, yet doubtles, - 12 She would run mad for this man : what an eye ? Of what a fyry fparkle, and quick fweetnes, Has this yong Prince ? Here Love himfelfe fits fmyling, Iuft fuch another wanton Ganimead, 16 Set Love a fire with, and enforcd the god Snatch up the goodly Boy, and fet him by him A fhining conftellation: What a brow, Of what a fpacious Majefty he carries?
20 Arch'd like the great eyd Iuno's, but far fweeter, Smoother then Pelops Shoulder? Fame and honour Me thinks from hence, as from a Promontory Pointed in heaven, fhould clap their wings, and fing 24 To all the under world, the Loves, and Fights Of gods, and fueh men neere 'em. Palamon, Is but his foyle, to him, a meere dull fhadow, Hee's fwarth, and meagre, of an eye as heavy 28 As if he had loft his mother ; a ftill temper,

No ftirring in him, no alacrity, Of all this fprightly fharpenes, not a fmile;
Yet thefe that we count errours may become him : 32 Narcifus was a fad Boy, but a heavenly :

Oh who can finde the bent of womans fancy ?
I am a Foole, my reafon is loft in me, I have no choice, and I have ly'd fo lewdly 36 That women ought to beate me. On my knees I aske thy pardon : Palamon, thou art alone, And only beutifull, and thefe the eyes, Thefe the bright lamps of beauty, that command 40 And threaten Love, and what yong Mayd dare croffe 'em What a bold gravity, and yet inviting Has this browne manly face? O Love, this only From this howre is Complexion : Lye there Arcite, 44 Thou art a changling to him, a meere Gipfey.

And this the noble Bodie: I am fotted,
For if my brother but even now had ask'd me Whether I lov'd, I had run mad for Arcite,
Now if my Sifter; More for Palamon, Stand both together: Now, come aske me Brother, Alas, I know not : aske me now fweet Sifter, I may goe looke; What a meere child is Fancie,
That having two faire gawdes of equall fweetneffe, Cannot diftinguifh, but muft crie for both.

Enter Emul. and Gent.
Emil. How now Sir ?
Gent. From the Noble Duke your Brother $5^{6}$
Madam, I bring you newes: The Knights are come.
Emil. To end the quarrell?
Gent. Yes.
Emil. Would I might end firft :
What finnes have I committed, chaft Diana,
That my unfpotted youth muft now be foyld
With blood of Princes? and my Chaftitie
Be made the Altar, where the lives of Lovers,
Two greater, and two better never yet
Made mothers joy, muft be the facrifice
To my unhappy Beautie ?
Enter Thejeus, Hipolita, Perithous and attendants.
Thefeus. Bring 'em in quickly,
By any meanes, I long to fee'em.
Your two contending Lovers are return'd,
And with them their faire Knights : Now my faire Sifter, You muft love one of them.

Emil. I had rather both,
So neither for my fake fhould fall untimely
Enter Mefiengers._-Curtis.
Thef. Who faw'em ?
Per. I a while. $\quad 76$
Gent. And I.
Thef. From whence come you Sir?
Mefl. From the Knights.

## The Two Noble Kinfmen.

## [IV. 2] Thef. Pray fpeake

You that have feene them, what they are.
Mef. I will Sir, And truly what I thinke: Six braver firits 84 Then thefe they have brought, (if we judge by the outfide) I never faw, nor read of: He that ftands In the fitft place with Arcite, by his feeming Should be a ftout man, by his face a Prince, 88 (His very lookes fo fay him) his complexion, Nearer a browne, than blacke ; fterne, and yet noble, Which fhewes him hardy, feareleffe, proud of dangers:
The circles of his eyes fhow faire within him, 92 And as a heated Lyon, fo he lookes;

His haire hangs long behind him, blacke and fhinìng Like Ravens wings : his thoulders broad, and ftrong, Armd long and round, and on his Thigh a Sword 96 Hung by a curious Bauldricke; when he frownes

To feale his will with, better o'my confcience Was never Souldiers friend.

Thef. Thou ha'ft well defcribde him, 100 Per. Yet a great deale fhort

Me thinkes, of him that's firft with Palamon.
Thef. Pray fpeake him friend.
Per. I gheffe he is a Prince too, 104 And if it may be, greater; for his fhow Has all the ornament of honour in't: Hee's fomewhat bigger, then the Knight he fpoke of, But of a face far fweeter; His complexion 108 Is (as a ripe grape) ruddy : he has felt

Without doubt what he fights for, and fo apter
To make this caufe his owne: In's face appeares
All the faire hopes of what he undertakes, 112 And when he's angry, then a fetled valour (Not tainted with extreames) runs through his body, And guides his arme to brave things: Feare he cannot, He fhewes no fuch foft temper, his head's yellow, ı16 Hard hayr'd, and curld, thicke twind like Ivy tops,

Not to undoe with thunder ; In his face

The liverie of the warlike Maide appeares,
Pure red, and white, for yet no beard has bleft him.
And in his rowling eyes, fits victory,
As if fhe ever ment to corect his valour :
His Nofe ftands high, a Character of honour.
His red lips, after fights, are fit for Ladies.
Emil. Muft thefe men die too?
Per. When he fpeakes, his tongue
Sounds like a Trumpet; All his lyneaments
Are as a man would wifh 'em, ftrong, and cleane,
He weares a well-fteeld Axe, the ftaffe of gold,
His age fome five and twenty.
Melf. Ther's another,
A little man, but of a tough foule, feeming
As great as any: fairer promifes
In fuch a Body, yet I never look'd on.
Per. O, he that's freckle fac'd ?
Me/f The fame my Lord,
Are they not fweet ones?
Per. Yes they are well.
Me./. Me thinkes,
Being fo few, and well difpofd, they fhow
Great, and fine art in nature, he's white hair'd,
Not wanton white, but fuch a manly colour
Next to an aborne, tough, and nimble fet,
Which howes an active foule; his armes are brawny
Linde with ftrong finewes: To the fhoulder peece,
Gently they fwell, like women new conceav'd,
Which fpeakes him prone to labour, never fainting
Vinder the waight of Armes ; fout harted, ftill,
But when he ftirs, a Tiger; he's gray eyd,
Which yeelds compaffion where he conquers: fharpe
To fpy advantages, and where he finds 'em,
He's fwift to make 'em his: He do's no wrongs,
Nor takes none; he's round fac'd, and when he fmiles
He fhowes a Lover, when he frownes, a Souldier :
About his head he weares the winners oke,
And in it ftucke the favour of his Lady:
[IV. 2] His age, fome fix and thirtie. In his hand
He beares a charging Staffe, emboft with filver.
Thef. Are they all thus?
Per. They are all the fonnes of honour.
s6o Thef. Now as I have a foule I long to fee'em.
Lady you fhall fee men fight now.
Hip. I wifh it,
But not the caufe my Lord; They would fhow
164 Bravely about the Titles of two Kingdomes ;
Tis pitty Love Chould be fo tyrannous:
O my foft harted Sitter, what thinke you?
Weepe not, till they weepe blood; Wench it muft be.
168 Thef. You have fteel'd'em with your Beautie: honord To you I give the Feild ; pray order it, (Friend,
Fitting the perfons that muft ufe it. Per. Yes Sir.
172 Thef. Come, Ile goe vifit 'em: I cannot ftay,
Their fame has fir'd me fo; Till they appeare,
Good Friend be royall.
Per. There fhall want no bravery.
${ }^{176}$ Emilia. Poore wench goe weepe, for whofoever wins,
Loofes a noble Cofen, for thy fins.
Exeunt.
[IV. 3] Scæna 3. Enter Iailor, Wooer, Doctor.
Doct. Her diftraction is more at fome time of the Moone,
Then at other fome, is it not?
Iay. She is continually in a harmeleffe diftemper, fleepes
4 Little, altogether without appetite, fave often drinking,
Dreaming of anorher world, and a better; and what
Broken peece of matter fo'ere fhe's about, the name
Palamon lardes it, that fhe farces ev'ry bufines
Enter Daughter.
8 Withall, fyts it to every queftion; Looke where
Shee comes, you fhall perceive her behaviour.
Daugh. I have forgot it quite; The burden o'nt, was downe
$A$ downe $a$, and pend by no worfe man, then
12 Giraldo, Emilias Schoolemafter; he's as
Fantafticall too, as ever he may goe upon's legs,
For in the next world will Dido fee Palamon, and

Then will the be out of love with Eneas.

Ioy. Ev'n thus all day long.
Daugh. Now for this Charme, that I told you of, you muft Bring a peece of filver on the tip of your tongue,
Or no ferry: then if it be your chance to come where
The bleffed fpirits,as the'rs a fight now; we maids
That have our Lyvers, perifh'd, crakt to peeces with
Love, we fhall come there, and doe nothing all day long
But picke flowers with Proferpine, then will I make
Palamon a Nofegay, then let him marke me,-then.
Doct. How prettily fhe's amiffe? note her a little further.
Dau. Faith ile tell you, fometime we goe to Barly breake,
We of the bleffed ; alas, tis a fore life they have i'th
Thother place, fuch burning, frying, boyling, hiffing,
Howling, chattring, curfing, oh they have fhrowd
Meafure, take heede; if one be mad, or hang or
Drowne themfelves, thither they goe, Iupiter bleffe
Vs, and there fhall we be put in a Caldron of
Lead, and Vfurers greafe, amongft a whole million of
Cutpurfes, and there boyle like a Gamon of Bacon
That will never be enough.
Exit. ${ }^{66}$
Doct. How her braine coynes ?
Daugh. Lords and Courtiers, that have got maids with Child, they are in this place, they fhall ftand in fire up to the Nav'le, and in yce up to'th hart, and there th'offending part 40 burnes, and the deceaving part freezes; in troth a very greevous punifhment, as one would thinke, for fuch a Trifle, beleve me one would marry a leaprous witch, to be rid on't Ile affure you.

Doct. How fhe continues this fancie? Tis not an engraffed Madneffe, but a moft thicke, and profound mellencholly.

Daugh. To heare there a proud Lady, and a proud Citty wiffe, howle together: I were a beaft and il'd call it good 48 fport: one cries, o this fmoake, another this fire; One cries, o, that ever I did it behind the arras.and then howles; th'other curfes a fuing fellow and her garden houfe.
Sings, I will be true, my fiars, my fate, E'c. Exit. Daugh. $5^{2}$ Iaylor.
[IV. 3] Iay. What thinke you of her Sir? (minifter to. Doct. I think the has a perturbed minde, which I cannot Iay. Alas, what then?
56 Doct. Vnderftand you, fhe ever affected any man, ere She beheld Palamon?

Iay. I was once Sir, in great hope, the had fixd her
Liking on this gentleman my friend.
(great
60 Woo. I did thinke fo too, and would account I had a
Pen-worth on't, to give halfe my ftate, that both
She and I at this prefent ftood unfainedly on the Same tearmes.
(the
$64 D o$. That intemprat furfeit of her eye, hath diftemperd
Other fences, they may returne and fettle againe to
Execute their preordaind faculties, but they are
Now in a moft extravagant vagary. This you
68 Muft doe, Confine her to a place, where the light
May rather feeme to fteale in, then be permitted; take Vpon you (yong Sir her friend) the name of Palamon, fay you come to eate with her, and to
72 Commune of Love; this will catch her attention, for
This her minde beates upon ; other objects that are
Inferted tweene her minde and eye, become the prankes
And friskins of her madnes; Sing to her, fuch greene
76 Songs of Love, as fhe fayes Palamon hath fung in
Prifon; Come to her, ftucke in as fweet flowers, as the
Seafon is miftres of, and thereto make an addition of
Som other compounded odours, which are grateful to the
8o Sence : all this fhall become Palamon, for Palamon can Sing, and Palamon is fweet, and ev'ry good thing, defire
To eate with her, crave her, drinke to her, and ftill
Among, intermingle your petition of grace and acceptance
84 Into her favour : Learne what Maides have beene her Companions, and play-pheeres, and let them repaire to Her with Palamon in their mouthes, and appeare with Tokens, as if they fuggefted for him, It is a falfehood 88 She is in, which is with fafehoods to be combated. This may bring her to eate, to fleepe, and reduce what's Now out of fquare in her, into their former law, and

Regiment,

## $70 \quad$ The Two Noble Kinfmen.

Regiment; I bave feene it approved, how many times
I know not, but to make the number more, I have
Great hope in this. I will betweene the paffages of
This project, come in with my applyance: Let us
Put it in execution ; and haften the fucceffe, which doubt not Will bring forth comfort.

## Actus Quintus.

Scæna 1. Enter Thefius, Perithous, Hipolita, attendants.
Thef. Now let'em enter, and before the gods
Tender their holy prayers: Let the Temples
Burne bright with facred fires, and the Altars
In hallowed clouds commend their fwelling Incenfe
To thofe above us : Let no due be wanting,

> Flori/h of Cornets.

They have a noble worke in hand, will honour
The very powers that love 'em.
Enter Palamon and Arcite, and their Knights.
Per Sir they enter.
The): You valiant and ftrong harted Enemies
You royall German foes, that this day come
To blow that neareneffe out that flames betweene ye;
Lay by your anger for an houre, and dove-like
Before the holy Altars of your helpers
(The all feard gods) bow downe your ftubborne bodies,
Your ire is more than mortall; So your helpe be,
And as the gods regard ye, fight with Iuftice,
I le leave you to your prayers, and betwixt ye
I part my wifhes.
Per. Honour crowne the worthieft.
Exit Thefeus, and his traine.
Pal. The glaffe is running now that cannot finifh
Till one of us expire : Thinke you but thus, That were there ought in me which ftrove to fhow Mine enemy in this bufineffe, wer't one eye Againft another: Arme oppreft by Arme:
[V. I] I would deftroy th'offender, Coz, I would
Though parcell of my felfe: Then from this gather How I hould tender you.
28 Arc. I am in labour
To pufh your name, your auncient love, our kindred
Out of my memory; and i'th felfe fame place
To feate fomething I would confound: So hoyft we
32 The fayles, that muft thefe veffells port even where
The heavenly Lymiter pleafes.
Pal. You fpeake well;
Before I turne, Let me embrace thee Cofen
36 This I fhall never doe agen.
Arc. One farewell.
Pal. Why let it be fo: Farewell Coz.
Exeunt Palamon and his Knights.
Arc. Farewell Sir;
40 Knights, Kinfemen, Lovers, yea my Sacrifices
True worihippers of Mars, whofe fpirit in you
Expells the feedes of feare, and th'apprehenfion
Which ftill is farther off it, Goe with me
44 Before the god of our profeffion: There
Require of him the hearts of Lyons, and
The breath of Tigers, yea the fearceneffe too, Yea the fpeed alfo, to goe on, I meane :
48 Elfe wifh we to be Snayles; you know my prize
Muft be drag'd out of blood, force and great feate
Muft put my Garland on, where fhe fiickes
The Queene of Flowers: our interceflion then
52 Muft be to him that makes the Campe, a Ceftron
Brymd with the blood of men : give me your aide
And bend your fpirits towards him. They kneele.
Thou mighty one, that with thy power haft turnd
56 Greene Nepture into purple.
Comets prewarne, whofe havocke in vafte Feild
Vnearthed skulls proclaime, whofe breath blowes downe,
The teeming Ceres foyzon, who doft plucke
60 With hand armenypotent from forth blew clowdes,
The mafond Turrets, that both mak'ft, and break' it

The fony girthes of Citties: me thy puple,
Yongeft follower of thy Drom, inftruct this day
With military skill, that to thy lawde
I may advance my Streamer, and by thee,
Be ftil'd the Lord o'th day, give me great Mars
Some token of thy pleafure.
Here they fall on their faces as formerly, and there is heard clanging of Armor, with a Jhort Thunder as the lurft of a Battaile, whereupon they all rife and low to the Altar.
O Great Corrector of enormous times,
Shaker of ore-rank States, thou grand decider
Of duftie, and old tytles, that healft with blood
The earth when it is ficke, and curft the world
O'th plurefie of people; I doe take
Thy fignes aufpicioully, and in thy name
To my defigne ; march boldly, let us goe.
Exeunt.
Enter Palamon and his Knights, with the former oljervance.
Pal. Our ftars muft glifter with new fire, or be
To daie extinct ; our argument is love,
Which if the goddeffe of it grant, fhe gives
Victory too, then blend your fpirits with mine,
You, whofe free nobleneffe doe make my caufe
Your perfonall hazard ; to the goddeffe Venus
Commend we our proceeding, and implore
Her power unto our partie. Here they kneele as formerly.
Haile Soveraigne Queene of fecrets, who haft power
To call the feirceft Tyrant from his rage ;
And weepe unto a Girle; that ha'ft the might
Even with an ey-glance, to choke Marfis Drom
And turne th'allarme to whifpers, that canft make
A Criple florifh with his Crutch, and cure him
Before Apollo; that may'ft force the King
To be his fubjects vaffaile, and induce
Stale gravitie to daunce, the pould Bachelour Whofe youth like wanton Boyes through Bonfyres
Have skipt thy flame, at feaventy, thou canft catch
And make him to the fcorne of his hoarfe throate
[V. I] Abufe yong laies of love; what godlike power 96 Haft thou not power upon? To Phoelus thou Add'ft flames, hotter then his the heavenly fyres Did fcortch his mortall Son, thine him ; the huntreffe All moyft and cold, fome fay began to throw 100 Her Bow away, and figh : take to thy grace

Me thy vowd Souldier, who doe beare thy yoke
As t'wer a wreath of Rofes, yet is heavier Then Lead it felfe, ftings more than Nettles; 104 I have never beene foule mouthd againft thy law, Nev'r reveald fecret, for I knew none; would not Had I kend all that were; I never practifed
Vpon mans wife, nor would the Libells reade 108 Of liberall wits : I never at great feaftes

Sought to betray a Beautie, but have blufh'd At fimpring Sirs that did: I have beene harfh To large Confeffors, and have hotly ask'd them $I_{12}$ If they had Mothers, I had one, a woman, And women t'wer they wrong'd. I knew a man Of eightie winters, this I told them, who A Laffe of foureteene brided; twas thy power ${ }_{11} 6$ To put life into duft, the aged Crampe Had fcrew'd his fquare foote round, The Gout had knit his fingers into knots, Torturing Convulfions from his globie eyes, 120 Had almoft drawne their fpheeres, that what was life In him feem'd torture: this Anatomie
Had by his yong faire pheare a Boy, and I
Beleev'd it was his, for the fwore it was, 124 And who would not beleeve her? briefe I am

To thofe that prate and have done; no Companion
To thofe that boaft and have not ; a defyer
To thofe that would and cannot ; a Rejoycer, 128 Yea him I doe not love, that tells clofe offices

The fowleft way, nor names concealements in
The boldeft language, fuch a one I am,
And vow that lover never yet made figh
${ }_{132}$ Truer then I. O then moft foft fweet goddeffe

Give me the victory of this queftion, which
Is true loves merit, and bleffe me with a figne
Of thy great pleafure.
Here Muficke is heard, Doves are feene to flutter, they fall againe upon their faces, then on their knees.
Pal. O thou that from eleven, to ninetie raign'ft
In mortall bofomes, whofe chafe is this world
And we in heards thy game; I give thee thankes
For this faire Token, which being layd unto
Mine innocent true heart, armes in affurance
They bow. 140
My body to this bufineffe: Let us rife
And bow before the goddeffe : Time comes on : Exeunt. Still Muficke of Records.
Enter Emilia in white, her haire about her ghoulders, a wheaten wreath: One in white holding up her traine, her haire flucke with flowers: One before her carrying a filver Hynde, in whic his conveyd Incenfe and fweet odours, which leing Set upon the Altar her maides flanding a loofe, Jhe fets fire to it, then they curtfey and kneele.
Emilia. O facred, fhadowie, cold and conftant Queene,
Abandoner of Revells, mute contemplative,
Sweet, folitary, white as chafte, and pure
As windefand Snow, who to thy femall knights
Alow'ft no more blood than will make a bluth,
Which is their orders robe. I heere thy Prieft
Am humbled fore thine Altar, O vouchfafe
With that thy rare greene eye, which never yet
Behe!d thing maculate, looke on thy virgin,
And facred filver Miftris, lend thine eare
(Which nev'r heard fcurrill terme, into whofe port
Ne're entred wanton found,) to my petition
Seafond with holy feare ; This is my laft
Of veftall otfice, I am bride habited,
But mayden harted, a husband I have pointed,
But doe not know him, out of two, I fhould
Choofe one, and pray for his fucccffe, but I
Am guiltleffe of election of mine eyes, 160
Were I to loofe one, they are equall precious,

## The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

[V. i] I could doombe neither, that which perifh'd fhould
Goe too't unfentenc'd : Therefore moft modeft Queene, 164 He of the two Pretenders, that beft loves me

And has the trueft title in't, Let him
Take off my wheaten Gerland, or elfe grant
The fyle and qualitie I hold, I may 168 Continue in thy Band.

Here the Hynde vanifhes under the Altar: and in the place afcends a Rofe Tree, having one Rofe upon it.
See what our Generall of Ebbs and Flowes
Out from the bowells of her holy Altar
With facred act advances: But one Rofe, 172 If well infpird, this Battaile fhal confound Both thefe brave Knights, and I a virgin flowre
Muft grow alone unpluck'd.
Here is heard a fodaine twang of Inftruments, and the Rofe fals from the Tree.
The flowre is falne, the Tree defcends: O Miftris
${ }^{1} 76$ Thou here difchargeft me, I fhall be gather'd,
I thinke fo, but I know not thine owne will;
Vnclafpe thy Mifterie: I hope fhe's pleas'd,
Her Signes were gratious.
They curtfey and Exeunt.
[V. 2] Scæna 2. Enter Doctor, Iaylor and Wooer, in halite of Palamon.
Doct. Has this advice I told you, done any good upon her? Wooer. O very much; The maids that hept her company
Have halfe perfwaded her that I am Palamon; within this 4 Halfe houre the came finiling to me, and asked me what I Would eate, and when I would kiffe her : I told her Prefently, and kift her twice.

Doct. Twas well done ; twentie times had bin far better, 8 For there the cure lies mainely

Woor. Then the told me
She would watch with me to night, for well the knew
What houre my fit would take me.
12 Doct. Let her doe fo,
And when your fit comes, fit her home,

And prefently.
Wooer. She would have me fing.
Doctor. You did fo?
Wooer. No.
Doct. Twas very ill done then,
You thould obferve her ev'ry way.
Wooer. Alas
I have no voice Sir, to confirme her that way.
Doctor. That's all one, if yee make a noyfe,
If fhe intreate againe, doe any thing,
Lye with her if fhe aske you.
Iaylor. Hoa there Doctor.
Doclor. Yes in the waie of cure.
Iaylor But firft by your leave
I'th way of honeftie.
Doctor. That's but a niceneffe,
Nev'r caft your child away for honeftie ;
Cure her firft this way, then if fhee will be honeft,
She has the path before her.
Iaylor. Thanke yee Doctor.
Doctor. Pray bring her in
And let's fee how thee is.
Iaylor. I will, and tell her
Her Palamon ftaies for her: But Doctor,
Me thinkes you are i'th wrong ttill.
Doct. Goe, goe : you Fathers are fine Fooles : her honefty ?
And we fhould give her phyficke till we finde that:
Wooer. Why, doe you thinke fhe is not honeft Sir ?
Doctor. How old is fhe?
Wooer. She's eighteene.
$D_{o c t o r . ~ S h e ~ m a y ~ b e, ~}^{\text {be }}$
But that's all one, tis nothing to our purpofe,
What ere her Father faies, if you perceave
Her moode inclining that way that I fpoke of
Videlicet, the way of flefh, you have me.
$W_{\text {ooer }}$. Yet very well Sir.
Doctor. Pleafe her appetite
And doe it home, it cures her ipfo facto,
[V. 2] The mellencholly humour that infects her.
Wooer. I am of your minde Doctor.
Enter Iaylor, Daughter, Maide.
Docter. You'l finde it fo; fhe comes, pray honour her. Iaylor. Come, your Love Palamon ftaies for you childe,
56 And has done this long houre, to vifite you.
Daughter. I thanke him for his gentle patience,
He's a kind Gentleman, and I am much bound to him,
Did you nev'r fee the horfe he gave me ?
60 Iaylor. Yes.
Daugh. How doe you like him ?
Iaylor. He's a very faire one.
Daugh. You never faw him dance ?
64 Iaylor. No.
Daugh. I have often.
He daunces very finely, very comely,
And for a Iigge, come cut and long taile to him,
68 He turnes ye like a Top.
Iaylor. That's fine indeede.
Daugh. Hee'l dance the Morris twenty mile an houre,
And that will founder the beft hobby-horfe
72 (If I have any skill) in all the parifh,
And gallops to the turne of Light a'love,
What thinke you of this horfe?
Iaylor. Having thefe vertues
76 I thinke he might be broght to play at Tennis.
Daugh. Alas that's nothing.
Iaylor. Can he write and reade too.
Daugh. A very faire hand, and cafts himfelfe th'accounts
80 Of all his hay and provender: That Hoftler
Muft rife betime that cozens him ; you know
The Cheftnut Mare the Duke has?
Iaylor. Very well.
84 Daugh. She is horribly in love with him, poore beaft, But he is like his mafter coy and fcornefull.

Iaylor. What dowry has fhe?
Daugh. Some two hundred Bottles,
88 And twenty ftrike of Oates; but hee'l ne're have her;

## 78

 The Two Noble Kinfmen.He lifpes in's neighing able to entice
A Millars Mare,
Hee'l be the death of her.
Doctor. What ftuffe fhe utters?
Iaylor. Make curtfie, here your love comes.
Wooer. Pretty foule
How doe ye ? that's a fine maide, ther's a curtfie. Daugh. Yours to command ith way of honeftie;
How far is't now to'th end o'th world my Mafters?
Doctor. Why a daies Iorney wench.
Daugh. Will you goe with me?
Wooer. What fhall we doe there wench ?
Daugh. Why play at ftoole ball,
What is there elfe to doe?
Wooer. I am content
If we fhall keepe our wedding there :
Daugh. Tis true
For there I will affure you, we fhall finde
Some blind Prieft for the purpofe, that will venture
To marry us, for here they are nice, and foolifh ;
Befides my father muft be hang'd to morrow
And that would be a blot $i$ 'th bufineffe
Are not you Palamon ?
Wooer. Doe not you know me?
Daugh. Yes, but you care not for me; I have nothing
But this pore petticoate, and too corfe Smockes.
Wooer. That's all one, I will have you.
Daugh. Will you furely ?
Wooer. Yes by this faire hand will I.
Daugh. Wee'l to bed then.
Wooer. Ev'n when you will.
Daugh. O Sir, you would faine be nibling.
Wooer. Why doe you rub my kiffe off ?
Daugh. Tis a fweet one,
And will perfume me finely againft the wedding.
Is not this your Cofen Arcite ?
Doctor. Yes fweet heart,
And I am glad my Cofen Palamon
[V. 2] Has made fo faire a choice.
128 Daugh. Doe you thinke hee'l have me ?
Doctor. Yes without doubt.
Daugh. Doe you thinke fo too?
Iaylor. Yes.
(growne,
132 Daugh. We fhall have many children: Lord, how y'ar My Palamon I hope will grow too finely
Now he's at liberty : Alas poore Chicken
He was kept downe with hard meate, and ill lodging
${ }_{1} 36$ But ile kiffe him up againe.
Enter a Meffenger.
Med. What doe you here, you'l loofe the nobleft fight That ev'r was feene.

Iaylor. Are they i'th Field?
140 Mef. They are
You beare a charge there too.
Iaylor. Ile away ftraight
I muft ev'n leave you here.
144 Docter. Nay wee'l goe with you,
I will not loofe the Fight.
Iaylor. How did you like her?
Doctor. Ile warrant you within thefe 3. or 4. daies
148 Ile make her right againe. You muft not from her
But ftill preferve her in this way.
Wooer. I will.
Doc. Lets get her in.
152 Wooer. Come fweete wee'l goe to dinner
And then weele play at Cardes.
Daugh. And fhall we kiffe too ?
Wooer. A hundred times
156 Daugh. And twenty.
Wooer. I and twenty.
Daugh. And then wee'l fleepe together.
Doc. Take her offer.
160 Wooer. Yes marry will we.
Daugh. But you fhall not hurt me.
Wooer. I will not fweete.
Daugh. If you doe (Love) ile cry.

Florifh Exeunt.
Scæna.

## 80

## The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Seæna 3. Enter Thefeus, Hipolita, Emilia, Perithous: and [V. 3] fome Attendants, T. Tucke: Curtis.
Emil. Ile no ftep further.
Per. Will you loofe this fight?
Emil. I had rather fee a wren hawke at a fly
Then this decifion ev'ry ; blow that falls
Threats a brave life, each ftroake laments
The place whereon it fals, and founds more like
A Bell, then blade : I will ftay here,
It is enough my hearing fhall be punifhd,
With what fhall happen, gainft the which there is
No deaffing, but to heare ; not taint mine eye
With dread fights, it may thun.
Pir. Sir, my good Lord
Your Sifter will no further.
Thef. Oh the muft.
She flall fee deeds of honour in their kinde,
Which fometime fhow well pencild. Nature now
Shall make, and act the Story, the beleife
Both feald with eye, and eare ; you muft be prefent,
You are the victours meede, the price, and garlond
To crowne the Queftions title.
Emil. Pardon me,
If I were there, I'ld winke
Thef. You muft be there;
This Tryall is as t'wer i'th night, and you 24
The onely ftar to fhine.
Emil. I am extinct,
There is but envy in that light, which fhowes
The one the other: darkenes which ever was
The dam of horrour, who do's ftand accurft
Of many mortall Millions, may even now
By cafting her blacke mantle over both
That neither could finde other, get her felfe
Some part of a good name, and many a murther
Set off wherto fhe's guilty.
Hip. You muft goe.
Emil, In faith I will not.
[ $\left.\begin{array}{ll}\checkmark & 3\end{array}\right]$ The $\int$. Why the knights muft kindle
Their valour at your eye : know of this war
You are the Treafure, and muft needes be by 40 To give the Service pay.

Emil, Sir pardon me,
The tytle of a kingdome may be tride Out of it felfe.
44 Thef. Well, well then, at your pleafure,
Thofe that remaine with you, could wilh their office
To any of their Enemies.
Hip. Farewell Sifter,
48 I am like to know your husband fore your felfe
By fome fmall ftart of time, he whom the gods
Doe of the two know beft, I pray them he
Be made your Lot.
Exeunt Thefeus, Hipolita, Perithous, Evc.
52 Emil. Arcite is gently vifagd ; yet his eye
Is like an Engyn bent, or a fharpe weapon
In a foft fheath ; mercy, and manly courags
Are bedfellowes in his vifage: Palamon
56 Has a moft menacing afpect, his brow
Is grav'd, and feemes to bury what it frownes on,
Yet fometime tis not fo, but alters to
The quallity of his thoughts; long time his eye
60 Will dwell upon his object. Mellencholly
Becomes him nobly ; So do's Arcites mirth,
But Palamons fadnes is a kinde of mirth,
So mingled, as if mirth did make him fad,
$6+$ And fadnes, merry ; thofe darker humours that
Sticke misbecomingly on others, on them
Live in faire dwelling.
Cornets. Trompets found as to a charge.
Harke how yon fpurs to fpirit doe incite
68 The Princes to their proofe, Arcite may win me,
And yet may Palamon wound Arcite to
The fpoyling of his figure. O what pitty
Enough for fuch a chance ; if I were by
72 I might doe hurt, for they would glance their eies

## 82 The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Toward my Seat, and in that motion might
Omit a ward, or forfeit an offence
Which crav'd that very time: it is much better
(COornets. a great cry and noice within crying a Palamon.)
I am not there, oh better never borne
Then minifter to fuch harme, what is the chance ?
Enter Servanl.
Ser. The Crie's a Palamon.
Emil. Then he has won: Twas ever likely,
He lookd all grace and fucceffe, and he is
Doubtleffe the prim'ft of men : I pre'thee run
And tell me how it goes.
Showt, and Cornets: Crying a Palamon.
Ser. Still Palamon.
Emil. Run and enquire, poore Servant thou haft lof,
Vpon my right fide ftill I wore thy picture,
Palamons on the leff, why fo, I know not,
I had no end in't ; elfe chance would have it fo.
Another cry, and Jhowt within, and Cornets.
On the finifter fide, the heart lyes; Palamon
Had the beft boding chance: This burft of clamour
Is fure th'end o'th Combat.
Enter Servant.
Ser. They faide that Palamon had Arcites body
Within an inch o'th Pyramid, that the cry 92
Was generall a Palamon: But anon,
Th'Affiftants made a brave redemption, and
The two bold Tytlers, at this inftant are Hand to hand at it.

Emil. Were they metamorphifd
Buth into one ; oh why ? there were no woman
Worth fo compofd a Man : their fingle fhare,
Their noblenes peculier to them, gives
The prejudice of difparity values fhortnes
Cornets. Cry within, Arcite, Arcite.
To any Lady breathing -_More exulting ?
Palamon ftill?
Ser. Nay, now the found is Arcite.
Emil. I pre'thee lay attention to the Cry.
[V. 3] Cornets. a great./howt and cry, Arcite, victory. Set both thine eares to'th bufines.

Ser. The cry is
108 Arcite, and victory, harke Arcite, victory,
The Combats confummation is proclaim'd By the wind Inftruments.

Emil. Halfe fights faw
112 That Arcite was no babe ; god's lyd, his richnes
And coftlines of fpirit look't through hinn, it could
No more be hid in him, then fire in flax,
Then humble banckes can goe to law with waters,
116 That drift windes, force to raging: I did thinke
Good Palamon would mifcarry, yet I knew not
Why I did thinke fo; Our reafons are not prophets
When oft our fancies are: They are comming off :
120 Alas poore Palamon.
Cornets.
Enter Thefeus, Hipolita, Pirithous, Arcite as victor, and attendants, E゚c.
Thef. Lo, where our Sifter is in expectation,
Yet quaking, and unfetled: Faireft Emily,
The gods by their divine arbitrament
124 Have given you this Knight, he is a good one
As ever ftrooke at head: Give me your hands;
Receive you her, you him, be plighted with
A love that growes, as you decay;
528 Arcite. Emily,
To buy you, I have loft what's deereft to me,
Save what is bought, and yet I purchafe cheapely,
As I doe rate your value.
${ }^{1} 32$ Thef. O loved Sifter,
He fpeakes now of as brave a Knight as ere
Did fpur a noble Steed: Surely the gods
Would have him die a Batchelour, leaft his race
${ }_{1} 36$ Should thew i'th world too godlike: His behaviour
So charmd me, that me thought Alcides was
To him a fow of lead : if I could praife
Each part of him to'th all; I have fpoke, your Arcite 140 Did not loofe by't ; For he that was thus good

## 84

## The Two Noble Kinfmen.

Encountred yet his Better, I have heard
Two emulous Philomels, beate the eare o'th night
With their contentious throates, now one the higher,
Anon the other, then againe the firft,
And by and by out breafted, that the fence
Could not be judge betweene 'em : So it far'd
Good fpace betweene thefe kinefmen ; till heavens did
Make hardly one the winner : weare the Girlond
With joy that you have won: For the fubdude,
Give them our prefent Iuftice, fince I know
Their lives but pinch 'em; Let it here be done:
The Sceane's not for our feeing, goe we hence,
Right joyfull, with fome forrow. Arme your prize,
I know you will not loofe her : Hipolita
I fee one eye of yours conceives a teare
The which it will deliver.
Florifh. 56
Emil. Is this wynning?
Oh all you heavenly powers where is you mercy ?
But that your wils have faide it muft be fo,
And charge me live to comfort this unfriended,
This miferable Prince, that cuts away
A life more worthy from him, then all women;
I fhould, and would die too.
Hip. Infinite pitty
That fowre fuch eies fhould be fo fixd on one
That two muft needes be blinde fort.
Thef. So it is.
Exeunt.
Scæna 4. Enter Palamon and his Knightes pyniond: Iaylor, [V. t] Executioner Evc. Gard.
Ther's many a man alive, that hath out liv'd
The love o'th people, yea i'th felfefame ftate
Stands many a Father with his childe ; fome comfort
We have by fo confidering: we expire
And not without mens pitty. To live ftill,
Have their good wifhes, we prevent
The loathfome mifery of age, beguile
The Gowt and Rheume, that in lag howres attend
For grey approachers; we come towards the gods
[V. 4] Yong, and unwapper'd not, halting under Crymes
Many and ftale : that fure fhall pleafe the gods
12 Sooner than fuch, to give us Nectar with 'em,
For we are more cleare Spirits. My deare kinfemen.
Whofe lives (for this poore comfort) are laid downe,
You have fould 'em too too cheape.
16 I $K$. What ending could be
Of more content? ore us the victors have
Fortune, whofe title is as momentary,
As to us death is certaine: A graine of honour
20 They not ore'-weigh us.
2. $K$. Let us bid farewell;

And with our patience, anger tottring Fortune,
Who at her certain'ft reeles.
24 3. K. Come? who begins ?
Pal. Ev'n he that led you to this Banket, fhall
Tafte to you all : ah ha my Friend, my Friend,
Your gentle daughter gave me freedome once;
28 You'l fee't done now for ever: pray how do'es fhe?
I heard fhe was not well ; her kind of ill
gave me fome forrow.
Iaylor. Sir fhe's well reftor'd,
32 And to be marryed fhortly.
Pal. By my fhort life
I am moft glad on't ; Tis the lateft thing
I fhall be glad of, pre'thee tell her fo:
36 Commend me to her, and to peece her portion
Tender her this.
r. $K$. Nay lets be offerers all.
2. $K$. Is it a maide ?

40 Pal. Verily I thinke fo,
A right good creature, more to me deferving
Then I can quight or fpeake of.
All K. Commend us to her. They give their purfes.
44 Iaylor. The gods requight you all,
And make her thankefull.
Pal. Adiew ; and let my life be now as fhort, As my leave taking.

Lies on the Blocke.

$$
\mathrm{M}_{3}
$$

r. $K$.
I. $K$. Leade couragiour Cofin.

1. 2. $K$. Wee'l follow cheerefully.

A great noife within crying, run, fave hold: Enter in haft a Me@enger.
Mẹ. Hold, hold, O hold, hold, hold.
Enter Pirithous in hafte.
Pir. Hold hoa: It is a curfed haft you made
If you have done fo quickly : noble Palamon,
The gods will fhew their glory in a life.
That thou art yet to leade.
Pal. Can that be,
When Venus I have faid is falfe? How doe things fare ?
Pir. Arife great Sir, and give the tydings eare
That are moft early fweet, and bitter.
Pal. What
Hath wakt us from our dreame?
60
Pir. Lift then : your Cofen
Mounted upon a Steed that Emily
Did firft beftow on him, a blacke one, owing
Not a hayre worth of white, which fome will fay
Weakens his price, and many will not buy
His goodneffe with this note: Which fuperftition
Heere findes allowance : On this horfe is Arcite
Trotting the ftones of Athens, which the Calkins
Did rather tell, then trample; for the horfe
Would make his length a mile, if't plear'd his Rider
To put pride in him : as he thus went counting
The flinty pavement, dancing as t'wer to'th Muficke $\boldsymbol{i z}^{2}$
His owne hoofes made; (for as they fay from iron
Came Mufickes origen) what envious Flint,
Cold as old Saturne, and like him poffeft
With fire malevolent, darted a Sparke
Or what feirce fulphur elfe, to this end made,
I comment not; the hot horfe, hot as fire
Tooke Toy at this, and fell to what diforder
His power could give his will, bounds, comes on end,
Forgets fchoole dooing, being therein traind,
And of kind mannadge, pig-like he whines
[V. 4] At the fharpe Rowell, which he freats at rather
84 Then any jot obaies; feekes all foule meanes
Of boyftrous and rough Iadrie, to dif-feate
His Lord, that kept it bravely : when nought ferv'd,
When neither Curb would cracke, girthbreake nor diffring 88 Dif-roote his Rider whence ne grew, but that (plunges

He kept him tweene his legges, on his hind hoofes on end he ftands
That Arcites leggs being higher then his head
92 Seem'd with ftrange art to hang: His victors wreath
Even then fell off his head: and prefently Backeward the Iade comes ore, and his full poyze Becomes the Riders loade : yet is he living, 96 But fuch a veffell tis, that floates but for The furge that next approaches: he much defires To have fome fpeech with you: Loe he appeares.

Enter Thefeus, Hipolita, Emilia, Arcite, in a chaire. Pal. O miferable end of our alliance
100 The gods are mightie Arcite, if thy heart,
Thy worthie, manly heart be yet unbroken

- Give me thy laft words, I am Palamon,

One that yet loves thee dying.
104 Arc. Take Emilia
And with her, all the worlds joy : Reach thy hand
Farewell : I have told my laft houre ; I was falle,
Yet never treacherous: Forgive me Cofen :
108 One kiffe from faire Emilia: Tis done :
Take her: I die.
Pal. Thy brave foule feeke Elizium.
Emil. Ile clofe thine eyes Prince; bleffed foules be with
112 Thou art a right good man, and while I live,
This day I give to teares.
Pal. And I to honour.
Thef. In this place firft you fought : ev'n very here
116 I fundred you, acknowledge to the gods
Our thankes that you are living :
His part is playd, and though it were too fhort
He did it well : your day is lengthned, and,

The bliffefull dew of heaven do's arowze you.
The powerfull Venus, well hath grac'd her Altar,
And given you your love: Our Mafter Mars

- Haft vouch'd his Oracle, and to Arcite gave

The grace of the Contention : So the Deities
Have fhewd due juftice: Beare this hence. Pal. O Cofen,
That we fhould things defire, which doe coft us
The loffe of our defire ; That nought could buy
Deare love, but loffe of deare love.
Thef. Never Fortune
Did play a fubtler Game: The conquerd triunuphes,
The victor has the Loffe : yet in the paffage,
The gods have beene moft equall : Palamon,
Your kinfeman hath confeft the right o'th Lady
Did lye in you, for you firtt faw her, and
Even then proclaimd your fancie: He reftord her
As your ftolne Iewell, and defir'd your fipirit
To fend him hence forgiven ; The gods my juftice
Take from my hand, and they themfelves become
The Executioners : Leade your Lady off;
And call your Lovers from the fage of death,
Whom I adopt my Frinds. A day or two
Let us looke fadly, and give grace unto
The Funerall of Arcite, in whofe end
The vifages of Bridegroomes weele put on And fmile with Palamon; for whom an houre,
But one houre fince, I was as dearely forry,
As glad of Arcite: and am now as glad,
As for him forry. O you heavenly Charmers, What things you make of us? For what we lacke
We laugh, for what we have, are forry ftill,
Are children in fome kind. Let us be thankefull 152
For that which is, and with you leave difpute
That are above our queftion ; Let's goe off,
And beare us like the time.
Florifh. Exeunt.
Epilogue.

## EPILOGVE.

IWould now aske ye how ye like the Play, But as it is with Schoole Boyes, cannot fay, I am cruell fearefull: pray yet fay a while,
4 And let me looke upon ye: No man fmile? Then it goes hard I fee; He that has Lov'd a yong hanfome wench then, how his face : Tis firange if none be heere, and if he will
8 Againft his Confcience let him hịfe, and kill Our Market: Tis in vaine, I See to flay yee, Have at the worft can come, then; Now what fay ye? And yet miftake me not: I am not lold
12 We have no fuch caufe. If the tale we have told (For tis no other) any way content ye) (For to that honeft purpofe it was ment ye) We have our end; and ye fhall have ere long
16 I dare fay many a better, to prolong Your old loves to us: we, and all our might, Reft at your Service, Gentlemen, good night.

## Florifh.

FINIS.

## APPENDIX A.

# A LIST OF ALL VARIATIONS <br> IN TEXT OF FOLIO, 1679, FROM ORIGINAL QUARTO, 1634. 

THE PERSONS REPRESENTED IN THE PLAY.

| $\left.\begin{array}{l}\text { Hymen, } \\ \text { Theseus, } \\ \text { Hippolita, } \\ \text { Emelia, }\end{array}\right\}$ Sisters to Theseus | $\left.\begin{array}{l}\text { Perithous, } \\ \text { Jaylor, } \\ \text { Nymphs. } \\ \text { Three Queens, } \\ \text { This Daughter, in love with Palamon, } \\ \text { Palamon, } \\ \text { Arcite, }\end{array}\right\}$The two Nountreymen, <br> Vove Noble Kinsmen, in <br> love with fair Emelia |
| :--- | :--- |
| VVenches, |  |

## PROLOGUE

1. Plays [om., $] \mid$ Maiden
heads $[o m .] \mid, a[-]$ kin,
2. money grin,
3. Scenes
4. Tie,
5. Modesty, | retains
6. Maid $\mid$ pains ;
7. I'm.
8. breeder,
9. Learned,
10. 'twixt Po | Trent
11. Chaucer
12. eternity
13. Nobleness
14. Child hear, | hiss,
15. under $[-1$ ground, Oh
16. witless chaff $\mid$ writer
17. blasts $\mid$ Works
18. Than Robin Hood[,] |
fear | bring [om.; ]
19. endless thing[:]
20. breathless
21. deep
22. deep
23. tack
24. do | hear
25. Scanes |appear
26. hours travel. | sleep:
27. Play | keep,

3I. perceive
32. thick,
I. i. Actus Primus. Scana Prima.
Torch | before[,] | Flowers : Nymph, encompass'd between | Nymphs, heads. | Hippolita | Bride [om.,] |Train.
The Song. Musick.
I. sharp | gone,
2. royal smells
3. heio[,]
4. Maiden-Pinks,
5. Daizies smell [om. -] less,
7. Prim [om. -] rose first
born,
8. Harbinger,
9. dimm.
10. Oxlips [om., ,]
11. Marigolds [om., ]| death-beds
12. Larks-heels ti im.
13. dear | children [om. :]
sweet[,]
14. Lie | Bridegrooms feet [, ]
16. Angel | Air,
17. Bird fair,
19. slanderous Cuckooe,
20. boading | Clough hc
21. chatt'ring
three Queens | Black $\mid$ vails stain'd, | Imperial Crowns. I first Queen falls down $\mid$ foot $\mid$ $\mid$ second $\mid$ foot $\mid$ Hippolita. | third

## Variations in Fo 1679, from Q? 1634.

25. pities sake[,]
26. Hear [om., ] and
27. sake[.]
28. fair
29. Hear
30. mark'd
31. honor
32. clear Virginity,
33. deed
34. o'th'Book
35. down
36. Hip.
37. three Queens, | Sovereigns fell
38. cruel | endur'd
39. Beaks | Kites,
40. Crows [om., ] |foul field
41. burn
42. mortal loathsomness
43. winds
44. slain | pity
45. fear'd
46. turns | to th'
47. Chappel
48. boundless goodness
49. roof [;]
50. Lions | Bears,
51. kneel not[,]
52. for 'em[:]
53. Groom,
54. Mars's Altar[;] | fair ;
55. Funo's Mantle[,] | than
56. wreath
57. not thrash'd,
58. Cheek | kinsman
59. eyes) laid
60. thaw'd: Oh grief,
61. Fearful | devour.
62. Oh
63. he'll | power, | press
64. Oh | knees, । Widow,

8o. Unto | Helmeted-Belona
81. Soldier
82. Troubl'd | Turns away.
83. Hippolita
84. hast slain
85. Sith - tusk'd - Bore ; Arm
86. was't near
88. honor
89. stil'd | shrunk
90. bound | o'er-flowing ;
91. Soldieress
92. sternness | pity,
95. his [om., ] Love
96. Tenor Dear Glass of Ladies[.]
97. scorch,
98. Under | shadow | cool
99. o'er | heads ;

Ior. weep e'r you fail ;
103. Than
105. i'th' | blood[-]ciz'd | swoln
105. Shewing | Teeth[,] Moon
106. do.
107. Poor Lady [om. ,]
108. leif
109. I'm
III. Heart deep | distress :
i12. I'll speak
113. Oh | was[,] | Kneel
114. lce, | grief

II5. form
II7. Emil.
ti8. grief | cheek.
II9. Oh
120. read \| tears,

12I. wrinkl'd pebbles |
Glass stream
122. alack)
123. treasure | o'th'
126. me[;]
128. fool.
129. Emil.
130. feel, | rain
131. Knows
132. ground-piece
133. gainst |capital grief
134. heart[-]pierc'd
135. natural
136. beats ! me[:]

1 37. counter[-]reflect 'gainst
138. warm | pity

I40. to th' | jot
14I. O'th' | ceremony.
142. Oh | celebration
143. than
145. Knowls | ear [om. ,] o'th' | do
146. more[,]
147. Than
148. than $\mid$ Fove,
149. Soon | move[,] | As-
prays do
I50. touch[:] think, dear
Duke think
151. slain
152. griefs
153. dear

I54. for th'
155. Cords, | Drams
157. Been deaths | humane
158. shadow.
160. Lie blist'ring 'fore | Sun,
162. true[,]
164. do [om. ,] |Creon[.]
164. work | to th'
166. 'twill | form, | heats | morrow[,]
167. Then [om. , ] | bootless toil | it self,
168. its own
169. dretms,
171. clear.
173. Drunk
176. Artesis
177. out[,] | enterprize,
179. business,

I8o. dispatch
181. deed
182. werllock.
184. Widows
187. grief
192. than
193. Than
196. Arms[,]
197. lock Fove
198. Moon-light
199. twining $\mid$ sweefness
200. Upon | tastful Lips, | think
201. Kings[,] | blubber'd

Queens,
202. feel'st
203. spurn $\mid \mathrm{Oh}$
204. hour
207. Banquet
210. Suitor; | think

2II. th' abstaining
213. med'cine, | pluck
214. scandal
215. trial | Prayers,
217. vigor dumb,
218. business,
219. Shield | heart, | neck

220 Fee,
22I. do | poor Qüeens
222. help
227. She | I'll
228. ask

23I. intreating | self $\mid$ do
232. kneel
233. Lead \| gods
234. success, |return
[om. ;]
235. celebration[;] Queens
237. banks | Anly
238. find
239. moiety | business,
240. Theme
241. kiss uppon | Lip,
242. Sweet keep | token ;
244. Farewel | Sister[;] |
245. Keep | Feast | hour
246. Pyri. Sir[,]
247. I'll|heels; | solemnity
248. return.
249. Cosin
250. Budge | Athens;
251. E'r
252. Ma e | farewel
253. dost | o'th'
254. $\operatorname{Mars}[$.
256. mortal[,]
257. godlike honors ;
258. Groan | Mast'ry.
260. subdu'd
261. Title; | cheer
262. turn | our
I. ii. Scana Secunda.

Enter Palamon and Arcite.

1. Dear | dearer | Love than
2. Cosin, | unhard'ned
3. City
4. Thehs,
5. gloss
6. keep
7. I'th' aid o'th' current, | sink,
8. stream, 'twould | Eddy
II. turn drown ;
9. gain | weakness.
10. cry'd
11. School,
12. Thebs ? | weeds
13. o'th'
14. honor,
15. peace[,],
16. Mars's | scorn'd

Altar ? | bleed
22. meet, | 7uno
23. antient | jealousie
24. work,

25 retain
27. Than
28. Arcite[]
29. Meet / ruin,
30. crancks [om., ]|turns | Thebs?
31. kinds :
32. do arouse ! pity
33. th' unconsider'd
34. Pal. | pity
35. where[-]e'er | find
36. toil
37. paid | Ice | cool
38. Arcite[.] |'Tis
39. speak of [,] this \| virtue
40. Thebs,

4r. keep | honors,
42. residing, | evil
43. colour ; | ev'ry
44. certain evil, | jump
46. meer
47. 'Tis
48. (Unless | fear
49. need
52. own
56. long[,] until
59. poor Chinn | 'tis | just
60. glass:

62 goe
63. street | foul ? | either
64. Team,
65. i'th' | poor slight
66. Need | Plantain; | tips
67. toth'
68. Uncle
71. Heaven unfear'd,
73. Feavor,
76. own
77. win | glory on [; so
T. C. D. Qo.]
78. fears
79. bloud
80. let | break
82. Clear spirited Cosin
83. Let's
84. loud | milk,
86. kinsmen
87. unless
89. think | ecchoes \| deaf't
90. ears ! Justice : | cries

9I. again | throats, | not
[om. :]
92. gods:
93. calls | leaden[-]footed
95. whipstock[,]|ex-
claim'd
96. whisper'd to
97. loudness | fury.
98. winds
99. what's

Ioo. threats
1oI. defiance
102. Ruin | Thebs, | seal
104. approach[:]
105. fear | gods
106. terror $\mid$ yet
107. own
108. dregg'd, | assur'd
110. unreason'd.
111. Thebs,
112. neutral | dishonor ;
116. wars afoot?
117. fail
122. Let's
123. honor,
124. enemy came | bloud
128. o'th' | do
130. never[-]erring Arbitrator,
I. iii. Scena Tertia.

Enter Perithous, Hippolita, Emilia.
2. farewel ;
3. success
4. question [;]
5. Excess,
6. speed
7. hurts | Governors
9. needs | poor
10. yield | Maid,
ir. affections [om. ,]
12. temper'd pieces, keep enthron'd
13. dear
14. Thanks | remember
15. all[-]Royal | speed
16. Bellona I'll solicite ;
17. State[,],
18. gifts I"
19. advis'd
21. bosom:
22. been | we \| weep
23. do'n | helms, | Sea,
24. broach'd|Women
25. eat
26. brine[,]
27. Spinsters,
28. ever[,]
31. Exit Pir.
33. Follows | sports
34. seriousness, | skill,
35. careless | gain
36. loss
37. o'er business
38. mind, | equal
39. diff'ring Twins ;
42. for't, | Cabin'd
43. poor a corner,
44. Peril
45. roaring
46. I'th' | dread י,
47. Death's-self | lodg'd,
48. Fate

## 94 <br> Variations in Fo. 1679, from Q: 1634.

49. Ti'd, weav'd, intangl'd,
50. deep
51. out[-]worn, | think
52. himself
53. twain,
54. Justice,
55. Doubtless
56. enjoy'd
57. enrich'd,
58. took o'th' Moon
59. (Which
60. Was each eleven.
61. 'Twas Flavia[.]

Two Hearses ready with Palamon, and Arcite The three Queens. Theseus, and his Lords ready.
64. Yes[,]
65. talk
66. season'd,
67. judgement[,] | needs
69. roots
70. she
71. Lov'd
72. do
73. souls
75. approv'd, | condemn'd
76. arraignment, | flower pluck
77. between
78. blossom)
79. she

8o. Phenix[-]like
81. di'd
82. pattern
83. happily, | careless,
84. ear
85. stol'n | air, | humın'd on
86. musical Coynage[,] why[,]| Note
87. sojourn
88. rehearsal
89. fury [om.-] innocent
90. importments [-] bastard | end[;]
91. 'tween Maid, and Maid,
92. than | individual.
93. out
95. Maid
98. alack wea $k$
99. believe
100. (Though [om. ,] | believe thy self)
1OI. sickly
102. loaths | longs[,]
104. said | Arm
106. kneel
107. than | Pirathous, possess
108. Throne
109. Ewvil.
iro. continue.
I. iv. Scena Quarta.

Battel struck within : then | Retreat: | Theseus | Queens meet
I. Star | dark.
2. Heaven | Earth
5. wish'd | Amen to't.
6. Th' impartial gods,
7. mortal Herd,
8. chastise : | find
9. honor
10. ceremony, | than
11. dear | supply't.
14. haste | adieu
15. look

Queens.
16. judg'd
17. Thebs
18. Nephews
19. By th' | Mars,
20. pair | smear'd | [Daniel Qo. succard 7. C. D.
Qo. smeard]
21. troops
22. mark
23. view :
24. enquir'd
27. 'Tis

Three Hearses ready.
29. been
30. 'twas

3I. been recover'd ;
32. have
35. Exceed | Wine | Surgeons
36. behoof,
37. than niggard waste, | concern
38. than Thebs I than
40. liberty)
42. than bear em
43. kind air, I unkind,
44. do
45. known | beheasts,
46. zeal, | Mistriss taske,
47. feavor, | madness,
48. mark
49. sickness | Will
50. wrestling
51. Apollos
52. skills | Lead | City,
53. scatter'd, | will post[.]
54. Athens

## Musick.

## I. v. Scena Quinta.

Queens [,] | Knights, | Funeral Solemnity, \&c.
r. Urns [om., ] and Odours,
2. Vapors, sighs,
3. looks[,]
4. Gumbms, | cheers,
5. viols | tears,
6. clamors[,] |air jlying[:]
7. sad [om.,] | solemn Shows,
8. quick-ey'd
10. houshold graver [om. :]
II. Joy seize | again:
peace[,] sleep
14. ways [om., ]
15. City | streets,
16. Market[-]place, $\mid$ meets.
II. i. Scena Prima.

Faylor [om. ,]
r. Fail. [so throughout the scene.]
3. Keep, / seldom
5. Minnows : | lin'd
6. Than | appear,
8. Deliver'd

9 It
if. Sir[,] | demand / than | own
12. Daughter[,]
14. Well, | talk

16 seen
17. she
19. business :
20. soon | Court[-]hurry
21. I'th' mean | look
22. prisoners. | Princes.
23. 'tis pity
24. 'twere pity
25. Do think
26. it self
28. pair
30. grief
31. battel,
32. Nay[,] | sufferers;
33. Marvel | look'd[,] | been
35. freedom | bondage.

## Variations in Fo. 1679, from Q: 1634.

36. affliction [om., ]
37. seems | me[,]
38. than $\mid$ Athens : | eat
39. look

4I. own
42. divided | martyr'd |
twere
43. I'th' | break
44. sweet

45 my self \| sigh
46. sigher
48. himself | night[.]

Palamon, | Arcite [om. ,]
50. Look[,]
51. looks
53. twain;
55. Go to,
57. look
58. Diff'rence | Exeunt[.]
II. ii. Scana Secunda.

Palamon, | Arcite
I. do you[,]|Cosin ?
2. do you $[$,
3. enough
4. bear | war
5. fear / Cosin.
6. believe
8. Laid | hour
9. Cosin
10. Thebs | Countrey ?
13. youths | honor[,]
15. Sail :
16. behind
17. Clouds, | Arcite[.]
20. E'r
21. twins | honor,
22. Arms again, | feel | fiery horses[,]
24. red-ey'd | War
25. Bravish'd | age[,]
26. deck
27. light'ning
30. prisoners
31. youths
32. find
34. sweet
35. I.oaden | a rm'd | Cupids
36. necks,
39. arms,
40. Fathers
41. fair-ey'd Maids, | weep | banishments,
43. she
46. Hear nothing[,] |

## clock

48. Summer
49. dead-cold | inhabit
50. 'Tis | hounds,
51. shook
52. hollo
53. Javelins,
54. Flies | Parthian
55. Struck | well-steel'd
56. food [om. ,] | minds,
57. (Which | honor)
58. grief, | Ignorance[,]
59. Cosin,
60. rising, | meer
61. please [om., ]
62. griefs
63. think
64. Certainly,
65. 'Tis | main goodness, Cosin,
66. twin'd | souls
67. bodies,
68. gaul
69. sink,
70. sleeping,
71. Cosin ?
72. think | Holy Sanctuary,
73. keep

8o. young[,] | wayes
81. conversation[,]
82. poison | spirits[,] | might[,] | women[,]
84. imaginations
85. here
86. endless
87. Wife,
88. births | Father, Friends,

Acquaintance,
89. are[,]
90. Heir,
91. oppressor
93. seek
94. War
96. Wife | business,
97. us[:]
98. Cosin,
100. eyes,

10I. prayers | chances
102. sever
104. thank | Cosin
106. abroad ?
107. 'Tis | methinks: | find
108. I'm
109. Wills
110. now[;
III. 'tis | shadow,

II2. by[,]
II3. been
114. Justice, Lust, | Ignorance,
115. virtues | Cosin Arcite [om. ,]
117. di'd | men [om. ,]
r18. Epitaphs,
120. hear
123. we two Arcite?
125. think

I27. deaths | cannot[.]

## Emilia | Woman.

129. Speak
130. Garden
131. Flower
132. 'Tis call'd Narcissus[,]
133. fair | certain, | fool,
134. himself, | Maids
135. hard[-hearted?
136. fair.
137. think
138. wench :
139. kindness
140. forward[,] Cosin ?
141. work |'Flowers |

Silk
148. I'll | Gown | 'emॅ,]
149. wil't | do
150. skirt
151. Dainty
152. Cosin, Cosin, | do you[,]
153. now[,]
154. Why[,]
156. she |Goddess.
158. Do
159. is a Goddess
160. Flowers,
161. Methinks
163. Emblem | Maid.
164. West
165. blows
166. near
167. then [om. ,]
168. She locks | again,
169. briers[,]
172. falls | Maid
173. she | honor,
176. fair.
178. let's
179. We'll | near | near
180. I'm | merry[-]hearted,
181. down
183. bargain[,]

Emilia | Woman.
185. think
186. 'Tis

## 96 <br> Variations in Fo. 1679, from Q: 1634.

188. Yes[,] a matchless beauty[,]
189. himself[,]
190. feel
191. do ;
192. goddess ;
193. all[:]
194. denie
195. took
196. reveal'd | mankind : | lov'st her[;]
197. Traitor Arcite,
198. bloud
199. ties between | disclain
200. If |hink
201. $\operatorname{Arc}[$.$] Yes[,$
202. so, | soul,
203. farewel
204. again, | loving her[,]
maintain
205. worthy [om.,] | Lover
206. Palamon[,]
207. call'd
208. deal
209. Your blood, | soul ?
210. griefs, | fears,
211. deal
212. unlike | Kinsman
213. speak truly, | do |
think
214. Unworthy
215. No[,]
216. another
217. honor down,
218. freedom[:] else
219. Countrey,
220. villain.
221. concerns
222. madness,
223. deal | truly.
224. child extreamly :
225. do
226. Oh
227. false-self[,]
228. hour
229. swords
230. What 'twere
231. than
232. soul, | I'll nail | to't.
233. fool,
234. I'll
235. leap | Garden, | next[.]
236. Arms
237. Keepers coming ;
238. knock | brains

Keep. [name of speaker
thus noted throughout the scene.]
274. leave[,] Gentlemen[.]
275. Keeper ?
276. to th'
278. Keeper.
280. fair Cosins company. Arcite,
285. Bloud and Body : | falshood,
287. Wife | fair;
288. ne'er | again.
289. fair one : blessed
290. Fruit, and Flowers
291. bright
293. Apricock;
294. arms
295. fruit
296. gods.
298. heavenly[,]
299. near | gods \| fear
300. I'm | Keeper[,]
301. Where's Arcite [?]
302. Keep. Banish'd :
303. Obtain'd
304. Upon | oath | foot
305. Upon | Kingdom.
306. He's
307. Thebes again, | Arms
308. young
310. himself

3II. Field | battel
313. bear himself
314. ways.
315. do
316. virtuous greatness,
317. Virgin
318. seek
322. remove
323. windows
325. prethee
330. bring'st | scurvy
331. go.
332. Indeed you
333. Garden ?
334. No.
335. resolv'd, | go.
336. constrain | then [:]
337. I'll | irons
338. Keeper.
339. I'll | sleep,
340. I'll
342. Farewel kind
343. wind | Oh / Lady[,]
345. Dream

Palamon [om. ,]
II. iii. Scana Tertia.

Arcite.

1. Banish'd | Kingdom ?
'tis
2. thank | banish'd
3. 'twas
4. pluck | me[,]
5. hast
6. break | 'gainst
7. feed
II. Upon | sweetness
8. never
9. happiness
10. he'll | speak
11. fair,
12. Kingdom,
13. own [om. ,] | heap
14. redress | go, | her[,]
15. resolv'd an other
16. I'm
17. I'll | near

## garland.

24. I[.] | I'll | certain.
25. I'll
26. Boys; 'Tis but [om. a] chiding,
27. I'll ticktl'
28. jades tails
29. I'm
30. I'll
31. again.
32. fesku
33. ail
34. $\operatorname{Arcas}[$,]
35. danc'd
36. Domine,
37. think : For
38. He'll eat | hornbook | fail :
39. far | between
40. dance
41. Boys I'th'
42. here I'll | I'll | Town,
43. again, | again: Ha, Boys,

## 54. i'th'

56. means
57. himself | behalfs :
58. He's | i'th' | to'th'
plains,
59. We'll
60. Sweet \| means,
61. we'll perform.
62. Boys
63. wither
64. Why,
65. 'tis
66. Games[,]|Friend [om. .]
67. far
68. Games[,]
69. never |'Duke[,]
70. 'Tis
71. own | Boys[.]
72. mind
73. trick
74. I'll | hang'd
75. plumb[-]porredge,
76. wrestle?
77. offer'd

9I. call'd
92. than wind | Corn
93. ears) | I'll
94. poor knows
95. brows
96. happiness prefer Arcite [om. ,]
II. iv. Scena Secunda. Failors
2. affect | I'm
3. mean
4. Prince ; | hopeless;
7. fifteen
8. though the
14. young
15. Extremely
18. coyl
19. Heaven
23. bows
24. Fair, | Mayd, | goodness,
28. misery[:]
30. fain
[The stage dir. at side wrongly printed at end of II. iv. (in italics.)]
II. v. Scana Secunda.

Hippolita,

1. seen
2. sinews;
3. wrestle,
4. I'm
5. heir ?
6. youngest
7. Suie[,] then : | proves
8. Qualities :
9. Hawk, | hollow'd
10. Dogs;
$a-Q_{1}$.
a-Q1. 7
$\qquad$
11. Soldier.
12. Upon | soul,
13. seen | young
14. Believe,
15. me thinks,
16. Hip.
17. virtue, | Sun[,]
18. Breaks
19. Hip. He's
20. seek
21. only | world

4I. fair-ey'd
46. Thanks
47. y' are mine,
49. young | goodness;
50. honour'd her fair virtues,
51. y' are hers: kiss | fair
52. $y$ ' are | Beautie,
53. seal | vow'd
57. soon
58. Y 'are | ranck I'll
59. I'll
61. noon |'tis
67. Dian's | wait | Sir[,]
68. Upen
69. foot.
74. You'll find
76. find
78. lead
79. receive
80. honor | 'Twere
II. vi. Scana 6.

## faylors

2. ventur'd $\mid \operatorname{him}[:]$
3. Cedar[,]
4. Brook, | keep
5. food[;]

I I. him [om., ]
12. safetie[:]
13. desperate[:] | Law
14. Find
15. hearted Maids,
20. Maids

2I. again :
23. (me thinks) | Nor
24. persuade
30. I'll proclaim him [,

3I. no [om. -] man :
32. pack | cloaths
33. I’ll
34. he
35. I'll | hour
36. o'er | I'm
37. look|Farewell

Father[,]
39. keep your self. | him[:]
[The marginal dir. Cornets, etc., printed (in italics) at foot of this sc. instead of heading III. i.] hollowing.

## III. i. 'Scana Prima.

I. Each took
3. bloom'd
4. To' th' | Queen
5. than
6. her | bows,
7. Th' enamell'd knacks o'
th' Mead, | ye
8. banck
9. stream seem | Jewell
12. poor $\mid$ betwen
15. guiltless
16. Sovereign)
17. proud.
18. near | beauteous Morn
19. year)
21. pair
22. crowns | tried :
23. Poor | poor
25. thy self,
26. near
28. breath'd
29. liv'd $\mid \mathrm{Coz}[$.]
31. kinsman,
32. signs
34. oaths
35. justice
36. Traytor[:] | perfidious
37. look'd | honor.
38. ev'r
39. her
40. I'll
42. theef
43. villain :
44. cloggs
45. Dear, Palamon[.]
47. shew'd | feat.
49. gross stuff
50. form
51. gentleness |'tis
55. fair $\mathrm{Coz}[$.
56. I'll maintain
57. terms, | griefs [om. ,]
59. clear |own | mind

6I, thon
63. seen
64. fear:
65. hear
66. i' th'
68. seen
69. call'd
70. week's | fair
71. rayn:
73. coupel'd Beeres,
74. ty'd.
76. Speak | Glass,
77. ear, | disdains
81. meal | then[.]
84. trespass | done my, ye
85. souls
86. di'd | seek
87. news | this[,]
90. Again | hawthorn
91. counsel
94. o' th'
95. your self,
96. I'm / choice
97. Armor.
98. dare
99. bear | business !
100. only
ror. kind
102. Sweet
104. do't | only,
105. hypocrisy

Wind horns
106. than
107. hear | Horns;
108. Musick
109. crost [om. ,] e'r
in. I'll
II3. deed | certain
II4. pour
II5. oil ont | ayr
116. Cuff :
117. Not reconcil'd
118. Plainly

Wind homs.
120. not ;
121. Hark
122. scatter'd | guess
126. Unjustly | atcheiv'd.
128. I'm persuaded | sick
129. I'm | Suitor,
131. talk
137. talk

I38. look
139. looks
140. o'er
III. ii. Scana Secunda.

## Faylors

1. mistook ; | Beak
2. 'Tis
3. darkness | o' th' | Hark | wolf:
4. grief slain fear,
5. wreak
6. hollow'd
7. hollow :
8. answer'd, | wolf,
9. howls
10. Jengling
11. unarm'd,
12. I'll | down
13. torn |howl'd
14. fed
15. My self \| priz'd
16. took |non
17. water[,] |clos'd
18. Dissolve
19. drown, | my self.
20. fail
21. Moon | Cr'ckets | Screich[-]owl
22. dawn;
23. fail
III. iii. Scena Tertia.

Meat,
I. near
2. Arcite [?]
3. food
4. fear | here's no
7. We"ll
8. drink [:]
9. you're I'll talk
12. fear \| down,
13. vain
15. talk | Fools, | health[.]
17. dowu | entreat
18. honor
19. 't will disturb
21. I'll
23. feel
24. I'll
25. Spare | Eat
27. I'm
28. I'm / meat to't.
29. lodging [om. ,]|

Cosen [?]
30. wild
2.2世"

3I. victuals ? | see[.]
33. sweet
35. meat :
36. Give
40. black-hair'd
44. Arbor :
45. o' the
47. groan | Month
50. abroad, you'll
52. brown |'tis[:]
53. young
54. broad beech :
55. life[,] fool
56. A way | strain'd | again
57. breath'd
58. break
59. You
60. there's
61. Arc[.] | I'll
62. mak'st | Traytor.
63. There's | and [om.,] perfumes[.]
64. I'll | again | hours
65. all[.]
66. Armor[.]
67. Fear | fowl ;
70. I'll here
71. keep
III. iv. Sccena Quarta.

## Faylors

2. look
3. seen
4. he's
5. sea[,] | there's a
6. there's | Rock
7. beats
8. There's
9. Upon / wind,
10. Up | tack | Boys.
11. y 'are | I'm
12. find
13. News $\mid o^{\prime}$ th'

I4. A Careck | Cockle[-]
shell, | sayll
15. Pigmies,
18. I'll
19. I'll $\mid$ green $\mid$ afoot
20. I'll |locks;
21. hey, nonny, nonny, nonny[.]
23. I'll goe seek | wide[.]
25. prick | brest
26. sleep
III. v. Sciena Sexta.

School[-]master
I. $S c h[$,
2. labour'd |milk'd
3. ye, and[,] figure[,]
6. Judgements, | said
7. me,

Io. appears, | meet him[,]
II. hears,
13. mark | do
14. comely
16. turn Boys.
18. Taboror[?]
19. Timothy[?]
20. boys,
21. woman[;]
23. Barbary.
24. freckled | fail'd
25. Where
27. favor,
29. Where's | o'th' Musick.
30. Dispers'd
32. where's
33. tail
36. bark
38. tandem [?] | wanting[.]
39. i' th'

4I. Authors | wash'd
42. labour'd vainly.
43. scornfull
45. Cicely
46. dogs $[-]$ skin ;
47. fail|Arcas[,]
48. break.
49. Eeel
50. by 'th' tail
51. fail,
52. position[.]
57. business
59. credit । Town
60. piss o'th'

6i. ways, I'll | I'll
63. Daughter[,]
65. a[.]
66. haild $d$,
67. bound a [?]

Chair and stools out[.]
68. sound $a[$.
69. fools, | howelet[:]
70. owl
72. hawk, | were
73. Mr. comes i' th' Nick[,]
74. Hare[;] | we | dance, we
75. again : | she'll do
76. Boys.
82. fool: | poz'd | Buz[.]
83. eat $\mid$ do
84. bleed extremely,
85. y 'are \| Sir[,] ha
86. Dii
88. play[.]
89. o' th
90. Sch[.] Go | and
91. Fouis
92. lead
9.3. Lass,
94. I'll lead. (Wind Horns :
96. Persuasively, | cunningly[:] | boys,
97. hear | horns:
98. mark.
99. Pallas
train.
100. took,
105. down, we'll
106. hail : | hail
108. favor;
113. Chorus
119. frame [om.,]
122. blown | help | poor
125. glew'd
126. hither [om. .]
128. appear,
129. speak

I 30. feet
133. seek
134. Spouse,
135. beck'ning
136. reck'ning:
137. Clown, | fool,
138. Bavian[,] |tail, | tool [om. ,]
139. aliis,
141. means, dear Domine. Musick Dance[:]
143. filii, | it[.]

Knock | Schoolm.
144. been
145. pleas'd
146. down
147. School[-] master's | Clown:
148. pleas'd thee
149. Boy's
150. 'twaine
151. again
152. year

I 53. We'll
154. Domine; |sweet heart [?]
155. pleas'd
156. 'Twas
157. better[,]
158. School [-] master, |
thank you,
160. again.
164. eat

Wind Horns.
165. Dii deaq; Onmes,
III. vi. Scana Septima.
I. hour
2. again,
3. fail
4. Soldier ;
5. think | week | restor'd
7. Crest-fal'n | thank
8. fair | feel | self
9. again
10. out[-]dure
13. Soldier :
15. 'tis Justice :
17. kinsman,
19. pains
20. fair
21. honor,
23. kind / find
25. blows.
26. think
29. fair terms,
30. than

3I. honorable[:]
32. talk
36. pertains | scorns,
38. seen
39. Sir [?]
40. feel self
41. furnish'd | I'll
43. spar'd, | I'm
44. said
45. had did;
49. I'm

5 I. exceed \| do'st
52. spare
53. think
54. deceiv'd
57. You'll find it[.]
58. as I'm
60. I'll | I'll
62. I'll
64. Armor [?]
67. No.
69. worn
71. I'll
72. means.
74. we'll | perceive
75. fain
76. I'm
77. Good
80. Cask

8i. bare-arm'd ?
83. Gantlets |o' th'
85. Thank
86. look, | falen
87. us'd
88. I'll | I'll
90. I'll
92. Me thinks | Armor's | Arcite. ${ }^{-}$]
95. out[-]did
96. charg'd
97. Upon
98. spur'd
100. indeed
103. out[-]went
104. Yet
106. virtue,
ir. Break / Troop.
II4. 'tis
116. dishonor.
117. I'm
120. thank / keep
122. honor
[stage dir. after 1. 122.]
123. love[:] [om. *]
124. only,
129. sleep | honor,
130. soul,
133. near
137. Cosen[.]

Horns
139. undone
142. we're
143. honors
145. hours
146. seen
147. reveal
148. scorn
153. Tryall [displaced : in
Q., om. in F.]
155. thy self
156. Upon
158. hour

I 59. own,
160. fear less | weak
161. I'll
165. sleep : Only | fears |
166. honor | ends[,]
168. Look | own again. Horns.
Hippolita, | train.
170. 'gainst | Laws
171. Battail,
176. goodness : I'm
178. Think
180. never
181. beg'd
183. own | follows
184. fair
186. soul
187. I'm | think
189. be'st
190. virtuous,
192. again,
193. Justice | thy self
194. I'll | to't
195. Heaven,
196. than
197. sworn.
198. seek
199. 'Tis
200. soon
203. Beautie,
210. fair,
213. pity $\mid 0$
214. stop [om.,]
215. ear
216. soul
217. labors crown
218. Let's | instant[,]
219. Only
220. Soul
223. than | offences
224. than | speak
225. sleep
226. Hippol. I pity,
227. Speak | denied ;
228. bear
231. Nor
232. own
234. to' th' | I'll
235. Help | dear | deed | virtuous,
239. own spotless honor.

24I. fair
243. virtues
244. valor,
245. chast | pleas'd
247. I'll
248. wars ;
250. Maid.

25I. own
253. yielded
254. crown | soul
256. hear
257. intreat
260. Princes.
261. reel :
263. Upon
265. understanding
267. than
270. They'ld | you; Hourly ! honor
273. o' th
274. byth' | than
277. o' th | yonr
278. vows
279. expres
280. oath,
281. I'm
282. heed.
284. Urge
285. never
288. maim | honor ;
289. I'm | I'm deaf
293. wisdom, | proyn
294. Bows
296. groan'd
297. Maids
301. I'm | scorn
302. Heavens
304. Swear 'em
306. upon the
309. oath,

3II. fairly
312. Else
318. He's | villain
320. 'Tis

32 I . think
322. I'll
323. honor
325. feel
326. again
331. own
332. of [:] Look
334. too[,]
335. souls.
339. fall from | favor,
340. unborn
342. Soldiers
345. hayr
347. ordain
348. again
350. month
351. fair | appear again
352. I'll
354. fair
356. friends[:]
357. think
360. I'm | again, | hour.
363. Emi[.]
364. Ecel both
365. again
366. heed,
367. Sleep | hour perfixt,
368. fail
369. Toes. | I'll
371. return, | I'll| here, 372. loses, | I'll weep | Beer.
IV. i. Scana Prima.

Failor [om. ,] | freind.

1. fail. Hear | more [?] | said
2. I [om. .] Fr. [so
throughout sc.]

## 5. business

7. E'r | likelyhood
8. for Hippolita,
9. fair-ey'd Emilia, | knees[,]
10. Begg'd / handsome
II. staggering [om. ,]
11. oath,
12. truly $\mid$ Perithous..]
13. Half own

## 2 Friends.

18. Yail. | Heaven
19. 2 Fr. $\mid$ news [on.. ,]
20. news.
21. Fail.
22. clear'd
23. discover'd
24. means | scap'd, |
(Daughter's
25. procured | prisoner
26. ungrateful \| goodness,
27. sum
28. I'll
29. news.
30. ne'er begg'd
31. prevail'd, | suits fairly granted[.]
35 'twould
32. you'll hear
33. Fuil.
34. they'll

4I. 'Twill | known.
42. where's
43. do | ask ?
44. Oh Sir[,]
45. looks[?]
46. Fail.
47. health [om. ?] Sir [?] | sleep ?
48. questions
49. Fail. | do | think
50. mind

5 I. answer'd
52. far | childishly[,]
53. fool,
54. Innocent,
55. $\operatorname{Sir}[:]$
56. pity[,]
57. less
58. Fail.
60. Woo. No Sir[.] not well. [printed as a separate line]
6I. 'Tis
63. Believe, you'll find
64. half
67. fear
69. 'Tis
70. haste[,]

## 71. I'll

72. Palace,
73. thick | Reeds [om. ,]
74. voice,
75. ear,
76. 'Twas | smallness
77. Boy | Woman.
78. near, | perceiv'd
79. Rushes,
80. laid/down
81. sung,
82. Fisher[-]men,
83. to th' | Mulberries,
84. I'll find
85. soul.
86. he'll
87. do | I'll
88. black [-] ey'd Maids [om. ,] |do
89. heads with Daffadillies,
90. cherry [om. -] lips, | cheeks Damask
91. we'll dance | 'fore
92. then | talk'd | you[,]
93. lose | morning [om., ]
94. Flowers
95. sung
96. but willow, | between
97. fair
98. young
99. deep | sate ; | careless
100. wreak | Bull-rush | stuck
101. Water Flowers | several colours
102. methought | appear'd | fair Nymph
103. feeds | Iris
III. Thus |ty'd,
104. again,
105. Woo. | her[,]
106. city

I20. swiftness,
121. far behind | four,
122. far cross
123. where we staid,
125. hither
128. Oh[,]
130. think
131. Daugh[.] | truly |

Broom,
132. Bonny Robbin.। Tailor ?
133. Yes[.]
134. Where's | wedding[-]

Gown?
135. I'll
137. Maids

## 138. Maidenhead | cock[-]

 light139. 'Twill
140. Oh fair, | sweet, \&c.
141. Good [om.'] ev'n, ! hear
142. young
143. wench[,]
144. young
145. 7ay. ${ }^{\text {'T Tis [om. ,] }}$
146. mean cross | distemper'd
147. than $\mid$ shows.

15I. Oh,
153. trick | look

I56. undone | hour. |
Maids
157. Town
158. is't
161. four ; | keep
162. boys,
163. trick | years
164. Musicians,
169. Dukedom
170. I'll
171. twenty[,] |he'll tickk't
172. hours,
173. Fay.
176. Daug.
177. Does
180. 7ay.
181. Where's | Compass?
182. Fay. Here.
183. to th'
184. course to th'
185. Lies |for the
186. weigh | cheerly.
187. fair,
188. main sail, where's
190. Let's
191. Fay. Up
192. Where's
193. Here[.]
195. fair
196. Bear \| tack \| Sings.
197. Cinthia
IV. ii. Scena Secunda.

Emilia alone, | two

1. bind
2. I'll
3. young handsome
4. Sons
5. Heaven[;]
6. Arcite[,]
7. beauties
8. She shews births
9. mortal
10. denials | young Maids, | doubtless,
11. fiery $\mid$ sweetness :
12. young | here | himself | smiling,
13. Just
14. enforc'd
15. what
16. ey'd 7uno's,
17. than Honor
18. Methinks
19. such | near 'em.
20. foil, | mere
21. He's
22. sharpness,

3I. errors | him [?]
33. find
34. I'm | fool,
36. Women | beat
37. ask
38. beautiful, | thy
39. Beauty [om. ,]
40. young Maid | cross'em
42. brown
43. hour | complexion : lye
44. mere Gipsie.
46. Utterly
47. Brother[,]
48. Arcite[.]
50. now, |ask
51. ask
52. go look ; what
53. fair gawds | equal sweetness,
54. cry

Emil.
57. news :
58. quarrel ?
61. sins |chaste
62. soil'd

63 . bloud
Princes? |
Chastity
64. Lives
66. Mothers
67. Beauty ?

Enter Theseus, Hippolita, Perithous, and Attendants [om. .]
68. Thes.
69. means [om. ,]
71. fair | fair
73. untimely[.]

Messenger. Curtis.
78. you[,]

8o. speak
81. seen
83. think : six
84. Than those
85. he
86. first
88. looks
89. brown, than black; stern,
90. shews | fearless,
91. eyes[,] | fair | him[.]
92. Lion, | looks[:]
93. black
95. Arm'd
96. Bauldrick[:] |frowns
97. seal | Will
98. Soldiers
99. hast | describ'd
100. deal

IOI. Methinks,
102. speak
103. ghess
105. honor
106. He's | bigger [om.,] than
107. his
108. Grape)
109. doubt[,]
III. own : in's | appears
III. fair

II3. extreams)
114. arm Fear

II5. shews | temper,
116. hair'd, | curl'd, thick twin'd[,]
117. Nor to | in
118. Livery | Maid appears,
ing. red [om. ,]
I20. eyes [om., ]
121. meant | correct
122. honor,
123. Lips,
125. speaks,
126. all | lineaments
127. clean,
128. wears | well-steel'd |

## Gold,

130. There's
131. Body [om., ]
132. Oh [om. ,]
133. Mess[.]
134. Yes[,]
135. Methinks[.]
136. dispos'd, | shew
137. Art
138. aborn,
139. shows $\mid$ soul : | arms are
140. Lin'd | sinews : | to | shoulder[-]piece,
141. Women | conceiv'd,
142. speaks
143. Under | weight | Arms[,] | stout[-]hearted [om. ,]
144. grey ey'd,
145. yields | sharp
146. spie
147. does
148. shows | frowns, | Soldier :
149. wears | oak,
150. stuck
151. thirty.
152. bears | Charging |
emboss'd | Silver.
153. sons | honor.
154. soul[,]
155. Lady[,]
156. Kingdoms ;
157. 'Tis pity
158. Oh | soft[-]hearted | think
159. Weep | weep bloud;
160. Beauty: honor'd
(friend [om. ,]
161. Field;
162. I'll go
163. till | appear,
164. friend | royal.
165. Poor | go weep,
166. Cosin,
IV. iii. Scena Tertia.

Failor,
i. Moon,
2. Than
3. harmless | sleeps
6. piece | so e'er
7. lards | business[.]
8. Withal, fits | Look
9. She
io. on't [om. ,] | Dowen
II. down $a[:]$ | penn'd | than
12. Schoolmaster;
13. Fantastical
15. AEneas.
16. poor soul.
18. Charm,
19. piece

2I. there's | Maids
22. Livers, perisht, | pieces
23. do
24. pick Flowers | Proserpine,
25. mark
26. amiss? | farther.
27. I'll | Barly[-]break,
28. 'tis i'th'
29. Other | boiling
30. chatt'ring,
31. heed ; | hang[,]
32. Drown | 7upiter bless.
33. Us, | Cauldron
34. Usurers
35. cut[-]purses, | boil
37. brain coins?
38. Maids
39. child,
40. Navel, | Ice | to th' heart,
4r. burns, | deceiving | grie-vous
42. think, | be-lieve
43. leprous
44. I'll
45. 'Tis
46. madness, | thick, | melancholly.
47. hear | City
48. wife, howl | beast[,] | Il'd
49. oh | smoak, | one cries [om., ] oh [om., ]
50. that I ever | Arras, | howls ;
51. Garden[-]house.
52. Stars, | Fate, \&c.
53. Fay. | think | her[,]
54. mind,
56. Understand | man, e'r
58. Fay. | once[,] | hope [om., ,] fix'd
59. Gentleman
60. think
61. Pen'worth | half
63. terms.
64. intemperate|distemper'd
65. return | again
66. preordained
68. doe[,] confine
69. seem | steal | than
70. Upon | (young Sir[,]
71. Falamon[;]|eat
73. mind beats
74. 'tween | mind | pranks
75. madness[;] sing | her [om. ,] | green
76. says

77 stuck | Flowers [om. ,]
78. mistriss
79. Some | odors,
80. Sense :
81. thing [om. ,]
82. eat carve | drink
84. learn | Maids | been
85. Play-pheers ; | repair
86. mouths, | appear
87. falshood
88. falshoods
89. eat, | sleep,
90. Law,
91. seen
93. between
95. success, Florish.
V. i. Scana Prima.

Thesius, Perithous, Hippolita, Attendants.
2. Prayers :
3. Burn
6. work | honor

Palamon | Arcite,
9. strong[-]hearted enemies
ro. royal
II. nearness out[,] | between
12. hour, | Dove-like
14. all[-]fear'd | down |
stubborn
15. Ire | mortal ; | help
16. Justice,
17. I'll
19. Honor

Theseus | train.
20. glass
21. think
22. shew
23. business, were't
24. Arm | Arm :
25. $\mathrm{Coz}[$.
26. parcel \| self : then
29. antient
30. i' th' self[-]same
31. seat | so hoist
32. sails, | vessels
34. speak
35. turn, | Cosin
36. do
37. farewel.
38. Farewel

Palamon
39. Farewel
40. Kinsmen,
41. Mars,
42. seeds | fear,
43. goe
45. Lions,
46. Tygers, yea[,] | fierceness
47. Yea[,] I go I mean [om. :]
48. snails[:]
49. dragg'd | bloud, | fear
50. sticks
51. Queen
52. Camp,
53. Brim'd | aid
55. turn'd | kneel.
56. Green Neptune
57. prewarn, | havock | vast Field
58. Unearthed | proclaim, blows down,
59. Cores | pluck
60. armenipotent from both | clouds,
61. mason'd | mak'st [om.,]
62. girths | cities : | pupil,
63. Youngest | Drum,
64. laud
65. streamer,
66. o' th' | Mars
67. Pleasure.

Thunder[,] | battel, |
rise[,]
68. Oh
69. o'er-rank
70. dusty, | Titles, | heal's
71. sick
72. O'th' pleurisie | do
73. signs
74. design ;

## Palamon

75. Stars
76. day
77. goddess
78. nobleness do
79. personal | goddess
kneel
80. Hail Sovereign Queen
81. fiercest
82. weep | Girl ; | hast
83. eye-glance, | choak | Drum
84. turn th' allarm
85. Cripple
86. vassal,
87. gravity to [, omits daunce] | Batchelor
88. boys Bonfires
89. seventy,
90. scorn | throat
91. young lays | Love;
92. than $\mid$ fires
93. scorch | mortal | huntress
94. moist ! say[,]
95. vow'd Soldier, | do bear \| yoak
96. 'twere
97. Than | it self,
98. been foul[-]mouth'd | Law,
99. Ne'er reveal'd
100. ken'd | practis'd
101. Upon Libels read
102. liberal | feasts
103. beauty,
III. ask'd 'em
104. 't were

II4. eighty
115. Lass | fourteen | 'twas
116. Cramp
117. foot
119. globy eies,
120. drawn | spheres,
122. young fair Sphere
123. Believ'd
124. believe | brief
125. prate[,]
127. Rejoycer[.]
128. do
129. foulest | concealments
132. than $\mid$ Oh | goddess
134. bless $\mid$ sign

Musick | seen | again
136. Oh | eleven [om. ,] | ninety reign'st
137. mortal bosoms, $\mid$ Chase
138. Herds | Game; | thanks
139. fair |laid
140. arms
141. body | business[;]
142. goddess: Musick
hair | white[,] holding
| train,|hair| stuck
| Flowers: | Hynd, which is conveyed odors, I Altar[,] Maids | aloof, | curt'sy | kneel.
143. Oh | shadowy, | Queen,
144. Revels,
146. wind[-]fan'd | femal Knights
147. Allow'st
148. Orders Robe. | here
149. for thine
150. green
151. look | Virgin,
152. Mistriss, | ear
153. ne'r | scurril term,
154. Ne'er
155. Season'd |fear ; this
156. vestal | I'm Bride[-]
habited[,]
157. Maiden[-]hearted[:] |

Husband
158. do
159. success,
160. guiltless
161. lose | equal
162. doome
163. to't | Queen,
165. Title | let
166. Garland,
167. file | quality

Hind | Rose[-]Tree,
169. Flows
170. bowels
172. inspir'd, | Battel
173. Virgin Flower
174. sodain $\mid$ falls
175. Flower | fall'n, | oh Mistriss
177. think | own Will ;
178. Unclaspe the Mistery:
179. Signs | gracious.
curt'sey[,]
V. ii. Scena Secunda. Faylor, I Woorr, habit |'Palamon [om. .]
2. Woo. Oh | the Maids | kept
3. half
4. Half hour | ask'd
5. eat, | kiss | told her[,]
7. 'Twas | twenty | been
8. mainly.
9. Woo.
II. hour
12. do
20. Woo.
21. confirm
22. ye | noise,
23. intreat again, do
24. Lie | ask
25. 7ail. | Doctor.
26. Yes[,] | way
27. Fail. | first[,]
28. I'th' | honesty.
29. Doct. | niceness,
30. honesty ;
31. she
33. FJail. Thank ye Doctor.
34. Doct.
35. she
36. 7ail.
37. Doctor,
38. Methinks | i' th' |

## Faylor.

39. fools :
40. physick | find

4I. Woo. | do | think | honest[,]
42. Doct.
43. eighteen.
44. Doct.
45. 'tis
46. ev'r | perceive
47. Mood | of[.]
48. Videlicet, 7 he
49. Woo. Yes

5I. do
52. melancholly humor
53. Woo. | mind[,]
Failor, | Maid.
54. Doct. You'll find I honor
55. Fail. | stays | child,
56. hour, | visit you [om. .]
57. Daugh. | thank
59. never.
60. Fail.

6I. do
62. fair one [om. .]
64. Fail.
65. often[,]
66. dances
67. Jigg, | tail
68. turns
69. Fail. indeed.
70. He'll | Morris | hour,
73. turn
74. think
75. Fail. | virtues
76. think | brought
78. Fail. read
79. fair | himself
80. Hay | Provender : that
83. 7ail.
84. poor
85. Master[,] | scornful.
86. 7ail. | Dowry
88. Oats ; | he'll ne'er
89. lisps[,]
90. Millers
91. He'll | her[,]
92. Doct. stuff
93. Fail. |curt'sie,
94. Woo. | soul
95. Maid, there's | curt'sie.
96. i' th' 1 honesty ;
97. to th' $o$ ' th
98. Doct. days journey
99. go
100. Woo. I do
ror. Stool[-]ball.
102. do.
103. Woo.
104. keep | there [om. :]
105. 'Tis
106. find
109. Besides[,] | Father
110. i' th' business
112. Woo. Do
114. poor Petticoat, | two course Smocks.
115. Woo.
117. Woo. Yes[,] | fair
i18. We'll
119. Woo.
120. fain he
121. Woo. $\mid$ do $\mid$ kiss
122. 'Tis
124. Cosin
125. Doct. | Sweet heart,
126. Cosin
127. fair
128. Do | think he'll
129. Doct.
130. Do | think
131. Fail.
132. Lord, | y'are [omits (growne,]
134. poor Chicken[,]
135. down | Meat, | Lodging[,]
136. I'll kiss | again.
137. do | you'll lose | sight[,]
138. e'er was see.
139. 7ail. | field ?
141. bear
142. Fail. I'll
144. Doct. | we'll
145. loose
146. Fail.
147. Doct. I'll | three or four days
148. I'll \|again.
150. Woo.
151. Doct. Let's
152. Woo. | Sweet[,] we'll go
153. we'll| Cards.
154. kiss
155. Woo. times[.]
157. Woo. I[,]
158. we'll sleep
159. Doct.
160. Woo.
162. Woo. | Sweet.
163. do | I'll Florish
V. iii. Tertia. | These us, Hippolita, Emilia, Perithous : | T. Tuck: Curtis.

1. I'll
2. Wren hawk | Fly,
3. Than | decision[;] ev'ry [om. ;]
4. stroke
5. falls,
6. than Blade[,]
7. enough[,] | punish'd,
8. 'gainst
9. deafing, | hear;
10. Per.
11. Honor | kind,
12. shew | pencill'd.
13. belief
14. seal'd | ear ;
15. victors meed, | garland
16. crown | Title.
17. I'd wink
18. trial | 'twere i' th'
19. only Star
20. shows
21. darkness
22. dame of horror[;] | does
23. mortal

3I. black
32. find $\mid$ self
34. whereto
35. go
36. Emil[.]
37. Knights
39. needs
41. Emil[.] Sir[,]
42. Title | Kingdom | try'd
43. self.
45. remain
46. en $\epsilon$ mies.
47. Farewel
48. Husband 'fore | self
50. two[,] | them[,]
51. Lot[,]
[for Exeunt reads] Enter Theseus, Hippolita, Perithous, Esc.
52. visag'd ;
53. Engine | sharp
55. bedfellows
57. seems | frowns
58. sometimes 'tis
59. quality
60. Melancholly
61. so does Arcite's
62. Palamon's sadness |
kind
64. sadness, | humors
65. Stick mis[-]becomingly 66. fair

Trumpets | Charge.
67. Hark how your | spirit
68. proof,
69. Arcitc [,]
70. spoiling | Oh | pity
72. do
74. Ward,

A great | noise zuithin[,] | Palamon.)
76. born
77. Than | harm,
78. cry's
79. 'twas

8o. look'd | success,
8i. Doubtless | prethee
Shout, | crying a Palamon.
84. poor
85. Upon | Picture,
86. Palanon's | left, why so [om. ,]
cry [om., ] and shout
88. side [om. ,] $\mid$ lies ;
89. clamor
90. o' th' combat.

9r. said
92. o' th'
93. general
97. metamorphos'd
99. compos'd $\mid$ man :
100. [At the foot of p. 447 in F2, the catchword "Their" is given, but at top of p. 448, "The prejudice," \&c. ; the line "Their noblenes peculier to them, gives" being left out, obviously by mistake. First restored in ed. 1778.]

## $106 \quad$ Variations in Fo 1679 , from Q: 1634

## Arcite, Arcite.

105. prethee
shout[,] | Arcite,
106. ears to th' business
107. hark
iri. Half
108. babe[;] | richness

II3. costliness | lookt
114. than
115. Than | banks | go
116. winds, | think
ir8. think
119. coming
120. poor

Theseus, Hippolita, Perithous, Arcite as Victor [om. ,] and Attendants, \&c.
122. fairest Emilia,
123. Divine
125. struck
127. grows,
129. you [om. ,] | dearest

I30. cheaply,
13I. do
132. Oh

I33. speaks | e'er
134. surely
135. batchelor, lest
136. show i' th' $\mid$ his
137. charm'd | methought
138. Sow of Lead :
139. to th' all ;
140. lose |for
142. beat ear o' th'
143. throats, $\mid$ now on the
144. again
145. out[-]breasted, | sense
146. between $\mid$ so
147. between these kinsmen ;
148. wear the Garland
149. for the subdu'd,
150. Justice
151. 'em[,] let
152. Scene's
153. joyful, | Arm
154. lose | Hippolita
155. tear
157. winning?
158. powers[,] your
159. wills $\mid$ said
161. Prince [om. ,]
162. than
163. die too[,]
164. pity
165. four | eyes | fix'd
166. needs | blind for't[,]
V. iv. Scena Quarta. Palamon | Knights pin. ion'd: Failor [om.,]| [,] \&c.
I. There's | alive [om., ,]-out[-]liv'd
2. o' th' | yea[,]i' th' self-] same
3. child ;
5. pity.
7. lothsome
8. Gout | Rheum, | hours
10. Young, | unavapper'd[,] not [om. ,] | Crimes
13. clear | dear kinsmen.
14. poor | down,
15. sold | cheap.
17. o'er
18. Title
19. certain : a grain of honor
20. o'er-weigh
21. farewel ;
22. tott'ring
23. reels
24. Come[:]
25. Banquet,
27. freedom
28. does
31. Fail. Sir[,]
32. married
34. 'tis
35. prethee
36. piece
35. I. $\left.K^{\prime} T,\right]$ Nay[,] let's
39. maid?
40. think
42. Than | speak
44. Fail. requite
45. thankful.
46. Adieu ;

## Block.

48. Lead courageous
49. We'll | cheerfully.
within[,] | save[,] | haste
50. oh

Pirithous
51. Hold[,]| haste
54. lead.
56. do
57. tidings ear
60. wak't | dream [om. ?]
61. Cosin
63. black
64. hayr
66. goodness
67. Hear finds
69. than | For
70. pleas'd
72. t'were to' th' Musick
73. own hoofs | (For
74. Musicks
76. Spark[,]
78. The | fire[,]
79. Took
81. Forgets [-] school
train'd,
82. mannage,
83. sharp | frets
84. Than |obeyes; Seeks | foul means
85. Iad'rie, | dis-seat
86. When
87. crack, | break[,] | diff'ring
88. Dis[-]root
89. 'tween | legs, | hoofs
90. [(] on end he stands
[as if part of 1. 89].
91. Arcites[,] legs | than
93. And
94. Backward | jade | o'er,
95. load : Yet
96. 'tis [om. ,] | floats
97. He
98. appears.

Hippolita, |chair.
102. I'm
106. hour ;
108. kiss | fair | 'Tis
in. soul
III. I'll | eyes[,] | souls |
thee [om. ,]
II3. tears.
II4. honor.
115. Even
116. acknowledg

II7. thanks
ir8. play'd,
i ig. length'ned, and [om.,]
120. blissfull | you[:]
122. $\operatorname{Mars}[$,]
123. Arcite[,]
125. shew'd | Bear
128. loss
129. Dear | loss | dear

13I. conquer'd triumphs,
132. Loss:

Variations in Fo 1679, from $Q$ ? 1634 .

| 133. been | 147. hour \| dearly | 7. 'Tis \| here, |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 134. kinsman ${ }^{\text {o }}$ ' th' | 150. lack | 8. hiss [om. ,] |
| 136. proclaim'd \| restor'd | 155. bear | 9. vain, \| ye, |
| 137. stolen Jewell, |  | 12. th' tale |
| 140. Lead | EPILOGUE | 13. 'tis |
| 142. Friends. |  | 15. And |
| 143. look | 2. School Boys, | 17. We, |
| 145. we'll | 4. look |  |
| 146. hour, | 6. young | [FINIS omitted.] |

## 

BY

WILLIAM SHAKSPERE AND JOHN FLETCHER.

## THE

## TW0 NOBLE KINSMEN.

BY

## WILLIAM SHAKSPERE AND JOHN FLETCHER.

## Edited from the Quarto of 1634

BY

> HAROLD LITTLEDALE.

PART I.
REVISED TEXT AND NOTES.
$\qquad$

PUBLISHT FOR
The Newo Slakspere Soriety
BY N. TRÜBNER \& CO., 57, 59, LUDGATE HILL,

$$
\text { LONDON, E.C., } 1876 .
$$

## Srriss II. 8.

## DRAMATIS PERSON $A$.

## Theseus, duke of Athens.

Pirithous, an Athenian general.
Artesius, an Athenian captain.
$\left.\begin{array}{l}\text { Palamon, } \\ \text { Arcite, }\end{array}\right\}$ nephews to Creon king of Thebes.
Valerius, a Theban nobleman.
Six Knights.
Herald.
Jailor.
Wooer to the Jailor's Daughter.
Doctor.
$\left.\begin{array}{l}\text { Brother } \\ \text { Friends }\end{array}\right\}$ to the Jailor.
Gentleman.
Gerrold, a schoolmaster.

Hippolyta, an Amazon, bride to Theseus.
Emilita, her sister.
Three Queens.
Jailor's Daughter.
Waiting-women to Emilia.

Countrymen, Messengers, a man personating Hymen, Boy, Executioner, Guard, and Attendants. Country wenches, and women personating Nymphs.

Scene-Athens and the neighbourhood, except in part of the first act, where it is Thebes and the neighbourhood.

Dramatis Persona] Dyce; given imperf. in Gaoler. Waiting-women] L. D. F.; no list in Q. failor.] L. D. Waiting-woman

## PROLOGUE.

Florifh.] $\quad E w$ playes and maydenheads are neare akin; Much follow'd loth, for loth much money gi'en, If they fand found and well: and a good play,
4 Whofe modefl fcenes $1 / 1 u / h$ on his marriage-day, And Shake to loofe his honour, is like hir
That after holy tye and firft nights fiir, Yet fitll is modeffie, and fiill retaines
8 More of the maid to fight than husland's paines; We pray our play may le fo ; for I'm fure
It has a nolle lreeder and a pure,
A learned, and a poet never went
12 More famous yet twixt Po and filver Trent:
Chaucer-of all admir'd—the story gives;
There conftant to eternity it lives.
If we let fall the nollenefle of this,
16 And the firft found this child heare le a hịfe,
How will it /hake the lones of that good man,
And make him cry from under ground, " $O$, fan
From me the uitles chaffe of fuch a urighter
20 That blaftes my layes, and my fam'd workes makes lighter
Then Rolin Hood!'" This is the feare ue l-ring ;
For, to fay truth, it were an endlefe thing,
And too amlitious, to afpire to him,
24 Weake as we are, and almoft l-reathlefie furm
In this deepe u'ater. Do lut you hold out
Your helping hands, and we flall take aliout,
And fomething doe to fave us. You Jhall heare
28 Scenes, though lelow his art, may yet appeare
Worth two houres' travell. To his lones fweet Лeepe!
Content to you! If this play doe not keepe
A little dull time from us, we perceave
32 Our loffes fall fo thicke, ue mufi needs leave.
[Florifh.

Knight omits this prol. entirely.
23. him, ] L. Q. him ; D. him.
25. water. Do] Q. D. water, do
26. take] Q. $=$ F. etc. tack
29. travell.] Q. D. travail.

# THE TWO NOBLE Kinfmen. 

## ACT I.

[l. 1]
[Scene I. Athens. Before a temple.]
Enter Hymen with a torch burning: a Boy, in a white robe, lefore, finging and fireuing flowers. After Hymen, a Nimph, encompaft in her trẹfes, learing a wheaten garland. Then Thefeus, betweene two other Nimphs with wheaten Chaplets on their heades. Then Hippolyta, the lride, led by [Pirithous], and another holding a garland over her head, her treffes likewife hanging. After her, Emilia, holding up her traine. [Artesius and Attendants.]

## The Song.

[Muficke.


Ofes, their תlarpe fpines leing gone, Not royall in their fimels alone, But in their heu.
Maiden pinckes, of odour faint,
Dazies fmel-lefle, yet moft quaint, And Jweet time true.
Prim-rofe, firft-lorne child of Ver,
Merry fpring-time's herlinger
With her lels dimme.
Oxlips, in their cradles growing,
Mary-golds, on death-leds llowing,
Larkes'-heeles trimme.

[^1]$\square$
8

12

Hippolyta, . . led by Pirithous] S. etc. O. Edd. Ty. Nicholson, lead by Theseus (Edd. led)
7. Prim-rose, first-borne child] Edd. Q. Prim-rose first borne,
8. herbinger With] L. om. [,] Q. sqq. Herbinger, With
9. her bels] Q. F. etc. (bells/, except Sk. hair-bells
$+$ The Two Nolle Kinfmen.
[I. r] All deere Nature's children fweete, Ly fore bride and bridegroome's feete, Blefling their Sence!
16 Not an angel of the aire,
Bird melodious or lird faire,
[Be] alfent hence!
The crow, the Лaundrous cuckoe, nor
20 The loding raven, nor [chough hore,]
Nor chattring pie,
May on our bridehoufe pearch or fing,
Or with them any difcord bring,
24 But from it fly!
Enter three Queenes in llacke, with vailes flaind, with imperiall crownes. The firft Queene fals downe at the foote of Thefeus; the second fals downe at the foote of Hippolyta; the third lefore Emilia.
I. Qu. For pittie's fake and true gentilitie's,

Heare, and refpect me!
2. Qu.

Qu. For your mother's fake,
And as you wifh your womb may thrive with faire ones, 28 Heare, and refpect me!
3. Qu. Now, for the love of him whom Jove hath markd The honour of your bed, and for the fake Of cleere virginity, be advocate
32 For us and our diftreffes! This good deede
Shall raze you out o' th' booke of trefpaffes
All you are fet downe there.
Thef. Sad lady, rife.
Hip. Stand up.
Emil.
No knees to me:
36 What woman I may fteed that is diftreft
Does bind me to her.
13. sweet, Lie]
sweete-Ly
16. angel] Edd.
F. sqq.
C. Lye
Q.
18. Be absent] S. etc.
O. Edd. Is absent 20. chough hoar] S. etc. Q. Clough het F. Clough he T. Clough he

## I. I.] <br> The Two Noble Kinfmen.

Thef. What's your requeft? Deliver you for all.
[I. I]
I Qu. We are three queenes, whofe foveraignes fel before
The wrath of cruell Creon; who [endure]40

The beakes of ravens, tallents of the kights,
And pecks of crowes, in the fowle feilds of Thebs.
He will not fuffer us to burne their bones,
To urne their athes, nor to take th' offence $4+$
Of mortall loathfomenes from the bleft eye
Of holy Phœbus, but infects the windes
With ftench of our flaine lords. O pitty, duke!
Thou purger of the earth, draw thy feard fword48

That does good turnes to th' world ; give us the bones
Of our dead kings, that we may chappell them;
And of thy boundles goodnes, take fome note
That for our crowned heades we have no roofe
Save this, which is the lyon's, and the beare's,
And vault to every thing!
TheS. Pray you, kneele not:
I was tranfported with your fpeech, and fuffer'd 56
Your knees to wrong themfelves. I have heard the fortunes
Of your dead lords, which gives me fuch lamenting
As wakes my vengeance and revenge for 'em.
King Capaneus was your lord, the day
That he fhould marry you, at fuch a feafon
As now it is with me, I met your groome
By Mars's altar ; you were that time faire,
Not Juno's mantle fairer then your treffes,
Nor in more bounty fpread her; your wheaten wreathe
Was then nor threafhd nor blafted; fortune at you
Dimpled her cheeke with fmiles ; Hercules our kinefman-
Then weaker than your eies-laide by his club;
He tumbled downe upon his [nemean] hide,

[^2]63. Mars's] F. Q. Marsis
65. spread her] Edd. S. om. her
69. Nemean ] S. O.Edd. Nenuan
S.
on his
[I. I] And fwore his finews thawd. $O$, greife and time, Fearefull confumers, you will all devoure
72 I Qu. O I hope fome God,
Some God hath put his mercy in your mauhood, Whereto hee'l infure powre, and preffe you forth Our undertaker!

Thef. O no knees, none, widdow !
76 Unto the helmeted Bellona ufe them, And pray for me, your fouldier. Troubled I am.
[Turnes away. 2 Qu. Honoured Hippolyta, Moft dreaded Amazonian, that haft flaine 80 The fith-tuskd bore; that, with thy arme as ftrong As it is white, waft neere to make the male To thy fex captive, but that this thy lordBorne to uphold creation in that honour 84. Firft nature ftilde it in-fhrunke thee into The bownd thou waft ore-flowing, at once fubduing Thy force and thy affection ; foldiereffe, That equally canft poize fternenes wih pitty;
88 [Who] now, I know, haft much more power on him
Then e'er he had on thee, who ow'ft his ftrength And his love too, who is a fervant for The tenour of [thy] speech; deere glaffe of ladies, 92 Bid him that we, whom flaming war doth fcortch, Under the fhaddow of his fword may coole us; Require him he advance it ore our heades; Speak't in a woman's key: like fuch a woman 96 As any of us three ; weepe ere you faile ;

Lend us a knee;
But touch the ground for us no longer time
Then a dove's motion when the head's pluckt off;
100 Tell him if he i' th' blood-cizd field lay fwolne, Showing the fun his teeth, grinning at the moone,

## I. 1.] The Two Noble Kinfmen. 7

What you would doe!
Hip. Poore lady, fay no more :
I had as leife trace this good action with you
As that whereto I'm going, and nev'r yet
104
Went I fo willing, way. My lord is taken
Heart deepe with your diftreffe : let him confider ;
Ile fpeake anon.
3 Qu. O, my petition was [Kneele to Emilia.
Set downe in yce, which, by hot greefe uncandied, 108
Melts into drops; fo forrow, wanting forme,
Is preft with deeper matter.
Emilia.
Pray ftand up:
Your greefe is written in your cheeke.

$$
3 \text { Qu. O, woe! }
$$

You cannot reade it there; there through my teares,
Like wrinckled pebbles in a [glaffie] ftreame
You may behold 'em! Lady, lady, alacke!
He that will all the treafure know o' th' earth
Muft know the center too; he that will fifh
For my leaft minnow, let him lead his line
To catch one at my heart. O, pardon me!
Extremity, that fharpens fundry wits,
Makes me a foole.
Emil. Pray you fay nothing, pray you:
Who cannot feele nor fee the raine, being in 't,
Knowes neither wet nor dry. If that you were
The ground-peece of fome painter, I would buy you
T' inftruct me gainft a capitall greefe indeed ;
Such heart-peirc'd demonftration !--but, alas!
Being a naturall fifter of our fex,
Your forrow beates fo ardently upon me,
That it fhall make a counter-reflect gainft
128

| 105. willing, way] O.Edd. S. etc. will- | there, through |
| :---: | :---: |
| ing way. Sy. willing. Ay! Ty. willing 'way. | 113. glassie] S. sqq. glassy $Q$. glasse F. T. glass |
| 12. there through O.Edd. W. Ty. K. | 114. behold' 'm] Q. D. behold it |

[I. I] My brother's heart, and warme it to fome pitty, Though it were made of ftone: pray have good comfurt. Thef. Forward to th' temple! leave not out a jut O' th' facred ceremony.
132 I Qu. O, this celebration
Will [longer] laft, and be more coftly, then
Your suppliants' war! Remember that your fame
Knowles in th' eare o' th' world : what you doe quickly
${ }^{136}$ Is not done rafhly; your firft thought is more Then others' labour'd meditance : your premeditating More then their actions: But, oh Jove! your actions, Soone as they [moove], as afprayes doe the fifh, 140 Subdue before they touch; thinke, deere duke, thinke What beds our flaine kings have! 2 Qu.

What greifes our beds, That our deere lords have none! 3 Qu. None fit for th' dead! Thofe that with cordes, knives, drams, precipitance, 144 Weary of this world's light, have to themfelves Beene death's moft horrid agents, humaine grace Affords them duft and fhaddow.

I Qu.
But our lords
Ly bliftring fore the vifitating sunne,
148 And were good kings when living.
Thef.
It is true;
And I will give you comfort, To give your dead lords graves: the which to doe, Muft make fome worke with Creon.
I Qu. And that worke
133. lơnger] S. etc. O. Edd. Ty. long
139. moove] F. sqq. move Q. mooves
143. Drams, Precipitance, ] S. C. W. D.
O. Edd. drams precipitance, K. Sk. Cords', knives', drams' precipitance, Ty. drams-precipitance,
145. humaire] Q. F. humane T. sqq. human
149-1 50. will give . . . To give] O.Edd. S.
C. W. K. D. Ty. Se. conj., Sk. will give you Comfort, [and engage Myself and Pow'rs] to give Mason. to give . . will give Sid. Walker's arrangement : so D.('67, '76).
15I. And that zoorke] O.Edd Ty. D.('67. ${ }^{\prime} 76$ ). S. etc. Sid. Walker, work now Arrangement Walker's.

## I. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Prefents it felfe to th' doing :
Now 'twill take forme, the heates are gone to morrow ;
Then, booteles toyle muft recompence it felfe
With it's owne fweat ; now he 's fecure,
Not dreames we ftand before your puiffance,
[I. 1]

156
Wrinching our holy begging in our eyes,
To make petition cleere.
2 Qu. Now you may take him
Drunke with his victory. 3 Qu. And his army full
Of bread, and floth.
Thef. Artefius, that beft know'ft
How to draw out fit to this enterprife
The prim'ft for this proceeding, and the number
To carry fuch a bufineffe; forth and levy
Our worthieft inftruments; whilft we defpatch
164
This grand act of our life, this daring deede
Of fate in wedlocke.
I Qu. Dowagers, take hands;
Let us be widdowes to our woes; delay
Commends us to a familhing hope.
168
All Qu. Farewell!
2 Qu. We come unfeafonably; but when could greefe
Cull forth, as unpanged judgement can, fitt'ft time
For beft folicitation?
Thef. Why, good ladies,
This is a fervice, whereto I am going,
Greater then any [war]; it more imports me
Then all the actions that I have foregone,
Or futurely can cope.
I $Q u$. The more proclaiming
Our fuit fhall be neglected: when her armes,
156. Not dreames] Q. T. C. W. Ty. K. D.

Sk. F. Not dretms S. etc. Nor dreams
157. Wrinching] O.Edd. S. etc. Rinsing
159. And his] O.Edd. etc. Sid. Walker,

And 's
161. draw out fit] Q. D. out, fit 167. widdowes] Edd. Sy. conj. wedded 173. any war ;] Th. S. etc. O.Edd. Ty. any was;
[I. I] Able to locke Jove from a fynod, fhall By warranting moone-light corflet thee, $O$, when Her twynning cherries fhall their fweetnes fall 180 Upon thy taftefull lips, what wilt thou thinke Of rotten kings or blubberd queenes? what care For what thou feelft not, what thou feelft being able To make Mars fpurne his drom ? O, if thou couch 184 But one night with her, every howre in 't will Take hoftage of thee for a hundred, and Thou fhalt remember nothing more then what That banket bids thee to!

Hip.
Though much unlike
[Kneele.
188 You fhould be fo tranfported, as much forry I fhould be fuch a fuitour ; yet I thinke, Did I not by th' abftayning of my joy, Which breeds a deeper longing, cure their furfeit 192 That craves a prefent medcine, I fhould plucke All ladies' fcandall on me: therefore, Sir, As I thall here make tryall of my prayres, Either prefuming them to have fome force, 196 Or fentencing for aye their vigour dombe,

Prorogue this bufines we are going about, and hang
Your fheild afore your heart, about that necke
Which is my fee, and which I freely lend
200 To doe thefe poore queenes fervice.
All Qu.
Oh helpe now !
Our caule cries for your knee.
Emil.
If you grant not
[Kneele.
My fifter her petition, in that force,
With that celerity and nature, which
204 Shee makes it in, from henceforth Ile not dare
To aske you any thing, nor be fo hardy
Ever to take a husband.
Thef. Pray, fand up:
I am entreating of my felfe to doe
179. twynning] L. Q. twyning F. T. twining Th. etc. twinning

## I. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinfinen. <br> II

That which you kneele to have me.-Pirithous,
Leade on the bride : get you and pray the Gods
For fucceffe and returne ; omit not any thing
In the pretended celebration.-Queenes,
Follow your soldier. [To Artefius.] As before, hence you,
And at the banckes of [Aulis] meete us with
The forces you can raife, where we fhall finde
The moytie of a number, for a bufines
More bigger lookt. Since that our theame is hafte,
I ftamp this kiffe upon thy currant lippe;
Sweete, keepe it as my token. Set you forward;
For I will fee you gone. [Exit Artefius.
Farewell my beauteous sifter. Pirithous,
Keepe the feaft full ; bate not an howre on 't.
Pir. Sir,
Ile follow you at heeles: the feaft's folempnity
Shall want till your returne.
Thef. Cofen, I charge you
Boudge not from Athens; we fhall be returning
Ere you can end this feaft, of which, I pray you,
Make no abatement. Once more, farewell all.
I Qu. Thus doft thou ftill make good
The tongue o' th' world.
2 Qu. And earn'ft a deity
Equal with Mars.
3 Qu. If not above him; for
Thou being but mortall, mak'ft affections bend
To godlike honours ; they themfelves, fome fay,
Grone under fuch a maftry.
Thef. As we 're men,
Thus fhould we doe; being fenfually fubdude,
212. Follow your soldier. As before, hence] M. W. D. Sk. Q. F. S. C. Follow your Soldier (as before) hence you (T. Soldiers) K. Ty. soldier, as before; hence
213. Aulis] Th. S. etc. O.Edd. Anly Ingleby, Auly Heath, Ilisse Se. conj.

At the Gates, or Port, or Back, of Aulis 216. bigger lookt] Q. F. T. sqq. bigger look'd D. bigger-look'd
223. want ] O.Edd. etc. S. (approved by Sid. Walker) wait
226-9] Sid. Walker's arrangement, D.('67, '76).
[I. I] We loofe our humane tytle. Good cheere, ladies!
Now turne we towards your comforts. [Florifh. Exeunt.
[I. 2] Scene II. [Theles. The court of the palace.]
Enter Palamon and Arcite.
Arcite. Deere Palamon, deerer in love then blood, And our prime cofen, yet unhardned in The crimes of nature; let us leave the citty
4 Thebs, and the temptings in 't, before we further Sully our gloffe of youth:
And here to keepe in abftinence we fhame As in incontinence ; for not to fwim 8 I' th' aide o' th' current, were almoft to fincke, At leaft to fruftrate ftriving ; and to follow The common ftreame, 'twold bring us to an edy Where we fhould turne or drowne; if labour through, 12 Our gaine but life and weakenes.

Pal. Your advice
Is cride up with example: what frange ruins, Since firft we went to fchoole, may we perceive Walking in Thebs? Skars and bare weedes 16 The gaine o' th' martialift, who did propound

To his bold ends, honour and golden ingots, Which though he won, he had not; and now flurted By peace for whom he fought. Who, then, fhall offer 20 To Mars's fo-fcornd altar? I doe bleede

When fuch I meete, and wifh great Juno would
Refume her ancient fit of jelouzie,
To get the foldier worke, that peace might purge
24 For her repletion, and retaine anew
Her charitable heart, now hard, and harfher
Then ftrife or war could be.
Arc.
Are you not out ?

[^3]
## I. 2.] <br> The Two Noble Kinfmen. <br> 13

Meete you no ruine but the foldier in
[I. 2]
The cranckes and turnes of Thebs ? You did begin As if you met decaies of many kindes:
Perceive you none that doe arowfe your pitty,
But th' unconfiderd foldier ?
Pal. Yes; I pitty

Decaies where ere I finde them ; but fuch moft 32
That, fweating in an honourable toyle
Are paide with yce to coole 'em. Arc. 'Tis not this
I did begin to fpeake of; this is vertue
Of no refpect in Thebs; I fpake of Thebs,
How dangerous, if we will keepe our honours,
It is for our refyding ; where every evill
Hath a good cullor ; where every feeming good' A certaine evill; where not to be ev'n jumpe40

As they are here, were to be ftrangers, and Such things to be, meere monfters.

Pal.
'Tis in our power-
Unleffe we feare that apes can tutor's-to
Be mafters of our manners: what neede I
Affect anothers gate, which is not catching
Where there is faith ? or to be fond upon
Anothers way of fpeech, when by mine owne I may be reafonably conceiv'd, fav'd too,48

Speaking it truly ? why am I bound
By any generous bond to follow him
Followes his taylor, haply fo long untill
The follow'd make purfuit? or let me know
Why mine owne barber is unbleft, with him
My poore chinne too, for 'tis not cizard juft
To fuch a favorite's glaffe? What cannon is there
That does command my rapier from my hip,
To dangle't in my hand, or to go tip-toe

[^4][I. 2] Before the ftreete be foule? Either I am
The fore-horfe in the teame, or I am none
60 That draw i' th' fequent trace. Thefe poore fleight fores
Neede not a plantin; that which rips my bofome,
Almoft to th' heart's-
Arc. Our uncle Creon. Pal. He,
A moft unbounded tyrant, whofe fucceffes
64 Makes heaven unfeard, and villany affured
Beyond its power there's nothing; almoft puts
Faith in a feavour, and deifies alone
Voluble chance; who onely attributes
68 The faculties of other inftruments
To his owne nerves and act; commands men fervice,
And what they winne in 't, boot and glory; [one]
That feares not to do harm ; good, dares not ; let
72 The blood of mine that's fibbe to him, be fuckt
From me with leeches; let them breake and fall
Off me with that corruption! Arc.

Cleere-fpirited cozen,
Let's leave his court, that we may nothing fhare
76 Of his lowd infamy ; for our milke
Will relifh of the pafture, and we muft
Be vile or difobedient; not his kinfmen
In blood, unleffe in quality. Pal.

Nothing truer:
80 I thinke the ecchoes of his fhames have deaft
The eares of heav'nly juftice : widdows' cryes
61. rips] Q. etc. F. T. tips
63. successes] O.Edd. etc. Heath, K. success
64. Makes] O.Edd. K. Ty. S. etc. Make S. C. Ty. Sk. assur'd, Beyond
65. power there's nothing ;] S. D. Sk. O. Edd. power : there's nothing, almost C. power ; there's nothing almost Ty. power there's nothing-almost
66. feavour] Q. etc. Th. conj. Fear
67. chance ;] D. Ty. O. Edd. chance,
K. chance- S. W. Sk. Chance :
69. men service] O. Edd. S. sqq. men's service C.(1778). mens' C.(I8II). men's
70. boot and glory; one] Ingram. (Daniel Qo.) boot and glory on That (T. C. D. Qo.) F. T. Ty. on ; That S. etc. Boot and Glory too ; That Nicholson, boots and glories on:
71. good, dares not; ] O.Edd. S. C. W. K. D. Ty. Sk. good dares not:

## I. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Defcend againe into their throates, and have not [I. 2]
Due audience of the gods.-Valerius! [Enter Valerius.
Val. The king cals for you; yet be leaden-footed,
Till his great rage be off him : Phœbus when
He broke his whipftocke, and exclaimd againft
The horfes of the fun, but whifperd, to
The lowdenefle of his fury.
Pal. Small windes fhake him!
But what's the matter ?
Val. Thefeus-who where he threates appals-hath fent
Deadly defyance to him, and pronounces
Ruine to Thebs; who is at hand to feale
The promife of his wrath.
Arc.
Let him approach :
But that we feare the gods in him, he brings not
A jot of terrour to us: yet what man
Thirds his owne worth-the cafe is each of ours-
When that his action's dregd with minde affurd
'Tis bad he goes about?
Pal.
Leave that unreafond;
Our fervices ftand now for Thebs, not Creon :
Yet to be neutrall to him were difhonour,
Rebellious to oppofe; therefore we muft
With him ftand to the mercy of our fate,
Who hath bounded our laft minute.
Arc. So we muft.-
Is't fed this warres a foote? or it thall be, 104
On faile of fome condition?
Val. 'Tis in motion;
Th' intelligence of fate came in the inftant
With the defier.
Pal. Let's to the king; who, were he
A quarter carrier of that honour which
His enemy come in, the blood we venture
Should be as for our health; which were not fpent,
[I. 2] Rather laide out for purchafe : but, alas!
II2 Our hands advanc'd before our hearts, what will The fall o' th' ftroke doe damage ?

Arc. Let th' event,
That never-erring arbitratour, tell us
When we know all ourfelves, and let us follow II6 The becking of our chance.
[I. 3] Scene III. [Before the gates of Athens.]
Enter Pirithous, Hippolyta, and Emilia.
Pir. No further!
Hip. Sir, farewell: repeat my wifhes
To our great lord, of whofe fucces I dare not
Make any timerous queftion ; yet I wifh him
4 Exces and overflow of power, an't might be
To [dare] ill-dealing fortune. Speede to him;
Store never hurtes good governours. Pir.

Though I know
His ocean needes not my poore drops, yet they
8 Muft yeild their tribute there. My precious maide,
Thofe beft affections that the heavens infufe
In their beft-temperd peices, keepe enthroand
In your deare heart!
Emil. Thanckes, fir! Remember me
2 To our all-royall brother; for whofe fpeede
The great Bellona Ile follicite; and
Since, in our terrene fate, petitions are not
Without giftes underftood, He offer to her
10 What I fhall be advifed the likes. Our hearts
Are in his army, in his tent.
Hip.
In 's bofome.
We have bin foldiers, and wee cannot weepe
When our friends don their helmes, or put to fea,
5. dare] Se. Sy. conj., Heath. D. Sk.
Nicholson. S. C. cure O.Edd. Mason.
W. K. dure Ty. 'dure Se. conj. T'outdure or T'out-dare or To dare

## I. 3.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen <br> 17

Or tell of babes broachd on the launce, or women
[I. 3]
That have fod their infants in-and after eate them-
The brine they wept at killing 'em; then, if
You ftay to fee of us fuch fpinfters, we
Should hold you here for ever.
Pir. Peace be to you,
As I purfue this war! which fhall be then
Beyond further requiring.
[Exit Pir. Emil. How his longing
Followes his friend! fince his depart, his fportes,
Though craving ferioufnes and skill, paft flightly
His careles execution, where nor gaine
Made him regard, or loffe confider; but
Playing [one] bufines in his hand, another
Directing in his head, his minde nurfe equall
To thefe fo diffring twyns. Have you obferv'd him
Since our great lord departed ?
Hip. With much labour ;
And I did love him for 't. They two have cabind
In many as dangerous as poore a corner,
Perill and want contending; they have skift
Torrents, whofe roring tyranny and power
I' th' leaft of thefe was dreadfull; and they have
Fought out together, where death's felfe was lodgd;
Yet fate hath brought them off. Their knot of love
Tide, weav'd, intangled, with fo true, fo long,
And with a finger of fo deepe a cunning
May be outworne, never undone. I thinke
Thefeus cannot be umpire to himfelfe,
Cleaving his confcience into twaine, and doing
Each fide like juftice, which he loves beft.
Emil.
Doubtleffe
27. sports] Edd. Coleridge conj. imports 3I. Playingone] M. (Heath MS.) sqq. Q. ore F. T. S. C. o'er
36. dangerous as poor] D.('67, '76) Sk. conj. Edd. dangerous, as poor $l \quad 2$
37. contending ; they] D. Sk. O.Edd. etc. contending, they
39. least of these] Edd. Se. conj. best of Ships were
40. Fought] Edd. L. quer. Sought
[I. 3] There is a beft, and reafon has no manners
To fay it is not you. I was acquainted Once with a time, when I enjoyd a play-fellow; You were at wars, when the the grave enrichd, 52 Who made too proud the bed, tooke leave o' th' mooneWhich then lookt pale at parting-when our count Was each eleven.

Hip. 'Twas [Flavina.]
Emil. Yes
You talke of Pirithous' and Thefeus' love: 56 Theirs has more ground, is more maturely feafond, More buckled with ftrong judgement, and their needes
2. Hearfes rea- The one of th' other may be faid to water dy, with Pala-
mon and Arcite : the 3. And fhee I figh and fpoke of, were things innocent, Queenes, Theseus, and Loy'd for we did, and like the elements his Lordes That know not what nor why, yet doe effect ready. Rare iffues by their operance, our foules
64 Did fo to one another: what the lik'd Was then of me approov'd; what not, condemd, No more arraignement ; the flowre that I would plucke And put betweene my breafts, O -then but beginning
68 To fwell about the bloffome-flhe would long Till thee had fuch another, and commit it To the like innocent cradle, where, Phœnix-like, They dide in perfume; on my head no toy $7_{2}$ But was her patterne; her affections-pretty, Though happely her careles [wear]-I followed For my moft ferious decking; had mine eare Stolne fome new aire, or at adventure humd [one]
54. each eleven] F. sqq. Q. each a eleven Flavina] S. sqq. Q. Flauia F. T. Flavia
67. oh (then . . blossome)] O.Edd. S. (oh then C. sqq. (oh, then Sid. Walker, Ty. oh! (then . . D. (' 67, '76) om. oh
72. (pretty, . . . her careless wear)] C. sqq. Q. happely, her careles, were, [om. ) ]. F. happily, her careless, were, I T.
careless were, Sy. conj. (I) (so Dodd, Beaut. of Sh. I. 92,C) they careless were) I (2) her careless Wear I S. affection ; her Pretty, tho' haply careless Wear, I Dodd conj. her affect; her Lamb, hers careless were
75. humm'd one] C.etc. Q. humd on F. T. S. W. humm'd on Ty. hum'd on

## I. 3, 4.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. <br> 19

From muficall coynadge, why, it was a note
[I. 3]
Whereon her fpirits would fojourne,-rather dwell on,-
And fing it in her flumbers: this rehearfall-
Which, ev'ry innocent wots well, comes in
Like old importments baftard-has this end,
80
That the true love tweene mayde and mayde may be
More then in fex [dividuall.]
Hip. $\quad \mathrm{Y}^{\prime}$ are out of breath ;
And this high-fpeeded pace is but to fay,
That you fhall never-like the maide Flavina- 84
Love any that's calld man.
Emil. I'm fure I fhall not.
Hip. Now, alacke! weake fifter,
I muft no more beleeve thee in this point-
Though in 't I know thou doft beleeve thy felfe-
Then I will truft a fickely appetite,
That loathes even as it longs. But, fure, my fifter, If I were ripe for your perfwafion, you
Have faide enough to fhake me from the arme
Of the all noble Thefeus, for whofe fortunes
I will now in and kneele, with great affurance
That we, more then his Pirithous, poffeffe
The high throne in his heart.
Emil. I am not
Againft your faith; yet I continew mine. [Cornets. Exeunt.

## Scene IV. [A field before Thebes.]

A battaile ftrooke within: then a retrait : florifh. Then enter Theseus (victor), [Herald, and Attendants.] The three Queenes meete [Theseus], and fall on their faces lefore him. I $Q u$. To thee no ftarre be darke!
2 Qu.
Both heaven and earth
79. every innocent $]$ Lamb. W. sqq. Q. fury-innocent wots well) comes in Like old importments bastard, has this end, F. T. (as Q. with varr. fury [om. - ] innocent . . importments[-]bastard[, T.] . . end[;]). Sy. S. C. surely Innocence
wots well) Mason, (Which fury innocent, wot I well, . . . old emportment's bastard)
82. dividual] S. sqq. Q. individuall $\mathbf{F}$.
T. individual

96-7] Dyce's arrangement.
[1. 4] Friend thee for ever!
3 Qu. All the good that may
Be wifhd upon thy head, I cry amen to 't!
4 Thef. Th' imparciall gods, who from the mounted heavens
View us their mortall heard, behold who erre,
And in their time chaftice. Goe, and finde out
The bones of your dead lords, and honour them
8 With treble ceremonie: rather then a gap
Should be in their deere [rites,] we would fupply 't.
But thofe we will depute which fhall inveft
You in your dignities, and even each thing
12 Our haft does leave imperfect. So, adiew, [Exeunt Queenes.
And heavens good eyes looke on you! What are thofe?
Herald. Men of great quality, as may be judgd
By their appointment ; some of Thebs have told 's
16 They 're fifters' children, nephewes to the king.
Thef. By th' helme of Mars, I faw them in the war, Like to a paire of lions fmeard with prey,
Make lanes in troopes agaft: I fixt my note
20 Conftantly on them; for they were a marke
Worth a god's view. What [was 't that prifoner] told me
When I enquired their names ?
Herald.
We 'leave, they 're called
Arcite and Palamon.
Thef. 'Tis right; thofe, thofe.
24 They are not dead?
Her. Nor in a fate of life: had they bin taken
3. Hearfes When their laft hurts were given, 'twas poffible ready. They might have bin recovered; yet they breathe, 28 And have the name of men.

Thef. Then like men ufe 'em :
9. rites] D. Q. rights
18. smear'd] F. T. S. W. K. D. 'Ty. Sk. (Brit. Mus., Camb. Univ., Trin. Coll. Dub.) Qq. smeard (Colman's, Dyce's, P. A. Daniel's) Qq. succard C. succour'd
21. what was't that prisoner] D. K.('67)

Sk. O.Edd. etc. K.('4I) what prisoner was't that
22. We'leave] L. O.Edd. We leave S. C. W. K. Sk. With leave D.('46) Wi' leave Ty. We leave; they Heath, D.('67, '76) We learn Ingleby conj. Believe L. conj. 'lieve
I. 4, 5.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. ..... 21The very lees of fuch, millions of rates,[I. 4]Exceede the wine of others: all our furgionsConvent in their behoofe; our richeft balmes,
Rather then niggard, waft : their lives concerne us ..... 32Much more then Thebs is worth : rather then have 'emFreed of this plight, and in their morning ftate,Sound and at liberty, I would 'em dead;
But, forty thoufand fold, we had rather have 'em ..... 36Prifoners to us then death. Beare 'em fpeedilyFrom our kinde aire,-to them unkinde,-and minifterWhat man to man may doe; for our fake more,Since I have knowne frights, fury, friends' beheafts,40
Loves' provocations, zeale, a miftris' taske,
Defire of liberty, a feavour, madnes,Hath fet a marke-which nature could not reach toWithout fome impofition,-ficknes in will,44Or wraftling ftrength in reafon. For our love,And great Apollo's mercy, all our beftTheir beft skill tender! Leade into the citty;Where, having bound things fcatterd, we will poft 48To Athens [fore] our army. [Florifh. Exeunt.
Scene V. [Another part of the same, more remote from Theles.]

Enter the Queenes with the hearfes of their knightes, in a funerall folempnity, Evc.

Urnes and odours lring away!
[Muficke.
Vapours, fighes, darken the day!
40. frights, fury, friends' beheasts] S. (Friends Behests) W. K.('4r) frights, fury, friends' behests F. T. frights; fury, O.Edd. C. Ty. friends, behests (Q. beheastes) Heath, fights, fury D. K.('67) Sk. fight's fury, friends' behests 41. Loves' provocations] S. W. K.('67) D. Sk. O.Edd. C. Ty. Loves, provocations zeal, a mistris' task,] C. sqq. mistress' task S. mistress task Q. mistris Taske D. K.('67) Sk. zeal [in] a mistress' task
42. liberty, a feavour, madness, ] Edd. Sk. liberty-a fever, madness-Hath
43. Hath] O.Edd. K.('4I) Ty. Sk. S. C. W. D. K. ('67) 'T hath Heath, Have S. C. arranged 42-45: madness, Sickness in will, or ... reason; 'T hath set . . . reach to Without some imposition 43, 44.] L. Edd. omit the marks of parenthesis.
49. 'fore] S. sqq. O.Edd. for
[I. 5] Our dole more deadly lookes than dying;
4 Balmes, and gummes, and heavy cheeres,
Sacred vials fill'd with teares,
And clamors through the wild ayre flying!
Come all fad and Solempne Jhowes,
8 That are quick-eyd pleafure's foes!
We convent nought elfe but woes:
We convent, Evc.
3 Qu. This funeral path brings to your houfhold's grave:
12 Joy ceaze on you againe! Peace fleepe with him!
$2 Q u$. And this to yours.
I $Q u$.
Yours this way. Heavens lend A thoufand differing waies to one fure end.
$3 Q u$. This world's a citty full of ftraying ftreetes, 16 And death's the market-place, where each one meetes.
[Exeunt Severally.

## ACT II.

[II. I] Scene I. [Athens. A garden, with a cafile in the lack-grouind.]

## Enter Jailor and Wooer.

Jail. I may depart with little, while I live; fome thing I may caft to you, not much. Alas! the prifon I keepe, though it be for great ones, yet they feldome come; before one 4 falmon, you fhall take a number of minnowes. I am given out to be better lyn'd then it can appeare to me report is a true feaker: I would I were really that I am deliverd to be. Marry, what I have-be it what it will-I will affure upon my 8 daughter at the day of my death.

Woo. Sir I demaund no more then your owne offer; and I will eftate your daughter in what I have promifed.
3. looks than dying;] D. Q. looks than dying [om. ; ] F. T. looks, than dying [om. ; ] C. etc. dying[!] S. Ty. looks than dying[,]
6. wild] O.Edd. Sid. Walker conj. wide
II. grave:] Q. K. D. Ty. Sk. F. graver [om. :] T. S. Graves, C. W. graves :
5. appeare to me] Edd. Q. Ty. appeare, to me

## II. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. 23

Jail. Wel, we will talke more of this when the folemnity is [II. I] paft. But have you a full promife of her ? when that fhall be 12 feene, I tender my confent. [Enter Daughter.

Woo. I have, fir. Here fhee comes.
Jail. Your friend and I have chanced to name you here, upon the old bufines; but no more of that now, fo foone as 16 the court hurry is over, we will have an end of it: $i$ ' th' meane time, looke tenderly to the two prifoners; I can tell you they are princes.

Daugh. Thefe ftrewings are for their chamber. 'Tis pitty 20 they are in prifon, and 'twere pitty they fhould be out. I doe thinke they have patience to make any adverfity afham'd; the prifon it felfe is proud of 'em; and they have all the world in their chamber.

Jail. They are fam'd to be a paire of abfolute men.
Daugh. By my troth, I think fame but ftammers 'em ; they stand a greife above the reach of report.

Jail. I heard them reported in the battaile to be the only 28 doers.

Daugh. Nay, moft likely; for they are noble fuffrers. I mervaile how they would have lookd, had they beene victors, that, with fuch a conftant nobility, enforce a freedome out or 32 bondage, making mifery their mirth, and affliction a toy to jeft at.

Jail. Doe they fo ?
Daugh. It feemes to me they have no more fence of their 36 captivity then I of ruling Athens: they eate well, looke merrily, difcourfe of many things, but nothing of their owne reftraint and difafters. Yet fometime a devided figh, martyrd as 't were $i$ ' th' deliverance, will breake from one of them; 40 when the other prefently gives it fo fweete a rebuke, that I could wifh my felfe a figh to be fo chid, or at leaft a figher to be comforted.

Woo. I never faw 'em.

[^5][II. I] Jail. The duke himfelfe came privately in the night, and fo did they, what the reafon of it is, I know not. [Enter Palamon and Arcite, alove.] Looke, yonder they are! that's 48 Arcite lookes out.

Daugh. No, fir, no; that's Palamon : Arcite is the lower of the twaine ; you may perceive a part of him.

Jail. Goe to! leave your pointing ; they would not make $5^{2}$ us their object ; out of their fight.

Daugh. It is a holliday to looke on them. Lord, the diffrence of men.

## Scene II. [The same.]

Enter Palamon and Arcite [above].

Pal. How doe you, noble cofen?
Arc.
How doe you, fir?
Pal. Why, ftrong inough to laugh at mifery,
And beare the chance of warre yet. We are prifoners
4 I feare for ever, cofen.
Arc. I beleeve it;
And to that deftiny have patiently
Laide up my houre to come.
Pal.
Oh cofen Arcite,
Where is Thebs now ? where is our noble country ?
8 Where are our friends and kindreds? Never more Muft we behold thofe comforts, never fee The hardy youthes ftrive for the games of honour, Hung with the painted favours of their ladies,
12 Like tall ships under faile ; then ftart amongtt 'em And, as an eaftwind, leave 'em all behinde us Like lazy clowdes, whilft Palamon and Arcite, Even in the wagging of a wanton leg,
16 Out-ftript the people's praifes, won the garlands, Ere they have time to wifh 'em ours. O, never Shall we two exercife, like twyns of honour,
17. have] Edd. D. queries: had

## II. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Our armes againe, and feele our fyry horfes
Like proud seas under us! Our good swords now,-
Better the red-eyd god of war nev'r [wore] -
[Ravifhd] our fides, like age, muft run to ruft, And decke the temples of thofe gods that hate us;
Thefe hands fhall never draw 'em out like lightning,
To blaft whole armies, more!
Arc. No, Palamon,
Thofe hopes are prifoners with us: here we are,
And here the graces of our youthes muft wither,
Like a too-timely fpring ; here age muft finde us,
And, which is heavieft, Palamon, unmarried;
The fweete embraces of a loving wife,
Loden with kiffes, armd with thoufand cupids,
Shall never clafpe our neckes; no iffue know us,
No figures of our felves fhall we e'er fee,
To glad our age, and like young eagles teach 'em Boldly to gaze againft bright armes, and fay
"Remember what your fathers were, and conquer!'
The faire-eyd maides fhall weepe our banifhments, And in their fongs curfe ever-blinded fortune, Till fhee for fhame fee what a wrong fhe has done To youth and nature : this is all our world;
We fhall know nothing here but one another;
Heare nothing but the clocke that tels our woes;
The vine fhall grow, but we fhall never fee it ; Sommer fhall come, and with her all delights,44

But dead-cold winter muft inhabite here ftill.
Pal. 'Tis too true, Arcite. To our Theban houndes, That fhooke the aged forreft with their ecchoes, No more now muft we halloa; no more fhake48

Our pointed javelyns, whilft the angry fwine
Flyes like a Parthian quiver from our rages,
Strucke with our well-fteeld darts : all valiant ufes-
21. wore] S. sqq. K.('41). O.Edd. were D. K.('67) ware
22. Ravish'd ${ }^{\text {2 }}$ S. sqq. Q. Bravishd F.
T. Ty. Bravish'd
51. Strucke] Q. F. T. S. C. W. K.('4I)

Ty. Struck Heath, D. K.('67) Stuck
[II. 2] The foode and nourifhment of noble mindesIn us two here fhall perifh; we fhall dieWhich is the curfe of honour-laftly, Children of greife and ignorance. Arc. Yet, cofen, 56 Even from the bottom of thefe miferies, From all that fortune can inflict upon us, I fee two comforts ryfing, two meere bleffings, If the gods pleafe, to hold here a brave patience, 60 And the enjoying of our greefes together. Whilft Palamon is with me, let me perifh If I thinke this our prifon! Pal. Certeinly
'Tis a maine goodnes, cofen, that our fortunes 64 Were twynn'd together: 'tis moft true, two foules

Put in two noble bodies, let 'em fuffer The gaule of hazard, fo they grow together, Will never fincke ; they muft not, fay they could : 68 A willing man dies fleeping, and all's done. Arc. Shall we make worthy ufes of this place, That all men hate fo much ?

Pal. How, gentle cofen ?
Arc. Let's thinke this prifon holy fanctuary, 72 To keepe us from corruption of worfe men:

We 're young, and yet defire the waies of honour ; That, liberty and common converfation, The poyfon of pure fpirits, might, like women, 76 Wooe us to wander from. What worthy bleffing Can be, but our imaginations May make it ours ? And heere being thus together, We are an endles mine to one another; 80 We are one another's wife, ever begetting
54. lastly] O.Edd. etc. S. C. (Ingleby, L., quer.) lazily
59. please, to hold here a brave] Q. Ty. (Sk. conj.) F. T. please to hold here S. please to hold here, a C. W. please
to hold here ; a brave D. K. Sk. please to hold here,-a brave
64. tzyynn'd] L. Q. twyn'd F. T. D. K.('67) Sk. twin'd S. C. K.('41) twinn'd W. Ty. twined
II. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. ..... 27
New birthes of love; we are father, friends, acquaintance; ..... [II. 2]We are, in one another, families,I am your heire, and you are mine: this placeIs our inheritance; no hard oppreffour84Dare take this from us: here, with a little patience,We fhall live long, and loving; no furfeits feeke us;The hand of war hurts none here, nor the seasSwallow their youth. Were we at liberty,88A wife might part us lawfully, or bufines;Quarrels confume us; envy of ill menCrave our acquaintance; I might ficken, cofen,Where you fhould never know it, and fo perifh92
Without your noble hand to clofe mine eies,
Or praiers to the gods; a thoufand chaunces,
Were we from hence, would feaver us.
Pal. You've made me-
I thanke you, cofen Arcite-almoft wanton ..... 96With my captivity: what a miferyIt is to live abroade, and every where !'Tis like a beaft, me thinkes: I finde the court here,
I am fure, a more content; and all thofe pleafures ..... 100
That wooe the wils of men to vanity
I fee through now ; and am fufficientTo tell the world, 'tis but a gaudy fhaddow,
That old time, as he paffes by, takes with him. ..... 104What had we bin, old in the court of Creon,Where fin is juftice, luft and ignoranceThe vertues of the great ones? Cofen Arcite,Had not the loving gods found this place for us, 108We had died as they doe, ill old men, unwept,And had their epitaphes, the people's curfes.Shall I fay more ?
Arc. I'd heare you ftill.
Pal. Ye fhall.

[^6][II. 2] Is there record of any two that lov'd
Better then we doe, Arcite?
Arc. Sure there cannot.
Pal. I doe not thinke it poffible our friendfhip
Should ever leave us.
Arc. Till our deathes it cannot;
[Enter Emilia and her Woman [lelow].
in 6 And after death our fpirits thall be led
To thofe that love eternally. Speake on, fir.
[Emil.] This garden has a world of pleafures in't.
What flowre is this ?
Wom. 'Tis calld Narciffus, madam.
120 Emil. That was a faire boy certaine, but a foole
To love himfelfe: were there not maides enough ?
Arc. Pray forward.
Pal. Yes.
Emil.
Or were they all hard hearted ?
Wom. They could not be to one fo faire.
Emil. Thou wouldft not.
124 Wom. I thinke I fhould not, madam.
Emil. That's a good wench :
But take heede to your kindnes though !
Wom. Why, madam?
Emil. Men are mad things.
Arc. Will ye goe forward, cofen ?
Emil. Canft not thou worke fuch flowers in filke, wench ?
128 Wom. Yes.
Emil. Ile have a gowne full of 'em; and of thefe;
This is a pretty colour: wilt not doe
Rarely upon a skirt, wench ?
Wom. Deinty, madam.
Arc. Cofen, Cofen! how doe you, Sir? Why, Palamon!
132 Pal. Never till now I was in prifon, Arcite.
Arc. Why, what's the matter, man ?
Pal.
Behold, and wonder!
118. Emi. This garden] S. sqq. O.Edd. Ty. give this as part of Arcite's speech.

## II. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. <br> 29

By heaven, thee is a goddeffe!
[II. 2]
Arc.
Pal.
Ha!
Doe reverence!
She is a goddeffe, Arcite!
Emil.
Of all flowres,
Me thinkes, a rofe is beft.
136
Wom. Why, gentle madam ?
Emil. It is the very embleme of a maide:
For when the weft wind courts her gently
How modeftly fhe blowes, and paints the fun
With her chafte blufhes! When the north comes neere her, 140
Rude and impatient, then, like chaftity,
Shee lockes her beauties in her bud againe,
And leaves him to bafe briers.
Wom. Yet, good madam,
Sometimes her modefty will blow fo far
She fals for ' $t$ : a mayde,
If fhee have any honour, would be loth
To take example by her.
Emil. Thou art wanton.
Arc. She is wondrous faire !
148
Pal. She is all the beauty extant!
Emil. The fun grows high; lets walk in. Keep thefe flowers,
Wee'le fee how neere art can come neere their colours.
I am wondrous merry-hearted; I could laugh now.
Wom. I could lie downe, I am fure.
Emil. And take one with you?
Wom. That's as we bargaine, madam.
Emil.
Well, agree then.
[Exeunt Emilia and Woman.
Pal. What thinke you of this beauty?
Arc. 'Tis a rare one.
Pal. Is 't but a rare one ?
Arc. Yes, a matchles beauty.
Pal. Might not a man well lofe himfelfe, and love her ?
[II. 2] Arc. I cannot tell what you have done; I have, Befhrew mine eyes for 't. Now I feele my fhackles.

Pal. You love her, then ?
Arc. Who would not?
Pal. And defire her?
160 Arc. Before my liberty.
Pal. I faw her firf.
Arc. That's nothing.
Pal. But it fhall be.
Arc. I faw her too.
Pal.
Yes, but you muft not love her.
Arc. I will not as you doe, to worfhip her,
164 As the is heavenly, and a bleffed goddes;
I love her as a woman, to enjoy her :
So both may love.
Pal. You fhall not love at all.
Arc. Not love at all! Who fhall deny me?
168 Pal. I, that firft faw her ; I, that tooke poffeffion

- Firft with mine eye of all thofe beauties in her Reveald to mankinde. If thou loveft her, Or entertain'ft a hope to blaft my wifhes,
172 Thou art a traytour, Arcite, and a fellow
Falfe as thy title to her: friendihip, blood,
And all the tyes betweene us, I difclaime,
If thou once thinke upon her!
Arc.
Yes, I love her;
176 And if the lives of all my name lay on it,
I muft doe fo; I love her with my foule!
If that will lofe ye, farewell, Palamon!
I fay againe, I love; and in loving her, maintaine 180 I am as worthy and as free a lover,

And have as juft a title to her beauty,
As any Palamon, or any living
That is a man's fonne.

| 168.] Edd. | Sid. Walker, deny me? | Pal. | Edd. S. love, and) | Sid. Walker, I love |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :--- | :--- |
| I; I that |  |  |  |  |
| 179. I say againe, I love: and 1 Edd. | (O. |  |  |  |
| her; and |  |  |  |  |

## II. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. 3I

Pal.
Have I cald thee friend ?
[II. 2]
Arc. Yes, and have found me fo. Why are you mov'd thus ? 84
Let me deale coldly with you: am not I
Part of [your] blood, part of your foule? you 've told me
That I was Palamon, and you were Arcite.
Pal. Yes.
Arc. Am not I liable to thofe affections,
Thofe joyes, greifes, angers, feares, my friend fhall fuffer ?
Pal. Ye may be.
Arc. Why, then, would you deale fo cunningly,
So ftrangely, fo unlike a noble kinfman,
To love alone? Speake truely, doe you thinke me
Unworthy of her fight?
Pal. No ; but unjuft
If thou purfue that fight.
Arc. Becaufe an other
Firft fees the enemy, fhall I fand ftill, 196
And let mine honour downe, and never charge ?
Pal. Yes, if he be but one.
Arc. But fay that one
Had rather combat me ?
Pal. Let that one fay fo,
And ufe thy freedome; elfe if thou purfueft her, 200
Be as that curfed man that hates his country,
A branded villaine!
Arc. You are mad.
Pal. I muft be,
Till thou art worthy, Arcite; it concernes me;
And, in this madnes, if I hazard thee 204
And take thy life, I deale but truely.
Arc.
Fie, fir!
You play the childe extreamely : I will love her,
I muft, I ought to doe fo, and I dare;
And all this juftly.
Pal. O, that now, that now
186. your blood] D. Q. you blood
[II. 2] Thy falfe felfe and thy friend had but this fortune, To be one howre at liberty, and grafpe Our good fwords in our hands! I 'ld quickly teach thee
212 What 'twere to filch affection from another !
Thou art bafer in it then a cutpurfe :
Put but thy head out of this window more, And, as I have a foule, Ile naile thy life to 't!
216 Arc. Thou dar'ft not, foole; thou canft not; thou art feeble:
Put my head out! Ile throw my body out, And leape the garden, when I fee her next, And pitch between her armes to anger thee.
220 Pal. No more! the keeper's comming; I fhall live
To knocke thy braines out with my shackles. Arc. Doe.

Enter [Jailor.]
[Jail.] By your leave, gentlemen. Pal. Now, honeft keeper ? [Jail.] Lord Arcite, you muft prefently to the duke:
224 The caufe I know not yet. Arc. I'm ready, keeper. [Jail.] Prince Palamon, I muft awhile bereave you
Of your faire cofen's company. [Exeunt Arcite and Jailor.] Pal. And me too,
Even when you pleafe of life. Why is he fent for?
228 It may be, he thall marry her; he's goodly,
And like enough the duke hath taken notice Both of his blood and body. But his falfehood!
Why fhould a friend be treacherous? If that 232 Get him a wife fo noble and fo faire,

Let honeft men ne'er love againe. Once more
I would but fee this faire one.-Bleffed garden, And fruite and flowers more bleffed, that fill bloffom 236 As her bright eies fhine on ye! Would I were, For all the fortune of my life hereafter,

[^7]
## II. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinsmen.

Yon little tree, yon blooming apricocke!
How I would fpread, and fling my wanton armes
In at her window! I would bring her fruite
Fit for the gods to feed on; youth and pleafure, Still as the tafted, fhould be doubled on her;
And if the be not heavenly, I would make her
So neere the gods in nature, they fhould feare her ;
[Enter Jailor.]
And then I am fure fhe would love me. How now, keeper!
Wher's Arcite?
[Jail.] Banifhd. Prince Pirithous
Obtained his liberty ; but never more,
Upon his oth and life, muft he fet foote 248
Upon this kingdome.
Pal. Hee's a bleffed man!
He fhall fee Thebs againe, and call to armes
The bold yong men that, when he bids 'em charge, Fall on like fire: Arcite fhall have a fortune,
If he dare make himfelfe a worthy lover,
Yet in the field to ftrike a battle for her;
And if he lofe her then, he's a cold coward ;
How bravely may he beare himfelfe to win her
If he be noble Arcite: thoufand waies !
Were I at liberty, I would doe things
Of fuch a vertuous greatnes, that this lady,
This blufhing virgine, fhould take manhood to her, 260
And feeke to ravifh me.
[Jail.]
My lord, for you
I have this charge too-
Pal.
To difcharge my life.
[Jail.] No ; but from this place to remoove your lordhip :
The windowes are too open.
Pal. Devils take 'em
That are fo envious to me! Pre'thee kill me.
[Jail.] And hang for't afterward ?
238. $\underset{b}{\text { Apricocke] Q. }}$ F. T. S. D. K.('67) Sk. Apricock C. W. K.('41) Ty. apricot
[II. 2] Pal.
Had I a fword I'ld kill thee. [Jail.]

## By this good light

Why, my lord?
268 Pal. Thou bring'ft fuch pelting fcurvy news continually, Thou art not worthy life. I will not goe. [Jail.] Indeede you muft, my lord. Pal. May I fee the garden ? [Jail.] Noe. Pal. Then I am refolvd, I will not goe. [Jail.]

I muft
272 Conftraine you, then ; and for you're dangerous,
Ile clap more yrons on you. Pal. Doe, good keeper:
Ile fhake 'em fo, ye fhall not fleepe;
Ile make ye a new morriffe. Muft I goe ?
${ }_{27} 6$ [Jail.] There is no remedy. Pal. Farewell, kinde window;
May rude winde never hurt thee !-O, my lady, If ever thou haft felt what forrow was;
Dreame how I fuffer !-Come, now bury me. [Exeunt.
[II. 3] Scene III. [The country near Athens.]
Enter Arcite.
Arc. Banifhd the kingdome? 'tis a benefit,
A mercy I muft thanke 'em for; but banifhd
The free enjoying of that face I die for,
4 Oh 'twas a ftuddied punifhment, a death
Beyond imagination! Such a vengeance,
That, were I old and wicked, all my fins
Could never plucke upon me. Palamon,
8 Thou haft the start now, thou flalt ftay, and fee
Her bright eyes breake each morning 'gainft thy window,
And let in life into thee ; thou thalt feede
Upon the fweetenes of a noble beauty,
12 That nature ne'er exceeded, nor ne'er fhall:
Good gods, what happines has Palamon!

## II. 3.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. 35

Twenty to one, hee'l come to fpeake to her; [II. 3]
And, if fhe be as gentle as fhe's faire, I know fhe's his; he has a tongue will tame 16
Tempefts, and make the wild rockes wanton. Come what can come,
The worft is death; I will not leave the kingdome:
I know mine owne is but a heape of ruins,
And no redreffe there: if I goe, he has her.
I am refolv'd: an other fhape fhall make ne,
Or end my fortunes; either way, I'm happy:
Ile fee her, and be neere her, or no more.
Enter four Country-people; E' one with a garlond lefore them.

1. My mafters, Ile be there, that's certaine.
2. And Ile be there.
3. And I.
4. Why, then, have with ye, boyes! 'Tis but a chiding :

Let the plough play to-day ; Ile tickle't out
Of the jades' tailes to-morrow.
1.

I am fure
To have my wife as jealous as a turkey :
But that's all one; Ile goe through, let her mumble.
2. Clap her aboard to morrow-night, and foa her,

And all's made up againe.
3. I, doe but put

A feskue in her fift, and you fhall fee her
Take a new leffon out, and be a good wench.
Doe we all hold againft the maying ? 36 4.

Hold ?
What fhould aile us ?
3.

Arcas will be there.
2.

And Sennois,
And Rycas; and three better lads nev'r dancd
Under green tree; and [ye] know what wenches, ha!
21. resolv'd: another] D. Q. resolu'd an other
24. sqq.] Dyce's arrangement, ed. 1876 ,
here followed.
39. ve know] S. sqq. O.Edd. yet know
[II. 3] But will the dainty domine, the schoolemafter, Keep touch, doe you thinke? for he do's all, ye know. 3. Hee'l eate a hornebooke ere he faile : goe to ! The matter's too farre driven betweene 44 Him and the tanner's daughter, to let llip now ; And fhe muft fee the duke, and fhe muft daunce too.
4. Shall we be lufty?
2.

All the boyes in Athens
Blow wind i' th' breech on us: and here Ile be 48 And there Ile be, for our towne, and here againe,

And there againe: ha, boyes, heigh for the weavers!
I. This muft be done i' th' woods.
4.

O, pardon me!
2. By any meanes; our thing of learning [fays] fo ;
$5^{2}$ Where he himfelfe will edifie the duke
Moft parloufly in our behalfes : hee's excellent i' th' woods;
Bring him to th' plaines, his learning makes no cry.
3. We'll fee the fports; then every man to 's tackle!

56 And, fweete companions, let's rehearfe by any meanes,
Before the ladies fee us, and doe fweetly,
And god knows what may come on 't.
4. Content : the fports

Once ended, wee'l performe. Away, boyes, and hold!
60 Arc. By your leaves, honeft friends; pray you, whither goe you?
4. Whither! why, what a queftion 's that!

Arc. Yes, 'tis a queftion,
To me that know not.
3. To the games, my friend.

64 2. Where were you bred, you know it not?
Arc.
Not farre, fir.
Are there fuch games to-day ?

1. Yes, marry, are there :

And fuch as you nev'r faw ; The duke himfelfe Will be in perfon there.

## II. 3, 4.] The Two Noble Kinfmen.

Arc.
What paftimes are they ?
2. Wraftling, and running.-'Tis a pretty fellow.
3. Thou wilt not goe along?

Arc. Not yet, fir.
4.

Well, fir,
Take your owne time. Come, boyes.
I. My minde mifgives me

This fellow has a vengeance tricke o' th' hip;
Marke how his body 's made for 't.
2. Ile be hangd though

If he dare venture; hang him, plumb porredge !
He wraftle ? he roft eggs! Come, let's be gon, lads.
[Exeunt Countrymen.
Arc. This is an offerd oportunity
I durft not wifh for. Well I could have wreftled, 76
The beft men calld it excellent; and run
Swifter then winde upon a feild of corne,
Curling the wealthy eares, nev'r flew. Ile venture,
And in fome poore difguize be there: who knowes
Whether my browes may not be girt with garlands,
And happines preferre me to a place
Where I may ever dwell in fight of her? [Exit.
Scene IV. [Athens. A room in the prifon.] [II. 4]
Enter Jailor's Daughter.
Daugh. Why fhould I love this gentleman ? 'tis odds
He never will affect me; I am bafe, My father the meane keeper of his prifon, And he a prince; To marry him is hopeleffe, To be his whore, is witles. Out upon 't! What pufhes are we wenches driven to,
76. Well I] S. C. W. K. D. Sk. O.Edd. Ty. Well, I
78. then winde . . . nev'r flew.] L. Q .
then winde . . . never flew : (so F. T.
Ty. than wind) Th. conj. then . . .
near Se. Sy. S. C. W. the . . . ne'er Mason, D. than wind . . ever flew K.
Sk. than . . e'er 3. his prison] Q. etc. S. this prison
[II. 4] When fifteene once has found us! Firf I faw him ;
8 I, feeing, thought he was a goodly man ;
He has as much to pleafe a woman in himIf he pleafe to beftow it fo-as ever Thefe eyes yet lookt on ; next, I pittied him, 12 And fo would any young wench o' my confcience 'That ever dream'd, or vow'd her maydenhead To a yong hanfom man; then I lov'd him, Extreamely lov'd him, infinitely lov'd him ; 16 And yet he had a cofen, faire as he too; But in my heart was Palamon, and there, Lord, what a coyle he keepes! To heare him Sing in an evening, what a heaven it is ! 20 And yet his fongs are fad ones. Fairer fpoken Was never gentleman: when I come in To bring him water in a morning, firft He bowes his noble body, then falutes me, thus : 24 "Faire, gentle mayde, good morrow : may thy goodnes Get thee a happy hutband!" Once, he kift me; I lov'd my lips the better ten daies after:
Would he would doe fo ev'ry day! He greives much, 28 And me as much to fee his mifery :

What fhould I doe, to make him know I love him ?
For I would faine enjoy him. Say I ventur'd
To fet him free? what faies the law, then ? Thus much 32 For law, or kindred! I will doe it, And this night or to-morrow he fhall love me.
8. I, seeing,] S. C. W. K. D. Sk. Q. I (seeing) F. I (seeing) though the Sid. Walker, And seeing
14. then I lov'd] O.Edd. S. D. Ty. C. W. K. Then, I Sk. [and] then, I
18. To heare him] O.Edd. etc. Se. S. To sit and hear him
31. thus much For] O.Edd. Ty. S. thus much For . . Kindred : I will do it, ay

And this night ; and toMorrow he shall love me. C.(1778) W. K.('4I) And this Night, or tomorrow: He (he C. 181I). Q. night, or to morrow he D. Sk. night or tomorrow he K.('67) night, or to-morrow, he L. qy. I will do it, And this night;-or tomorrow he 32.] cf. metre of IV.ii. I44.
II. 5.] The Two Noble Kinfmen. 39

Scene V. [An open place in Athens.]
Enter Thefeus, Hippolyta, Pirithous, Emilia; Arcite [as a Country-man, wearing] a Garland; [and Country-people].
Thef. You have done worthily; I have not feene,
Since Hercules, a man of tougher fynewes :
What e'er you are, you run the beft, and wraftle,
That thefe times can allow.
[II. 5]
This short florish of cornets, and showtes within.

Arc. I'm proud to pleafe you.
Thef. What countrie bred you?
Arc. This; but far off, prince.
Thef. Are you a gentleman ?
Arc.
My father faid fo;
And to thofe gentle ufes gave me life.
Thef. Are you his heire?
8
Arc.
Thef.
His yongeft, fir.
Your father
Sure is a happy fire, then. What prooves you ?
Arc. A little of all noble quallities :
I could have kept a hawke, and well have holloa'd
To a deepe crie of dogges; I dare not praife
My feat in horfemandhip, yet they that knew me
Would fay it was my beft peece; laft and greateft,
I would be thought a fouldier.
Thef.
You are perfect.
Pir. Upon my foule, a proper man!
Emil.
He is fo .
Pir. How doe you like him, ladie ?
Hip. I admire him:
I have not feene fo yong a man fo noble-
If he fay true,-of his fort.
Emil.
Beleeve,
His mother was a wondrous handfome woman; 20

[^8][II. 5] His face me thinkes goes that way.

> Hip. But his body

And firie minde illuftrate a brave father.
Pir. Marke how his vertue, like a hidden fun,
24 Breakes through his bafer garments !
Hip.
Hee's well got, fure.
Thef. What made you feeke this place, fir ?
Arc.
Noble Thefeus,
To purchafe name, and doe my ableft fervice
To fuch a well-found wonder as thy worth;
28 For onely in thy court, of all the world,
Dwells faire-eyd honor.
Pir. All his words are worthy.
Thef. Sir, we are much endebted to your travell,
Nor thall you loofe your wilh.-Pirithous,
32 Difpofe of this faire gentleman.
Pir.
Thankes, Thefeus:-
What-e'er you are, y' are mine ; and I thall give you
To a moft noble fervice,--to this lady,
This bright yong virgin ; pray, obferve her goodneffe :
36 You have honourd hir faire birthday with your vertues,
And, as your due, $y$ ' are hirs; kiffe her faire hand, fir.
Arc. Sir, y' are a noble giver.-Deareft bewtie,
Thus let me fale my vowd faich [kisses her hand]: when your fersant-
40 Your moft unworthie creature-but offends you,
Command him die, he fhall.
Emil. That were too cruell.
If you deferve well, fir, I thall foone fee it :
Y' are mine: and fomewhat better than your rancke Ile ufe you.
44 Pir. Ile fee you furnilh'd, and becaufe you fay
You are a horfeman, I muft needs intreat you
This afternoone to ride; but tis a rough one.
Arc. I like him better, prince ; I fhall not, then,
42. see it $]$ L. Q. D. see't
43. Ile use you] Q. arrangement. D. prints

## II. 5, 6] The Two Nolle Kinfmen

Freeze in my faddle.
Thef. Sweet, you muft be readie,-
And you, Emilia,-and you, friend,-and all,-
To-morrow, by the fun, to doe obfervance
To flowry May, in Dian's wood.-Waite well, fir, Upon your miftris.-Emily, I hope
He fhall not goe afoote.
Emil. That were a fhame, fir,
While I have horfes.-Take your choice; and what
You want at any time, let me but know it ;
If you ferve faithfully, I dare affure you
You'l finde a loving miftris.
Arc.
If I doe not,
Let me finde that my father ever hated:
Difgrace and blowes.
Thef. Go, leade the way; you've won it;
It thall be fo: you fhall receave all dues
Fit for the honour you have won; 'twere wrong elfe.-
Sifter, befhrew my heart, you have a fervant,
That, if I were a woman, would be mafter :
But you are wife.
Emil. I hope too wife for that, fir.
[Florifh. Exeunt.
Scene VI. [Athens. Before the prifon.]
Enter Jailor's Daughter.
Daugh. Let all the dukes and all the divells rore,
He is at liberty: I have ventur'd for him;
And out I have brought him to a little wood
A mile hence: I have fent him, where a cedar,
Higher than all the reft, fpreads like a plane,
Faft by a brooke; and there he fhall keepe clofe,
Till I provide him fyles and foode; for yet
His yron bracelets are not off. O, love,
What a ftout-hearted child thou art! My father
Durft better have indur'd cold vron than done it.
[II. 6] I love him beyond love and beyond reafon, 12 Or wit, or fafetie; I have made him know it: I care not ; I am defperate ; if the law Finde me, and then condemne me for 't, fome wenches Some honeft-harted maides, will fing my dirge, 16 And tell to memory my death was noble, Dying almoft a martyr. That way he takes, I purpofe is my way too : fure he cannot Be fo unmanly, as to leave me here :
20 If he doe, maides will not fo eafily
Truft men againe : and yet he has not thank'd me For what I've done : no, not fo much as kift me; And that, me thinkes, is not fo well ; nor fcarcely 24 Could I perfwade him to become a freeman, He made fuch fcruples of the wrong he did To me and to my father. Yet, I hope, When he confiders more, this love of mine 28 Will take more root within him: let him doe What he will with me, fo he ufe me kindly; For ufe me fo he thall, or Ile proclaime him, And to his face, no man. Ile prefently 32 Provide him neceffaries, and packe my cloathes up, And where there is a [patch] of ground Ile venture, So hee be with me : by him, like a fhadow, Ile ever dwell. Within this houre the whoobub 36 Will be all o'er the prifon: I am then

Kiffing the man they looke for. Farewell, father !
Get many more fuch prifoners and fuch daughters, And fhortly you may keepe yourfelfe. Now to him! [Exit.

## III. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. 43

## ACT III.

Scene I. [A foreft near Athens.]
Enter Arcite.
Arc. The Duke has loft Hippolyta; each tooke
A feverall land. This is a folemne rite
They owe bloomd May, and the Athenians pay it
To th' heart of ceremony. O queene Emilia,
Frefher then May, fweeter
Then hir gold buttons on the bowes, or all
Th' enamelld knackes $o^{\circ}$ th' meade or garden : yea !
We challenge too the bancke of any nymph,
That makes the ftreame feeme flowers; thou, $O$ jewell O' th' wood, o' th' world, haft likewife bleft a [place]
With thy fole prefence! In thy rumination
That I, poore man, might eftfoones come betweene,
[III. I]
Cornets in sundry places. Noise and hallowing as people a-Maying.

4

8

And chop on fome cold thought! thrice bleffed chance
To drop on fuch a miftris, expectation
Moft giltleffe on't. Tell me, O lady fortune,-
Next after Emily my foveraigne,-how far
I may be prowd. She takes ftrong note of me,
Hath made me neere her, and this beuteous morne,
The prim'ft of all the yeare, prefents me with
A brace of horfes: two fuch fteeds might well
Be by a paire of kings backt, in a field
That their crownes' titles tride. Alas, alas,
Poore cofen Palamon, poore prifoner! thou
So little dream'ft upon my fortune, that
Thou thinkft thy felfe the happier thing, to be So neare Emilia; me thou deem'ft at Thebs,
And therein wretched, although free; but if
Thou knew'ft my miftris breathd on me, and that
2. land] O.Edd. sqq. Spalding, Ty. Sk. (D. gloss.) laund Heath, stand 10. place] S. sqq. O.Edd. pace
II. presence! In thy D. K. Sk. O.Edd. Ty. presence, in S.C. W. presence.-In
[III. I] I ear'd her language, livde in her eye, O coz, What paffion would enclofe thee!

Enter Palamon as out of a bufh, with his Jhackles: lends
his fift at Arcite. his fift at Arcite.
Pal.
Traytor kinfinan!
Thou fhouldft perceive my paffion, if thefe fignes
32 Of prifonment were off me, and this hand But owner of a fword. By all othes in one, I, and the juftice of my love, would make thee A confeft traytor. O thou moft perfidious
30 That ever gently lookd! the [voyd'ft] of honour That ev $r$ bore gentle token! falfeft cofen That ever blood made kin! call'ft thou hir thine ? Ile prove it in my fhackles, with thefe hands,
40 Void of appointment, that thou ly'ft, and art A very theefe in love, a chaffy lord, Nor worth the name of villaine! Had I a fword, And thefe houfe clogges away, -

Arc. Deere cofin Palamon,
44 Pal. Cofener Arcite, give me language fuch As thou haft fhewd me feate!

Arc.
Not finding in
The circuit of my breaft any groffe ftuffe
To forme me like your blazon, holds me to
48 This gentleneffe of anfwer: 'tis your paffion
That thus miftakes; the which to you being enemy,
Cannot to me be kind. Honor and honeftie
I cherifh and depend on, how fo ev'r
52 You skip them in me; and with them, faire coz,
Ile maintaine my proceedings. Pray, be pleaf'd
To fhew in generous termes your griefes, fince that
Your queftion's with your equall, who profeffes
56 To cleare his owne way with the minde and fword
Of a true gentleman.
36. voyd'st] S. sqq. void'st Q. F. voydes
T. voids 42. Nor worth] Edd. L. quer, Not worth
T. voids
III. I.] The Two Noble Kinfmen. 45

Pal.
That thou durft, Arcite!
[III. 1]
Arc. My coz, my coz, you have beene well advertif'd
How much I dare: y'ave feene me ufe my fword
Againft th' advice of feare. Sure, of another 60
You would not heare me doubted, but your filence
Should breake out, though i' th' fanctuary.
Pal. Sir,
I have feene you move in fuch a place, which
Might juftifie your manhood; you were calld
A good knight and a bold : but the whole weeke's not faire,
If any day it rayne. Their valiant temper
Men loofe when they encline to trecherie;
And then they fight like compelld beares, would fly
Were they not tyde
Arc. Kinfman, you might as well
Speake this, and act it in your glaffe, as to
His eare, which now difdaines you.
Pal. Come up to me,
Quit me of thefe cold gyves, give me a fword,
Though it be ruftie, and the charity
Of one meale lend me; come before me then, A good fword in thy hand, and doe but fay That Emily is thine, I will forgive
The trefpaffe thou haft done me, yea, my life If then thou carry 't; and brave foules in fhades, That have dyde manly, which will feeke of me Some newes from earth, they fhall get none but this,
That thou art brave and noble.
Arc.
Be content,
Againe betake you to your hawthorne houfe:
With counfaile of the night, I will be here
With wholefome viands; thefe impediments 84
Will I file off; you fhall have garments, and Perfumes to kill the fmell o' th' prifon ; after,
68. compelld beares] Q. compelld Beares
F. coupel'd Beeres T. coupel'd Bears
S. sqq. compell'd Bears

So noble beare a guilty bufines ! none
But onely Arcite; therefore none but Arcite 92 In this kinde is fo bold.

Arc.

## Sweete Palamon,-

Pal. I doe embrace you and your offer: for Your offer doo 't I onely, fir ; your perfon
Without hipocrify I may not wifh [IVinde hornes of cornets. 96 More then my fword's edge on 't.

Arc. You heare the hornes:
Enter your [mufite] leaft this match between 's
Be croft, er met. Give me your hand; farewell:
Ile bring you every needfull thing : I pray you, roo Take comfort, and be ftrong.

$$
\text { Pal. } \quad \text { Pray hold your promife, }
$$

And doe the deede with a bent brow : moft certaine
You love me not: be rough with me, and powre
This oile out of your language. By this ayre, 104 I could for each word give a cuffe; my ftomach

Not reconcild by reafon.
Arc.
Plainely fpoken!
Yet pardon me hard language; when I fpur
My horfe, I chide him [not]; content and anger 108 In me have but one face.

Harke, fir! they call [IVinde hornes. The fcatterd to the banket: you muft gueffe I have an office there.

Pal.
Sir, your attendance

[^9]D'Avenant, muise S. C. (Ty. notes, p. 484: "music, evidently a corruption.") muse quick W. muse K. D.('46) Sk. musit Ty. (text, by mistake) music quick D. ('67, '76) muset 107. chide him not] F. sqq. Q. him nor
III. 1, 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. 47

Cannot pleafe heaven; and I know your office [III. I] Unjuftly is atcheev'd.

Arc.
[I've] a good title,
I am perfwaded: this queftion, ficke between 's,
By bleeding muft be cur'd. I am a fuitour That to your fword you will bequeath this plea, And talke of it no more.

Pal.
But this one word :
You are going now to gaze upon my miftris;
For note you, mine fhe is,-
Arc. Nay, then,-
Pal. Nay, pray you,-
You talke of feeding me to breed me ftrength;
You 're going now to looke upon a fun
That ftrengthens what it lookes on; there you have
A vantage ore me: but enjoy it till
I may enforce my remedy. Farewell.
[Exeunt.
Scene II. [Another part of the foreff.]
Enter Jailor's Daughter alone.
Daugh. He has miftooke the [brake] I meant; is gone
After his fancy. 'Tis now welnigh morning ;
No matter : would it were perpetuall night,
And darkenes lord o' th' world !-Harke! 'tis a woolfe :
In me hath greife flaine feare, and, but for one thing,
I care for nothing, and that's Palamon:
I [reck] not if the wolves would jaw me, fo
He had this file. What if I hallowd for him?
I cannot hallow : if I whoop'd, what then ?
If he not anfweard, I fhould call a woolfe,
And doe him but that fervice. I have heard
112. l've a good title] S. C. K. D. Ty. Sk. O.Edd. If W. I have T. I'm persuaded
121. there you have A] D. Q. there You have a Q. enjoy't
I. brake] Th. M. W. K. D. Ty. Sk. Q.

Beake F.T. Beak D'Avenant, beach Sy. conj. Brook Se. conj. mistook; the Hawk I sent is gone Se. S. (text) C. Nares, Hickson, Beck L. Brake (spelt Breake ?)
7. reck] Edd. Q. wreake
$48 \quad$ The Two Nolle Kinfmen.
[III. 2] Strange howles this live-long night : why may 't not be They have made prey of him? he has no weapons;
He cannot run ; the jengling of his gyves Might call fell things to liften, who have in them 16 A fence to know a man unarmd, and can Smell where refiftance is. Ile fet it downe He's torne to peeces; they howld many together, And then they fed on him : fo much for that !
20 Be bold to ring the bell; how ftand I, then ?
All 's char'd when he is gone. No, no, I lye;
My father 's to be hang'd for his efcape;
My felfe to beg, if I prizd life fo much
24 As to deny my act ; but that I would not, Should I try death by duffons.-I am mop't, Food tooke I none thefe two daies,-
Sipt fome water. I have not clofd mine eyes
28 Save when my lids fcowrd off their [brine.] Alas,
Diffolve, my life! let not my fence unfettle,
Leaft I fhould drowne, or ftab, or hang my felfe !
O ftate of nature, faile together in me,
32 Since thy beft props are warpt! So, which way now :
The beft way is the next way to a grave :
Each errant ftep befide is torment. Loe,
The moone is down, the cryckets chirpe, the schreich-owle
36 Calls in the dawne! all offices are done,
Save what I faile in : but the point is this, An end, and that is all.
19. fed] Edd. Q. feed
25. death] Edd. Sk. qy. deaths
26. daies,-Sipt some water.] L. Q. daies. Sipt some water. I have F. took I non these two daies. Sipt some water, I have. (T. none . . Days, . . Water.) Sy. conj. Mason, Ty. 'cept some Water S. days, only sipt Some Water, two

Nights I've C. K. days, Sipt some water ; I've W. (re-arr. 1l. 26-3I, v. n.) days ; sipt some water; I have D. days; once, indeed, I sipp'd some water; I've So Sk. (places once, indeed, I within []).
28. brine] T. sqq. Q. F. bine (cf. I. iii. 22.)

## III. 3.] The Two Noble Kinfmen. <br> 49

Scene III. [The fame part of the foreft as in Scene I.] [III. 3]
Enter Arcite, with meate, wine, files, EJ'c.
Arc. I fhould be neere the place. Hoa, Cofen Palamon!
Enter Palamon.
Pal. Arcite?
Arc. The fame: I 've brought you foode and files.
Come forth and feare not ; here 's no Thefeus.
Pal. Nor none fo honeft, Arcite.
4
Arc. That's no matter :
Wee'l argue that hereafter. Come, take courage ;
You fhall not dye thus beaftly : here, fir, drinke;
I know you 're faint; then Ile talke further with you.
Pal. Arcite, thou mightft now poyfon me.
8
Arc.
I might;
But I muft feare you firft. Sit downe; and, good, now,
No more of thefe vaine parlies: let us not,
Having our ancient reputation with us,
Make talke for fooles and cowards. To your health. [Drinks.] i2 Pal. Doe.
Arc. Pray, fit downe, then ; and let me entreate you, By all the honefty and honour in you,
No mention of this woman! 't will difturbe us;
We fhall have time enough.
Pal.
Well, fir, Ile pledge you.
Arc. Drinke a good hearty draught ; it breeds good blood, man.
Doe not you feele it thaw you?
Pal.
Stay ; Ile tell you
After a draught or two more.
Arc.
Spare it not ;
The Duke has more, coz. Eate now. 20

Pal.
Arc.
Yes.
I am glad
4. Nor none so] Edd. Sid. Walker, No, 12. health [Drinks.] D. Q. health, \&c. nor none so
$b \quad 4$
[III. 3] You have fo good a ftomach.
Pal. I am gladder
I have fo good meate too 't. Arc.

Is 't not mad lodging,
Here in the wild woods, cofen ?
Pal. Yes, for them
24 That have wilde confciences.
Arc.
How tafts your vittails ?
Your hunger needs no fawce, I fee.
Pal.
Not much :
But if it did, yours is too tart, fweete cofen.
What is this?
Arc. Venifon.
Pal.
'Tis a lufty meate.
28 Give me more wine: here, Arcite, to the wenches
We have known in our daies! The lord-fteward's daughter;
Doe you remember her ?
Arc.
After you, coz.
Pal. She lov'd a black-haird man.
Arc. She did fo; well, fir ?
32 Pal. And I have heard fome call him Arcite; andArc. Out with 't, faith!
Pal. She met him in an arbour :
What did the there, coz ! play o' th' virginals ?
Arc. Something fhe did, fir.
Pal. Made her groane a month for ' $t$;
${ }_{3} 6$ Or two, or three, or ten.
Arc. The marfhal's fifter
Had her fhare too, as I remember, cofen,
Elfe there be tales abroade ; you'l pledge her ?
Pal.
Yes.
Arc. A pretty broune wench 't is: there was a time
40 When yong men went a-hunting, and a wood,
And a broade beech; and thereby hangs a tale.-
Heigh-ho!
Pal. For Emily, upon my life! Foole, Away with this ftraind mirth! I fay againe,

## III. 3, 4.] The Two Noble Kinfimen.

That figh was breathd for Emily : bafe cofen,
Dar'ft thou breake firft ?
Arc. You 're wide.
Pal. By heaven and earth,
Ther 's nothing in thee honeft. Arc.

Then Ile leave you:
You are a beaft now.
Pal. As thou makft me, traytour.
Arc. Ther's all things needfull,-files, and fhirts, and per- 48 fumes :
Ile come againe fome two howres hence, and bring
That that fhall quiet all.
Pal. A fword and armour ?
Arc. Feare me not. You are now too fowle: farewell :
Get off your trinkets; you thall want nought. 52
Pal.
Arc. Ile heare no more.
[Exit.
Pal. If he keepe touch, he dies for't.
Scene IV. [Another part of the forefi.]
Enter Jailor's Daughter.
Daugh. I'm very cold; and all the ftars are out too,
The little ftars and all, that looke like aglets:
The fun has feene my folly. Palamon!
Alas, no! hee 's in heaven.-Where am I now ?-
Yonder 's the fea, and there 's a fhip ; how 't tumbles!
And there 's a rocke lies watching under water; Now, now, it beates upon it ; now, now, now, Ther's a leak fprung, a found one; how they cry !
[Spoom] her before the winde, you'l loofe all els;
Up with a courfe or two, and take about, boyes:
Good night, good night ; y'ar gone.-I am very hungry :
Would I could finde a fine frog! he would tell me
9. Spoom] W. D. K('67). Th. conj. Spoon Q. Vpon her F. T. Ty. K.('4I) Upon

Run her her Sy. S. C. Up with her 'fore Sk.
[III. 4] Newes from all parts o' th' world ; then would I make
A carecke of a cockle-fhell, and fayle By eaft and north-eaft to the King of Pigmies, 16 For he tels fortunes rarely. Now, my father,

Twenty to one, is truft up in a trice
To-morrow morning: Ile fay nev'r a word.
For Ile cut my greene coat a foote alove my knee; [Sings.
And Ile clip my yellow lockes an inch below mine e'e :
Hey, nonny, nonny, nonny.
He s' buy me a white cut, forth for to ride,
And Ile goe feeke him, throw the world that is fo wide:
24
Hey nonny, nonny, nonny.
O for a pricke now, like a nightingale,
To put my breaft againft! I fhall fleepe like a top elfe. [Exit.
[III. 5]
Scene V. [Another part of the foreft.]
Enter [Gerrold,] four Countrymen [as Morris-dancers, another as the Bavian, five] Wenches, with a Taborer.
Ger. Fy, fy !
What tediofity and difenfanity
Is here among ye! have my rudiments
4 Bin labourd fo long with ye, milkd unto ye,
And, by a figure, even the very plum-broth
And marrow of my underftanding laid upon ye,
And do you ftill cry "Where," and " How," and "Wherfore" ?
8 You moft coarfe freeze capacities, ye [jane] judgements,
Have I faide "Thus let be," and " There let be,"
And "Then let be," and no man underfand mee?
Proh Deum, medius fidius, ye are all dunces!
12 For why, here ftand I; here the duke comes; there are you, Clofe in the thicket ; the duke appeares, I meete him,
14. Carecke] Q. F. Careck T. S. D. Carack C. W. Ty. K. Sk. Carrack
22. He s'] Skeat $M S$. O.Edd. S. C. W.
K. D. Sk. He 's Mason, Ty. He'll

Scene V.] Edd. Q. scæna vi. Bavian]
S. sqq. Q. F. Baum T. and Baum
[as if a proper name.] five Wenches] D. Q. 2. or 3. wenches
8. jane] D. Sk. O.Edd. W. Ty. jave Se. conj. bays Se. S. C. Nares, sleave K. jape

## III. 5.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. <br> 53

And unto him I utter learned things
[III. 5]
And many figures ; he heares, and nods, and hums,
And then cries "Rare!" and I goe forward; at length
I fling my cap up; marke there! then do you,
As once did Meleager and the bore,
Break comly out before him, like true lovers,
Caft your felves in a body decently,
And fweetly, by a figure, trace and turne, boyes.
r. And fweetly we will doe it, mafter Gerrold.
2. Draw up the company. Where's the taborour ?
3. Why, Timothy!

Tal. Here, my mad boyes; have at ye!
Ger. But, I fay, where's their women :
4. . Here 's Friz and Maudline.
2. And little Luce with the white legs, and bouncing Barbery.
r. And freckeled Nel, that never faild her mafter.

Ger. Wher be your ribands, maids ? fwym with your bodies, 28
And carry it fweetly, and deliverly;
And now and then a favour and a friske.
Nel. Let us alone, fir.
Ger. Wher 's the reft o' th' muficke ?
3. Difperfd as you commanded.

Ger.
Couple, then,
And fee what's wanting. W'her's the Bavian ?
My friend, carry your taile without offence
Or fcandall to the ladies; and be fure
You tumble with audacity and manhood;
And when you barke, doe it with judgement.
Bav.
Yes, fir.
Ger. Quo ufque tandem? here 's a woman wanting.
4. We may goe whiftle : all the fat 's i' th' fire.

## Ger.

We have,
As learned authours utter, wafhd a tile, 40
We have beene fatuus, and laboured vainely.
2. This is that fcornefull peece, that fcurvy hilding,

That gave her promife faithfully fhe would
[III. 5] Be here, Cicely the fempfters daughter :
The next gloves that I give her fhall be dog-skin;
Nay and fhe faile me once- You can tell, Arcas,
She fwore, by wine and bread, the would not breake.
48 Ger. An eele and woman,
A learned poet fayes, unles by th' taile
And with thy teeth thou hold, will either faile.
In manners this was falfe pofition.
52 I. A fire ill take her! do's fhe flinch now ? 3.

Shall we determine, fir?
Ger. Nothing;
Our bufines is become a nullity,
Yea, and a woefull and a pittious nullity.
56 4. Now, when the credite of our towne lay on it,
Now to be frampall, now to piffe o' th' nettle!
Goe thy waies; Ile remember thee, Ile fit thee!
Enter Jailor's Daughter [and fings.]
The George, alow! came from the fouth,
60 From the coaft of Barbary-a;
And there he met with lrave gallants of uar, By one, ly two, ly three-a.

Chaire and Well haild, well haild, you jolly gallants!
ftooles out. And whither now are you bound-a?
O let me have your company
Till [I] come to the found-a!
There was three fooles fell out alout an howlet:
The one Sed it was an owle;
The other he fed nay;
The third he fed it was a hawke, And her lels were cut auray.
52. fire ill] O.Edd. C. W. K. D. S. feril Sk. (D. conj.) wild-fire
59. George, alow!] L. Q. George alow, Edd. George alow came L. conj. George -alow !- ( $=$ halloo!)
6. Till I come] T. S. C. K. D. Sk. Q. F
till [we] come We come
68. The one sed] Edd. L. quer. The one he sed or one sed 'twas

## III. 5.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. <br> 55

3. Ther 's a dainty mad woman, master,

Comes i' th' nick; as mad as a March hare:
If wee can get her daunce, wee 're made againe ;
I warrant her, thee'l doe the rareft gambols.
r. A mad woman! we are made, boyes.

76
Ger. And are you mad, good woman ?
Daugh.
I 'ld be forry elfe
Give me your hand.
Ger. Why ?
Daugh. I can tell your fortune:
You are a foole. Tell ten ? I have pozd him. Buz!
Friend, you muft eate no white bread ; if you doe
Your teeth will bleede extreamely. Shall we dance, ho ?
I know you, y' ar a tinker; firha tinker,
Stop no more holes but what you dhould.
Ger.
Dij bonil
A tinker, damzell!
Or a conjurer :
Raife me a devill now, and let him play
Qui paffá o' th' bels and bones.
Ger.
Goe, take her,
And fluently perfwade her to a peace;
Et opus exegi, quod nec Iouis ira, nec ignis-
Strike up, and leade her in.
2.

Daugh. Ile leade.
Come, laffe, let's trip it.
[Winde hornes.
3. Doe, doe.

Ger. Perfwafively, and cunningly ; away, boyes !
[Ex. all lut Gerrold.]
I heare the hornes: give me fome meditation,
And marke your cue.
Pallas infpire me!
Enter Thefeus, Pirithous, Hippolyta, Emilia, Arcite, and traine.
Thef. This way the fag tooke.


And to fay veritie and not to fable,
We are a merry rout, or elfe a rable,
Or company, or, by a figure, choris,
108 That fore thy dignitie will dance a morris.
And I, that am the rectifier of all, By title padagogus, that let fall
The birch upon the breeches of the fmall ones,
112 And humble with a ferula the tall ones,
Doe here prefent this machine, or this frame;
And, daintie duke, whofe doughtie difmall fame
From Dis to Dædalus, from poft to pillar,
116 Is blowne abroad, helpe me, thy poore well-willer,
And, with thy twinckling eyes, looke right and ftraight
Upon this mighty morr-of mickle waight-
Is-now comes in, which, being glewd together,
120 Makes morris, and the caufe that we came hether.
The body of our fport, of no fmall ftudy, I firft appeare, though rude, and raw, and muddy,
To fpeake, before thy noble grace, this tenner;
124 At whofe great feete I offer up my penner :
The next the Lord of May and Lady bright, The Chambermaid and Servingman, by night That feeke out filent hanging : then mine Hof 128 And his fat Spowfe, that welcomes to their coft

| 98. Thes.] Edd. Q. Per. Well Sir, | study. I $\quad$ L. quer. sport. Of . . . |  |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 120. hether. The body. . study, I] Q. | study, I |  |
| (study I) | D. Sk. hither, The body... | 128. welcomes to their cost] O.Edd. S. Ty. |

III. 5.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.
57

The gauled traveller, and with a beckning [III. 5]
Informes the tapfter to inflame the reckning :
Then the beaft-eating Clowne, and next the Foole,
The Bavian, with long tayle and eke long toole;
132
Cum multis alijs that make a dance:
Say " I," and all thall prefently advance.
Thef. I, I, by any meanes, deere domine.
Pir. Produce. $\mathrm{I}_{3} 6$
[Ger.] Intrate filij, come forth; and foot it.
Knocke for
[Muficke. Dance a Morris. $]^{\text {schoole. En- }}$
Ladies, if we have beene merry,
And have pleard [ye] with a derry,
And a derry, and a downe,
140
Say the schoolemafter 's no clowne.
Duke, if we have pleafd thee too,
And have done as good boyes fhould doe,
Give us but a tree or twaine
144
For a maypole, and againe,
Ere another yeare run out,
Wee'l make thee laugh, and all this rout.
Thef. Take twenty, domine.-How does my fweet heart ? 148
Hip. Never fo pleafd, fir.
Emil. 'Twas an excellent dance; and for a preface,
I never heard a better.
Thef. Schoolemafter, I thanke you.-
One fee 'em all rewarded.
152
Pir. And heer 's fomething
To paint your pole withall.
Thef. Now to our fports againe.
Ger. May the ftag thou huntft fland long,
And thy dogs be fwift and ftrong!

Sk. C. etc. welcome Sid. Walker, 137. Ger. Intrate] C. sqq. O.Edd. S. give D. ('67, '76) welcome to his
131. beast-eating] Edd. Edd. Mason, beef-eating
to Pir. Ty. arranges: School. Produce. Intrate \&c.
139. pleas'd ye] S. sqq. O.Edd. Ty. thee, S. om. have
142. thee too] F. sqq. Q. three too
[III. 5] May they kill him without lets,
And the ladies eate his dowfets!
[Winde hornes.
[Exeunt Thefeus, Pirithous, Hippolyta, Emilia, Arcite, and traine.]
158 Come, we 're all made. Dij deeaque omnes $/$
Ye have danc'd rarely, wenches.
[Exeunt.
[III. 6] Scene Vi. [Foreff, as in Scene III.]
Enter Palamon from the Bu/h.
Pal. About this houre my cofen gave his faith
To vifit me againe, and with him bring
Two fwords, and two good armors; if he faile,
4 He 's neither man nor fouldier. When he left me,
I did not thinke a weeke could have reftord
My loft ftrength to me, I was growne fo low
And creft-falne with my wants: I thanke thee, Arcite,
8 Thou art yet a faire foe; and I feele my felfe,
With this refrefhing, able once againe
To out-dure danger. To delay it longer
Would make the world think, when it comes to hearing,
12 That I lay fatting like a fwine, to fight,
And not a fouldier: Therefore, this bleft morning
Shall be the laft ; and that fword he refufes,
If it but hold, I kill him with ; 'tis juftice:
${ }^{16}$ So, love and fortune for me! O, good morrow.
Enter Arcite with armors and fwords.
Arc. Good morrow, noble kinfman.
Pal. I have put you
To too much paines, fir.
Arc. That too much, faire cofen,
Is but a debt to honour and my duty.
20 Pal. Would you were fo in all, fir! I could wifh ye
As kinde a kinfman, as you force me finde
157. dowsets!] Q. sqq. D. doucets! Scene vi.] Edd. Q. scæna 7.

## III. 6.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. <br> 59

A beneficiall foe, that my embraces
Might thanke ye, not my blowes.
Arc. I hall thinke either

Well done, a noble recompence.
Pal. Then I hall quit you.
Arc. Defy me in thefe faire termes, and you fhow
More then a miftris to me: no more anger
As you love any thing that's honourable :
We were not bred to talke, man ; when we 're arm'd
And both upon our guards, then let our fury, Like meeting of two tides, fly ftrongly from us;
And then to whom the birthright of this beauty
Truely pertaines-without obbraidings, fcornes,
Difpifings of our perfons, and fuch powtings
Fitter for girles and fchooleboyes-will be feene,
And quickly, yours or mine. Wilt pleafe you arme, fir, Or, if you feele your felfe not fitting yet36

And furnifhd with your old ftrength, Ile ftay, cofen, And ev'ry day difcourfe you into health, As I am fpard: your perfon I am friends with, And I could wifh I had not faide I lov'd her,
Though I had dide ; but, loving fuch a lady,
And juftifying my love, I muft not fly from 't.
Pal. Arcite, thou art fo brave an enemy,
That no man but thy cofen 's fit to kill thee :
I am well and lufty ; choofe your armes.
Arc.
Choofe you, fir.
Pal. Wilt thou exceede in all, or do'ft thou doe it
To make me fpare thee ?
Arc. If you thinke fo, cofen,
You are deceived, for as I am a foldier,
I will not fpare you.
Pal. That 's well faid.
Arc. You 'll finde it.
Pal. Then, as I am an honeft man, and love
With all the juftice of affection, Ile pay thee foundly. This Ile take.

Ile arme you firft.
Pal. Do. Pray thee, tell me, cofen, Where gotft thou this good armour ?

Arc. 'Tis the duke's,
And to fay true, I ftole it. Doe I pinch you ?
Pal.
Noe.
56 Arc. Is 't not too heavie ?
Pal.
I have worne a lighter;
But I fhall make it ferve.
Arc. Ile buckl't clofe.
Pal. By any meanes.
Arc.
You care not for a grand-guard ?
Pal. No, no; wee'l ufe no horfes: I perceave
60 You 'ld faine be at that fight.
Arc. I am indifferent.
Pal. Faith, fo am I. Good cofen, thruft the buckle
Through far enough.
Arc. I warrant you.
Pal. My cafke now,
Arc. Will you fight bare-armd ?
Pal.
We thall be the nimbler.
64 Arc. But ufe your gauntlets though : thofe are o' th' leaft, Prethee take mine, good cofen.

Pal. Thanke you, Arcite.
How doe I looke? am I falne much away ?
Arc. Faith, very little; love has ufd you kindly.
68 Pal. Ile warrant thee, Ile ftrike home.
Arc.
Doe, and fpare not.
Ile give you caufe, fweet cofen.
Pal. Now to you, fir.
Me thinkes this armour 's very like that, Arcite,
Thou wor'ft that day the three kings fell, but lighter.
72 Arc. That was a very good one; and that day
I well remember, you outdid me, cofen;

54-5.] Sid. Walker's arrangement, D. ('67, '76).

III. 6.]
The Two Noule Kinfmen.

I never faw fuch valour: when you chargd
Upon the left wing of the enemie,
I fpurd hard to come up, and under me
I had a right good horfe.
Pal. You had indeede;
A bright bay, I remember.
Arc. Yes. But all
Was vainely labour'd in me; you outwent me,
Nor could my wifhes reach you; yet a little
I did by imitation.
Pal. More by vertue;
You 're modeft, cofen.
Arc. When I faw you charge firft,
Me thought I heard a dreadfull clap of thunder
Breake from the troope.
84
Pal. But ftill before that flew
The lightning of your valour. Stay a little:
Is not this peece too ftreight ?
Arc. No, no ; 'tis well.
Pal. I would have nothing hurt thee but my fword
A bruife would be difhonour. 88 Arc.

Now I 'm perfect.
Pal. Stand off, then.
Arc. Take my fword; I hold it better.
Pal. I thanke ye. No, keepe it ; your life lyes on it :
Here's one, if it but hold, I aske no more
For all my hopes. My caufe and honour guard me!
Arc. And me my love!
[They low Severall wayes; then advance and fland.
Is there aught elfe to fay ?
Pal. This onely, and no more. Thou art mine aunt's fon, And that blood we defire to fhed is mutuall;
In me, thine, and in thee, mine : my fword
Is in my hand, and, if thou killft me,
The gods and I forgive thee; if there be

[^10][III. 6] A place prepar'd for thofe that fleepe in honour, 100 I wifh his wearie foule that falls may win it.

Fight bravely, cofen : give me thy noble hand.
Arc. Here, Palamon : this hand fhall never more
Come neare thee with fuch friendihip.
Pal.
I commend thee.
104 Arc. If I fall, curfe me, and fay I was a coward;
For none but fuch dare die in thefe juft tryalls.
Once more, farewell, my cofen.
Pal. Farewell, Arcite. [Fight.
[Hornes within: they fland.
Arc. Loe, cofen, loe! our folly has undon us.
108 Pal. Why ?
Arc. This is the duke, a-hunting as I told you;
If we be found, we 're wretched: $O$, retire,
For honour's fake and [fafety,] prefently
Into your bufh agen, fir; we fhall finde
112 Too many howres to dye in. Gentle cofen, If you be feene, you perifh inftantly
For breaking prifon ; and I, if you reveale me,
For my contempt : then all the world will fcorne us,
II6 And fay we had a noble difference,
But bafe difpofers of it.
Pal. No, no, cofen;
I will no more be hidden, nor put off
This great adventure to a fecond tryall :
120 I know your cunning and I know your caufe :
He that faints now, flame take him! Put thy felfe Upon thy prefent guard,-

Arc.
You are not mad :
Pal. Or I will make th' advantage of this howre
r24 Mine owne; and what to come fhall threaten me,
I feare leffe then my fortune. Know, weake cofen, I love Emilia; and in that Ile bury
. . . . . cousin to Arc.

IIO. sake and safety,] S. [sake, $]$ Mason, W. K. D. Sk. O.Edd. C. Ty. sake, and safely presently

III. 6.]
The Two Noble Kinfmen.

63

Thee, and all croffes elfe.
Arc. Then, come what can come,
Thou fhalt know, Palamon, I dare as well 128
Die, as difcourfe or fleepe : onely this feares me,
The law will have the honour of our ends.
Have at thy life!
Pal. Looke to thine owne well, Arcite.
[Fight againe. Hornes.
Enter Thefeus, Hippolyta, Emilia, Pirithous, and traine.
Thef. What ignorant and mad malicious traitors 132
Are you, that, 'gainft the tenor of my lawes,
Are making battaile, thus like knights appointed,
Without my leave, and officers of armes ?
By Caftor, both thall dye. 136
Pal. Hold thy word, Thefeus:
We are certainly both traitors, both defpifers
Of thee and of thy goodneffe : I am Palamon,
That cannot love thee, he that broke thy prifon;
Thinke well what that deferves: and this is Arcite; 140
A bolder traytor never trod thy ground,
A falfer nev'r feem'd friend : this is the man
Was begd and banifh'd : this is he contemnes thee
And what thou dar'ft doe ; and in this difguife, 144
Againft [thy] owne edict, followes thy fifter,
That fortunate bright ftar, the faire Emilia;
Whofe fervant-if there be a right in feeing,
And firft bequeathing of the foule to-juftly
148
I am ; and, which is more, dares thinke her his.
This treacherie, like a moft trufty lover,
I call'd him now to anfwer : if thou bee'ft,
As thou art fpoken, great and vertuous,
152
The true defcider of all injuries,
Say, "Fight againe!" and thou fhalt fee me, Thefeus,
145. thy owone] D. K.('67) thy own Q. W. K.('4I) Ty. this known Sk. thine this owne F. this own T. S. C. own

64
[III. 6] Doe fuch a juftice, thou thy felfe wilt envie: 156 Then take my life; Ile wooe thee too't.

Per.
O heaven,
What more then man is this!
Thef.
I 've fworne.
Arc.
We feeke not
Thy breath of mercy, Thefeus: 'tis to me
A thing as foone to dye as thee to fay it,
160 And no more mov'd. Where this man calls me traitor,
Let me fay thus much; if in love be treafon,
In fervice of fo excellent a beutie,
As I love moft, and in that faith will perifh,
164 As I have brought my life here to confirme it,
As I have ferv'd her trueft, worthieft,
As I dare kill this cofen that denies it,
So let me be moft traitor, and ye pleafe me.
168 For fcorning thy edict, duke, aske that lady
Why fhe is faire, and why her eyes command me
Stay here to love her; and, if he fay "traytor,"
I am a villaine fit to lye unburied.
172 Pal. Thou fhalt have pitty of us both, O Thefeus,
If unto neither thou fhew mercy ; ftop,
As thou art juft, thy noble eare againft us;
As thou art valiant, for thy cofen's foule,
176 Whofe twelve ftrong labours crowne his memory,
Let 's die together, at one inftant, duke ;
Onely a little let him fall before me,
That I may tell my foule he fhall not have her.
180 Thef. I grant your wifh; for, to fay true, your cofen
Has ten times more offended, for I gave him
More mercy then you found, fir, your offenfes
Being no more then his.-None here fpeake for 'em ;
184 For, ere the fun fet, both fhall fleepe for ever.
Hip. Alas the pitty !-Now or never, fifter,
Speake, not to be denide: that face of yours
Will beare the curfes elfe of after ages
188 For thefe loft cofens.

## III. 6.] The Two Noble Kinfmen.

Emil.
In my face, deare fifter,
I finde no anger to 'em, nor no ruyn;
The mifadventure of their owne eyes kill 'em ;
Yet that I will be woman, and have pitty,
My knees fhall grow to th' ground but Ile get mercie.
Helpe me, deare fifter: in a deede fo vertuous
The powers of all women will be with us.-
Moft royall brother,-
[They kneel.
Hip. Sir, by our tye of marriage,-
Emil. By your owne fpotleffe honour, - 196
Hip. By that faith,
That faire hand, and that honeft heart you gave me,-
Emil. By that you would have pitty in another,
By your owne vertues infinite,-
Hip. By valour,
By all the chafte nights I have ever pleafd you,-
Thef. Thefe are ftrange conjurings.
Pir.
Nay, then, Ile in too :-
By all our friendfhip, fir, by all our dangers,
[Kneels.
By all you love moft, warres, and this fweet lady, -
Emil. By that you would have trembled to deny
A blufhing maide,-
Hip. By your owne eyes, by ftrength,
In which you fwore I went beyond all women,
Almoft all men, and yet I yeelded, Thefeus,-
Pir. To crowne all this, by your moft noble foule,
Which cannot want due mercie, I beg firft.
Hip. Next, heare my prayers.
Emil.
Laft, let me intreate, fir.
Pir. For mercy.
Hip. Mercy.
Emil. Mercy on thefe princes.
Thef. Ye make my faith reele : fay I felt
Compaffion to 'em both, how would you place it ?
Emil. Upon their lives: but with their banifhments.

[^11][III. 6] Thef. You 're a right woman, fifter ; you have pitty, 216 But want the underftanding where to ufe it. If you defire their lives, invent a way Safer then banifhment: can thefe two live, And have the agony of love about 'em,
220 And not kill one another? every day
They'ld fight about you; howrely bring your honour
In publique queftion with their fwords. Be wife, then,
And here forget 'em ; it concernes your credit
224 And my oth equally; I have faid they die:
Better they fall by th' law then one another.
Bow not my honour.
Emil. O, my noble brother,
That oth was rafhly made, and in your anger ;
228 Your reafon will not hold it : if fuch vowes
Stand for expreffe will, all the world muft perifh.
Befide, I have another oth 'gainft yours,
Of more authority, I 'm fure more love;
232 Not made in paffion neither, but good heede.
Thef. What is it, fifter?
Pir. Urge it home, brave lady!
Emil. That you would nev'r deny me any thing
Fit for my modeft fuit, and your free granting :
236 I tye you to your word now, if ye fall in't,
Thinke how you maime your honour,-
For now I am fet a-begging, fir, I 'm deafe
To all but your compaffion,-how their lives
240 Might breed the ruine of my name, opinion !
Shall any thing that loves me perifh for me?
That were a cruell wifedome: doe men proyne
The ftraight yong bowes that blufh with thoufand bloffoms,
236. fall] Q. F. Ingleby. T. etc. fail 237. honour,-] D. ('67, 76). Sk. honour !- Q. S. sqq. honour ; D.('46) om. L,-]. F. honor ; T. Honour ; 239. compassion,-] L. D. compassion ; 240. name, opinion !] C. W. O.Edd. Ty. [Opinion!] name; Opinion, S. Name
-Opinion ; Se. conj. O Pity! or O piteous! or O Juno! Sy. quer. Opine Th. conj., Mason, W. conj., K. D. Sk. name's opinion!
242. proyne] Q. F. T. proyn S.C.W. K. Ty. prune D. Sk. proin

## III. 6.] The Two Noble Kinsmen.

Becaufe they may be rotten? O duke Thefeus,
The goodly mothers that have groand for thefe,
And all the longing maides that ever lov'd,
If your vow ftand, fhall curfe me and my beanty,
And in their funerall fongs for thefe two cofens
Defpife my crueltie, and cry woe worth me,
Till I am nothing but the fcorne of women.
For heaven's fake fave their lives, and banifh 'em.
Thef. On what conditions?
Emil. Sweare 'em never more
To make me their contention or to know me,
To tread upon thy dukedome, and to be,
Where ever they fhall travel, ever ftrangers
To one another.
256
Pal. Ile be cut a-peeces
Before I take this oth: forget I love her ?
O all ye gods, difpife me, then. Thy banifhment
I not miflike, fo we may fairely carry
Our fwords and caufe along ; elfe, never trifle,
But take our lives, duke: I muft love, and will;
And for that love muft and dare kill this cofen,
On any peece the earth has.
Thef. Will you, Arcite,
Take thefe conditions ?
264
pal.
He's a villaine, then.
Pir. Thefe are men!
Arcite. No, never, duke; 'tis worfe to me than begging,
To take my life fo bafely. Though I thinke
I never fhall enjoy her, yet Ile preferve
The honour of affection, and dye for her,
Make death a devill.
Thef. What may be done? for now I feele compaffion.
Pir. Let it not fall agen, fir.
Thef.
Say, Emilia,
272
If one of them were dead, as one muft, are you
[III. © ] Content to take the other to your husband ?
They cannot both enjoy you; they are princes
276 As goodly as your owne eyes, and as noble
As ever fame yet fpoke of; looke upon 'em, And, if you can love, end this difference; I give confent.-Are you content too, princes ?
280 Both. With all our foules.
Thef. He that the refufes
Muft dye, then.
Both. Any death thou canft invent, duke.
Pal. If I fall from that mouth, I fall with favour,
And lovers yet unborne fhall bleffe my afhes.
284 Arc. If the refufe me, yet my grave will wed me, And fouldiers fing my epitaph.

Thef. Make choice, then.
Emil. I cannot, fir, they 're both too excellent :
For me, a hayre fhall never fall of thefe men.
288 Hip. What will become of 'em ?
Thef. Thus I ordaine it;
And by mine honour, once againe it ftands, Or both fhall dye.-You fhall both to your countrey ;
And each within this month, accompanied
292 With three faire knights, appeare againe in this place,
In which Ile plant a pyramid; and, whether,
Before us that are here, can force his cofen
By fayre and knightly ftrength to touch the pillar,
296 He fhall enjoy her; th' other loofe his head,
And all his friends; nor fhall he grudge to fall,
Nor thinke he dies with intereft in this lady.
Will this content yee ?
Pal. Yes.-Here, cofen Arcite,
300 I am friends againe till that howre.
Arc. I embrace ye.
Thef. Are you content, fifter?
Emil.
Yes; I muft, fir,
Els both mifcarry.
Thef.
Come, fhake hands againe, then ;

## III. 6; IV. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinsmen.

And take heede, as you 're gentlemen, this quarrell
Sleepe till the howre prefixt, and hold your courfe.
Pal. We dare not faile thee, Thefeus.
Thef. Come, Ile give ye
Now ufage like to princes, and to friends.
When ye returne, who wins, Ile fettle heere;
Who loofes, yet Ile weepe upon his beere.
[Exeunt. 308

## ACT IV.

Scene I. [Athens. A room in the prifon.] [IV. I]
Enter Jailor, and Firft Friend.
Jail. Heare you no more ? was nothing faide of me
Concerning the efcape of Palamon ?
Good fir, remember.
I Fr. Nothing that I heard;
For I came home before the bulines
4
Was fully ended : yet I might perceive,
Ere I departed, a great likelihood
Of both their pardons; for Hippolyta
And faire-eyd Emilie upon their knees
8
Begd with fuch hanfom pitty, that the duke
Me thought ftood ftaggering whether he fhould follow
His rafh oth, or the fweet compaffion
Of thofe two ladies; and to fecond them,
12
That truely noble prince Pirithous,
Halfe his owne heart, fet in too, that I hope
All thall be well : neither heard I one queftion
Of your name or his fcape.
Jail. Pray heaven, it hold fo!
Enter Second Friend.
2 Fr. Be of good comfort, man; I bring you newes,
Good newes.
Jail. They 're welcome.
2 Fr. Palamon has cleerd you,
And got your pardon, and difcoverd how
19. how] C. etc. O.Edd. S. Ty. place How at beginning of 1.20.
;
The Two Noble Kinsmen.
[IV. 1.
[IV. I] And by whofe meanes he efcapt, which was your daughter's,
Whofe pardon is procurd too ; and the prifoner-
Not to be held ungratefull to her goodnes-.
Has given a fumme of money to her marriage,
24 A large one, Ile affure you.
Jail. Ye 're a good man,
And ever bring good newes.
I Fr .
How was it ended ?
2 Fr. Why, as it fhould be; they that nev'r begd
But they prevaild, had their fuites fairely granted:
28 The prifoners have their lives.
1 Fr.
I knew 'twould be fo.
2 Fr . But there be new conditions, which you'l heare of At better time.

Jail. I hope they 're good. They 're honourable,
2 Fr.
How good they'l prove, I know not.
I Fr. 'Twill be knowne.
Enter Wooer.
32 Woo. Alas, fir, wher's your daughter ?
Jail.
Why doe you aske?
Woo. O, fir, when did you fee her ?
2 Fr. How he lookes!
Jail. This morning.
Woo.
Was fhe well? was fhe in health, fir ?
When did the fleepe ?
i Fr. Thefe are ftrange queftions.
36 Jail. I doe not thinke the was very well; for, now
You make me minde her, but this very day
I ask'd her queftions, and the anfwered me
So farre from what the was, fo childifhly,
40 So fillily, as if the were a foole, An inocent; and I was very angry.
D. quer. Where

## IV. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinsmen.

But what of her, fir ?
[IV. 1$]$
Woo. Nothing but my pitty;
But you nuft know it, and as good by me
As by an other that leffe loves her.
44
Jail.
Well, fir ?
I Fr. Not right?
2 Fr. Not well?
Woo. No, fir, not well:
${ }^{\prime}$ Tis too true, fhe is mad.
1 Fr. It cannot be.
Woo. Beleeve, you'l finde it fo.
Jail. I halfe fufpected
What you [have] told me; the gods comfort her !
Either this was her love to Palamon,
Or feare of my mifcarrying on his fcape, Or both.

Woo. 'Tis likely.
Jail. $\quad$ But why all this hafte, fir ?
Woo. Ile tell you quickly. As I late was angling 52
In the great lake that lies behind the pallace,
From the far fhore, thicke fet with reedes and fedges, As patiently I was attending fport, I heard a voyce, a fhrill one; and attentive 56
I gave my eare; when I might well perceive
'Twas one that fung, and, by the fmallneffe of it
A boy or woman. I then left my angle
To his owne skill, came neere, but yet perceivd not
60
Who made the found, the rufhes and the reeds
Had fo encompaft it: I laide me downe,
And liftned to the words fhe fong; for then,
Through a fmall glade cut by the fifher men,
I faw it was your daughter.
Jail.
Pray, goe on, fir.
Woo. She fung much, but no fence; onely I heard her
48. you [have] told $]$ S. etc. (om. [ ] ). W. $\mid$ 54. far shore, $]$ Q. D.('67) far' shore, Sk. [have] O.Edd. Ty. omit have
|54 for
[IV. r] Repeat this often: " Palamon is gone,
68 Is gone to th' wood to gather mulberies ;
Ile finde him out to morrow."
1 Fr .
Pretty foule !
Woo. " His fhackles will betray him, hee'l be taken,
And what fhall I doe then ? Ile bring a beavy,
72 A hundred blacke-eyd maides that love as I doe,
With chaplets on their heads of daffadillies,
With cherry lips, and cheekes of damaske rofes,
And all wee'l daunce an antique fore the duke,
76 And beg his pardon." Then the talk'd of you, fir ;
That you muft loofe your head to-morrow morning,
And fhe muft gather flowers to bury you,
And fee the houfe made handfone. Then fhe fung
80 Nothing but "Willow, willow, willow ;" and betweene
Ever was, " Palamon, faire Palamon,"
And " Palamon was a tall yong man." The place
Was knee-deepe where the lat; her careles treffes
$8_{4}$ A wreathe of bull-rufh rounded; about her ftucke
Thoufand frefh water-flowers of feverall cullors;
That me thought the appeard like the faire nimph
That feedes the lake with waters, or as Iris
88 Newly dropt downe from heaven. Rings the made
Of rufhes that grew by, and to 'em fpoke
The prettieft pofies,-" Thus our true love's tide,"
"This you may loofe, not me," and many a one;
92 And then the wept, and fung againe, and figh'd,
And with the fame breath fmil'd, and kift her hand.
2 Fr. Alas, what pitty 'tis!
Woo. I made in to her:
She faw me, and ftraight fought the flood; I fav'd her,
96 And fet her fafe to land : when prefently
She flipt away, and to the citty made,
With fuch a cry, and fwiftnes, that, beleeve me,
Shee left me farre behinde her. Three or foure
84. wreathe] L. Q. wreake F. T. wreak S. sqq. wreath
[V. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinsmen. 73
I faw from farre off croffe her, one of 'em
1 knew to be your brother; where fhe ftaid,
And fell, fcarce to be got away : I left them with her,
And hether came to tell you. Here they are.
Enter Brother, Daughter, and others.
Daugh. [fings] May you never more enjoy the light, ${ }^{\circ} c$.
Is not this a fine fong?
104
Bro. O, a very fine one!
Daugh. I can fing twenty more.
Bro. I thinke you can.
Daugh. Yes, truely, can I; I can fing The Broome,
And Bonny Robin. Are not you a tailour ?
Bro. Yes.
108
Daugh. Wher's my wedding gowne ?
Bro. Ile bring 't to-morrow.
Daugh. Doe, very rarely ; I muft be abroad elfe,
To call the maides and pay the minftrels;
For I muft loofe my maydenhead by cocklight ;
'Twill never thrive elfe.
112
$O$ faire, $O$ fweete, $\mathcal{F}^{c}$.
[Singes.
Bro. You muft ev'n take it patiently.
Jail.
'Tis true.
Daugh. Good even, good men. Pray, did you ever heare
Of one yong Palamon ?
Jail. Yes, wench, we know him.
Daugh. Is't not a fine yong gentleman ?
Jail.
'Tis, love.
Bro. By no meane croffe her; the is then diftemperd [Far] worfe then now fhe fhowes.

1 Fr .
Daugh. O, is he fo? you have a fifter ?
1 Fr. Yes.
Daugh. But fhe fhall never have him, tell her fo,
107. Bonny] F. etc. Q. Bony F.T.S. C. early
[IV. I] For a tricke that I know : $y^{\prime}$ had beft looke to her, For, if the fee him once, the 's gone; fhe 's done, And undon in an howre. All the young maydes 124 Of our towne are in love with him, but I laugh at 'em And let 'em all alone; is't not a wife courfe ?
${ }_{\mathrm{I}} \mathrm{Fr}$. Yes.
Daugh. There is at leaft two hundred now with child by him,-
There muft be fowre ; yet I keepe clofe for all this, 128 Clofe as a cockle ; and all thefe muft be boyes, -

He has the tricke on 't; and at ten yeares old
They muft be all gelt for mufitians,
And fing the wars of Thefens.
2 Fr .
This is ftrange.
132 Daugh. As ever you heard: but fay nothing.
I Fr. No.

Daugh. They come from all parts of the dakedome to him;
Ile warrant ye, he had not fo few laft night
As twenty to difpatch; hee'l tickl't up
r36 In two howres, if his hand be in.
Jail.
She 's loft
Paft all cure.
Bro. Heaven forbid, man.
Daugh. Come hither; you're a wife man.
${ }_{1} \mathrm{Fr}$.
Do's fhe know him ?
2 Fr. No, would fhe did!
Daugh. You're mafter of a fhip ?
140 Jail. Yes.
Daugh. Wher's your compaffe ?
Jail.
Heere. Daugh.

Set it too th' north;
And now direct your courfe to th' wood, wher Palamon Lyes longing for me; for the tackling
Let me alone ; come, waygh, my hearts, cheerely!
144 All. Owgh, owgh, owgh! 'tis up, the wind is faire :
Top the bowling ; out with the maine faile:
IV. 1, 2.] The Two Noble Kinfmen.

75
Wher's your whiftle, mafter ?
Bro. Let's get her in.
Jail. Up to the top, boy !
Bro. Wher's the pilot ?
1 Fr. Heere.
Daugh. What ken'ft thou?
2 Fr. A faire wood.
Beare for it, mafter;
Daugh.
Take about!
When Cynthia with her borrowed light, छ'c.
Scene II. [Athens. A room in the Palace.]
Enter Emilia with two pictures.
Emil. Yet I may binde thofe wounds up, that muft open
And bleed to death for my fake elfe : Ile choofe,
And end their ftrife: two fuch yong hanfom men
Shall never fall for me; their weeping mothers,
Following the dead-cold athes of their fonnes,
Shall never curfe my cruelty. Good heaven, What a fweet face has Arcite! If wife nature, With all her beft endowments, all thofe beuties
[Singes.
[Exeunt.
$\qquad$

$\qquad$
-4

She fowes into the birthes of noble bodies,
Were here a mortall woman, and had in her
The coy denialls of yong maydes, yet doubtles,
She would run mad for this man : what an eye, - 12
Of what a fyry fparkle and quick fweetnes,
Has this yong prince! here Love himfelfe fits fimyling!-
Juft fuch another, wanton Ganimede
Set [Jove] a-fire with, and enforcd the god16

Snatch up the goodly boy and fet him by him,
A fhining conftellation: what a brow,-
Of what a fpacious majefty, he carries,
Arch'd like the great-eyd Juno's, but far fweeter, 20
Smoother then Pelops' fhoulder !-Fame and honour
9. sowes] Q. F. T. shews S. etc. sows $\mid$ D. Sk. O.Edd. Set Love afire with, 12, 14. eye, - ...smiling!-] L. Q. eye? ... smyling, D. eye, . . smiling;
16. Set fove afire with] Sy. conj. C. W.

Sy. conj. (2). Jove such another . . . Set Love afire with Se. conj. Ganimede He set Jove afire with S. K. Ty. omit with

76 The Two Nolle Kinfmen.
[IV. 2] Me thinks from hence, as from a promontory
Pointed in heaven, fhould clap their wings, and fing
24 To all the under world, the loves and fights
Of gods, and fuch men neere 'em. Palamon
Is but his foyle; to him, a meere dull hadow :
Hee's fivarth and meagre, of an eye as heavy 28 As if he had loft his mother ; a ftill temper,

No ftirring in him, no alacrity ;
Of all this fprightly tharpenes, not a fmile;
Yet thefe that we count errours, may become him :
32 Narciffus was a fad boy, but a heavenly.
O , who can finde the bent of woman's fancy ?
I an a foole, my reafon is loft in me;
I have no choice, and I have ly'd fo lewdly 36 That women ought to beate me. On my knees

I aske thy pardon, Palamon ; thou art alone,
And only beutifull; and thefe the eyes,
Thefe the bright lamps of beauty, that command
40 And threaten Love; and what yong mayd dare croffe 'em ?
What a bold gravity, and yet inviting,
Has this browne manly face? O Love, this only
From this howre is complexion. Lye there, Arcite:
44 Thou art a changling to him, a meere gipfey,
And this the noble bodie. I am fotted,
Utterly loft; my virgin's faith has fled me;
For, if my brother but even now had ask'd me 48 Whether I lov'd, I had run mad for Arcite;

Now if my fifter, more for Palamon.
Stand both together.-Now, come, aske me, brother ;-
Alas, I know not!-Aske me now, fweet fifter ;-
52 I may goe looke !-What a meere child is fancie,
That, having two faire gaw des of equall fweetneffe,
Cannot diftinguifh, but muft crie for both !
28. As if he had lost his mother] O.Edd. etc. C. conj. As h' had not lost his mother S. C. K. As if he'd lost 38. the eyes] Q. Ty. Sk. F. etc. thy eyes

Mason, And these bright eyes, They're the bright lamps 46. virgin's] T. etc. Q. F. Virgins S. D. Virgin Faith
IV. 2.] The Two Noble Kinfmen. 77

Enter a [Gentleman.]
[IV. 2 ]
Emil. How now, fir!
Gent. From the noble duke your brother,
Madam, I bring you newes: the knights are come.
Emil. To end the quarrell ?
Gent.
Yes.
Emil. Would I might end firft!
What finnes have I committed, chaft Diana,
That my unfpotted youth muft now be foyld
With blood of princes, and my chaftitie
Be made the altar, where the lives of lovers-
Two greater and two better never yet
Made mothers joy,-muft be the facrifice
To my unhappy beautie ?
Enter Thefeus, Hippolyta, Pirithous, and Attendants.
Thef.
Bring 'em in
Quickly by any meanes; I long to fee 'em.
Your two contending lovers are return'd,
And with them their faire knights : now, my faire fifter,
You muft love one of them.
Emil. I had rather both,
So neither for my fake fhould fall untimely.
Thef. Who faw 'em ?
Pir.
I a while.
Gent.
And I.
Enter a Meffenger; (Curtis.)
Thef. From whence come you, fir?
Mel.
From the knights.
Thef. Pray, fpeake,
You that have feene them, what they are. $\quad 7^{2}$
Enter a Gentleman] T. Q. F. Enter Emil. $\mid$ 67. faire] Q. F. etc. fair Sid. Walker, and Gent.
63. mothers joy] O.Edd. S. D. Ty. K. ('67)

Sk. C. W. K.('4I) mothers' joy
conj. sixe knights
Messenger] Edd. Q. Messengers

And truly what I thinke. Six braver fpirits
Then thefe they 've brought-if we judge by th' outfide-
I never faw nor read of. He that fands
76 In the firft place with Arcite, by his feeming
Should be a ftout man, by his face a prince,-
His very lookes fo fay him ; his complexion
Nearer a browne than blacke; fterne, and yet noble,
80 Which fhewes him hardy, feareleffe, proud of dangers;
The circle of his eyes fhow [fire] within him, And as a heated lyon fo he lookes;
His haire hangs long behind him, blacke and fhining
84 Like ravens' wings; his fhoulders broad and ftrong;
Armd long and round; and on his thigh a fword
Hung by a curious bauldricke, when he frownes
To feale his will with; better, o' my confcience,
88 Was never fouldier's friend.
Thef. Thou'ft well defcribde him. Pir.

Yet a great deale flort,
Me thinkes, of him that's firft with Palamon.
Thef. Pray, fpeake him, friend.
Pir. I gheffe he is a prince too,
92 And, if it may be, greater ; for his hhow
Has all the ornament of honour in't:
Hee's fomewhat bigger then the knight he fpoke of,
But of a face far fweeter; his complexion
96 Is as a ripe grape ruddy; he has felt,
Without doubt, what he fights for, and fo apter
To make this caufe his owne ; in 's face appeares
All the faire hopes of what he undertakes; 100 And when he's angry, then a fetled valour,

Not tainted with extreames, runs through his body, And guides his arme to brave things; feare he cannot, He thewes no fuch foft temper; his head 's yellow,
74. these] Q. C. W. K. Ty. Sk. F. etc.
those F. T. K.('4I) fair S. C. W. Ty. far
those
8I. fire] Heath. D. K.('67) Sk. Q. faire
Q. Armd S. C. Ty. Arms

## IV. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Hard hayr'd, and curld, thicke twind, like [ivy-tods,]
[IV. 2]
Not to undoe with thunder; in his face
The liverie of the warlike maide appeares, Pure red and white, for yet no beard has bleft him ;
And in his rowling eyes fits victory,
As if fhe ever ment to [court] his valour ;
His nofe ftands high, a character of honour ;
His red lips, after fights, are fit for ladies.
Emil. Muft thefe men die too?
Pir. When he fjeakes, his tongue
Sounds like a trumpet ; all his lyneaments
Are as a man would wifh 'em, ftrong, and cleane;
He weares a well-fteeld axe, the ftaffe of gold;
His age fome five and twenty.
Mef. Ther's another,
A little man, but of a tough foule, feeming
As great as any; fairer promifes
In fuch a body yet I never look'd on.
Pir. O, he that 's freckle-fac'd ?
120
Me. $\varnothing$. The fame, my lord:
Are they not fweet ones?
Pir. Yes, they are well.
Mel反. Me thinkes,
Being fo few and well-difpofd, they fhow
Great and fine art in nature. He's white-hair'd,
Not wanton-white, but fuch a manly colour
Next to an aborne; tough, and nimble-fet,
Which fhowes an active foule; his armes are brawny,
Linde with ftrong finewes; to the fhoulder-peece
Gently they fwell, like women new-conceav'd,
Which feakes him prone to labour, never fainting
Under the waight of armes ; ftout-harted, ftill,
But, when he ftirs, a tiger; he's gray-eyd,
Which yeelds compaffion where he conquers; fharpe
132

| 104 ivy-tods] L. O.Edd. etc. Ivy tops or | $\begin{array}{c}\text { F. T. Ty. correct } \\ \text { ivy-tops } \\ \text { 109. court] L. }\end{array} \quad$ S. etc. crown | Q. corect | $\begin{array}{c}\text { sthearted, still] Q. } \\ \text { stout-hearted om. [.] still, }\end{array}$ |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: |

[IV. 2] To fpy advantages, and where he finds 'em, He 's fwift to make 'em his; he do's no wrongs, Nor takes none; he's round-fac'd, and when he fimiles 1 36 He flowes a lover, when he frownes, a fouldier ; About his head he weares the wimner's oke, And in it fucke the favour of his lady; His age, fome fix and thirtie; in his hand
140 He beares a charging-ftaffe, emboft with filver.
Thef. Are they all thus?
Pir.
They 're all the fonnes of honour.
Thef. Now, as I have a Coule, I long to fee 'em -
Lady, you thall fee men fight now.
Hip.
I wifh it,
144 But not the caufe, my lord : they would fhow
Bravely about the titles of two kingdomes:
"Tis pitty love fhould be fo tyrannous.-
O my foft-harted fifter, what thinke you?
148 Weepe not, till they weepe blood, wench : it muft be.
Thef. You 've fteel'd 'em with your beautie.-Honord friend,
To you I give the feild ; pray, order it, Fitting the perfons that muft ufe it.

Pir.
Yes, fir.
152 Thef. Come, Ile goe vifit 'em : I cannot flayTheir fame has fir'd me fo-till they appeare.
Good friend, be royall.
Pir.
There fhall want no bravery.
Emil. Poore wench, goe weepe; for whofoever wins, 156 Loofes a noble cofen for thy fins.
[Exeunt.
[IV. 3] Scene III. [Athens. A room in the prifon.]
Enter Jailor, Wooer, and Doctor.
Doct. Her diffraction is more at fome time of the moone then at other fome, is it not?

[^12]IV. 3.] The Two Noble Kinfmen. 81

Jail. She is continually in a harmeleffe diftemper, fleepes [IV. 3] little; altogether without appetite, fave often drinking, dream- 4 ing of another world, and a better; and what broken peece of matter fo e'er fhe's about, the name Palamon lardes it, that fhe farces ev'ry bufines withall, fyts it to every queftion.-Looke where fhee comes; you thall perceive her behaviour.

## Enter Daughter.

Daugh. I have forgot it quite; The burden on 't was Downe-a, downe-a, and pend by no worfe man then Geraldo, Emilia's fchoolemafter ; he's as fantafticall, too, as ever he may goe upon's legs, for in the next world will Dido fee Palamon, 12 and then will the be out of love with Æneas.

Doct. What ftuff's here ! pore foule!
Jail. Ev'n thus all day long.
Daugh. Now for this charme that I told you of. You muft 16 bring a peece of filver on the tip of your tongue, or no ferry : then, if it be your chance to come where the bleffed firits-as ther's a fight now !-we maids that have our lyvers perifh'd, crakt to peeces with love, we thall come there, and doe 20 nothing all day long but picke flowers with Proferpine; then will I make Palamon a nolegay ; then let him-marke me-then-

Doct. How prettily fhe 's amiffe! note her a little further. 24
Daugh. Faith Ile tell you, fometime we goe to barly-breake, we of the bleffed. Alas, 'tis a fore life they have i' th' other place, fuch burning, frying, boyling, hiffing, howling, chattring, curfing. O, they have fhrowd meafure! Take heede: if one 28 be mad, or hang, or drowne themfelves, thither they goe, Jupiter bleffe us! and there fhall we be put in a caldron of lead and ufurers' greafe, amongft a whole million of cutpurfes, and there boyle like a gamon of bacon that will never be 32 enough.
18-19. (as there's] F. T. S. C. K. (O.Edd. om. () ). Q. as th'ers Mason, are, (there's a sight) we maids W. [are,] (there 's a sight now) we D. Sk. arethere's a sight now !-we Ty. spirit's, as there's a sight now; L. qy. ay, there's

[^13][IV. 3] Doct. How her braine coynes !
Daugh. Lords and courtiers, that have got maids with 36 child, they are in this place; they fhall ftand in fire up to the navle, and in yce up to th' hart, and there th' offending part burnes, and the deceaving part freezes; in troth, a very greevous punifhment, as one would thinke, for fuch a trifle; be40 leve me, one would marry a leaprous witch, to be rid on 't, Ile affure you.

Doct. How fhe continues this fancie! 'Tis not an engraffed madneffe, but a moft thicke and profound mellencholly.
44 Daugh. To heare there a proud lady and a proud cittywife howle together! I were a beaft and Il'd call it good fport : one cries, "O! this fimoake!" [th' other] "This fire!" one cries, " $O$, that ever $I$ did it behind the arras!" and then 48 howles; th' other curfes a fuing fellow and her garden houfe. I will be true, my fiars, my fate, ซ夭c. [Sings. [Exit.
Jail. What thinke you of her, fir ?
Doct. I think the has a perturbed minde, which I cannot 52 minifter to.

Jail. Alas, what then ?
Doct. Underftand you the ever affected any man ere fhe beheld Palamon ?
56 Jail. I was once, fir, in great hope the had fixd her liking on this gentleman, my friend.

Woo. I did thinke fo too, and would account I had a great pen'worth on 't, to give halfe my ftate, that both the and I at 60 this prefent ftood unfainedly on the fame tearmes.

Doct. That intemprat furfeit of her eye hath diftemperd the other fences: they may returne and fettle againe to execute their preordaind faculties; but they are now in a moft extrava64 gant vagary. This you muft doe: confine her to a place where the light may rather feeme to fteale in then be permitted; take upon you, yong fir her friend, the name of Palamon, fay you come to eate with her, and to commune of

## IV. 3; V. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

love; this will catch her attention, for this her minde beates [IV. 3] upon; other objects, that are inferted tweene her minde and eye, become the prankes and friskins of her madnes : fing to her, fuch greene fongs of love as fhe fayes Palamon hath fung in prifon; come to her, ftucke in as fweet flowers as the 72 feafon is miftres of, and thereto make an addition of fom other compounded odours, which are grateful to the fence; all this fhall become Palamon, for Palamon can fing, and Palamon is fweet, and ev'ry good thing : defire to eate with her, [carve] 76 her, drinke to her, and ftill among intermingle your petition of grace and acceptance into her favour : learne what maides have beene her companions and play-pheeres, and let them repaire to her with Palamon in their mouthes, and appeare with 80 tokens, as if they fuggefted for him. It is a falfehood the is in, which is with falfehoods to be combated. This may bring her to eate, to fleepe, and reduce what 's now out of fquare in her, into their former law and regiment: I bave feene it approved, 84 how many times I know not ; but to make the number more, I have great hope in this. I will, betweene the paffages of this project, come in with my applyance. Let us put it in execution ; and haften the fucceffe, which doubt not, will bring 88 forth comfort.
[F/orifh. Exeunt.

## ACT V.

Scene I. [Athens. Three Altars prepared, and infcrived [V. I] Severally to Mars, Venus, and Diana.]
Enter Thefeus, Pirithous, Hippolyta, and Attendants.
[A.fourifh.
Thef. Now let 'em enter, and before the gods
Tender their holy prayers: let the temples
Burne bright with facred fires, and the altars
In hallowed clouds commend their fwelling incenfe 4

[^14]84 The Two Noble Kinfmen.
[V. I] To thofe above us : let no due be wanting:
They have a noble worke in hand, will honour The very powers that love 'em.
Florifh of Cornets. Enter Palamon, Arcite, and their Knights. Pir. Sir, they enter.
8 Thef. You valiant and ftrong-harted enemies,
You royall german foes, that this day come
To blow that neareneffe out that flames betweene ye,
Lay by your anger for an houre, and dove-like
12 Before the holy altars of your helpers,
The all-feard gods, bow downe your ftubborne bodies :
Your ire is more than mortall; fo your helpe be!
And as the gods regard ye, fight with juftice :
16 Ile leave you to your prayers, and betwixt ye
I part my wifhes.

> Pir. $\quad$ Honour crowne the worthieft! [Exeunt Thefens and his traine.

Pal. The glaffe is rumning now that cannot finifh
Till one of us expire : thinke you but thus,
20 That were there aught in me which ftrove to fhow
Mine enemy in this bufineffe, wer't one eye
Againft another, arme oppreft by arme,
I would deftroy th' offender; coz, I would,
24 Though parcell of my felfe : then from this gather
How I hould tender you. Arc.

I am in labour
To puif your name, your auncient love, our kindred,
Out of my memory ; and i' th' felfe-fame place
28 To feate fomething I would confound : fo hoyft we
The fayles, that mult thefe veffells port even where
The heavenly lymiter pleafes.
Pal. You fpeake well.
Before I turne, let me embrace thee, cofen :
32 This I fhall never doe agen.
10. nearenesse] Edd. Ingleby conj. fierce-
nesse

## V. I.]

The Two Nolle Kinfmen.
85
Arc.
One farewell!
[V. 1]
Pal. Why let it be fo: farewell, coz!
Arc.
Farewell, fir!
[They embrace.-Exeunt Palamon and his Knights.
Knights, kinfmen, lovers, yea, my facrifices,
True worfhippers of Mars, whofe fipirit in you
Expells the feedes of feare, and th' apprehenfion
Which ftill is farther off it, goe with me
Before the god of our profeffion : there

- Require of him the hearts of lyons, and

The breath of tigers, yea, the fearceneffe too,
Yea, the fpeed alfo,-to goe on, I meane,
Elfe wifh we to be fnayles : you know my prize
Muft be drag'd out of blood; force and great feate
Muft put my garland on, where fhe ftickes
The queene of flowers; our interceffion then
Muft be to him that makes the campe a ceftron
Brymd with the blood of men : give me your aide,
And bend your fpirits towards him.48
[They advance to the altar of Mars, and fall on their faces; then kneel.
Thou mighty one, that with thy power haft turnd
Greene Neptune into purple; [whofe approach]
Comets prewarne; whofe havocke in vafte feild
Unearthed skulls proclaime; whofe breath blowes downe 52
The teeming Ceres' foyzon; who doft plucke
With hand [armypotent] from forth blew clowdes
The mafond turrets; that both mak'ft and break'ft
The ftony girthes of citties; me thy puple, $5^{6}$
Yong'ft follower of thy drom, inftruct this day
37. farther off $i t]$ Q. F. S. Ty. T. farther of it C. K. further off Heath, Mason, W. D. Sk. father of it
44. she stickes] Q. F. T. D. K.('67) Ty. she sticks S. etc. K.('4I) she will stick L. quer. on me, where she stickes 48. They advance, Eoc.] D. Q. They
50. Neptune] F. Q. Nepture. [whose approach] S. etc. insert. lacuna in O. Edd.
54. armipotent] S. sqq. Q. armenypotent F. T. armenipotent Ty. omnipotent 57. Young'st] D. Q. Yongest F.T.W. Ty. K. Youngest S. Young
[V. 1] With military skill, that to thy lawde
I may advance my ftreamer, and by thee
60 Be ftil'd the lord o' th' day ;-give me, great Mars,
Some token of thy pleafure.
[Here they fall on their faces as formerly, and there is heard clanging of armor, with a Short thunder, as the burft of a battaile, whereupon they all rife and low to the altar.
O great corrector of enormous times,
Shaker of ore-rank ftates, thou grand decider
64 Of duftie and old tytles, that heal'ft with blood
The earth when it is ficke, and cur'f the world
$O^{\prime}$ the plurefie of people; I doe take
Thy fignes aufpicioully, and in thy name
68 To my defigne march boldly. Let us goe. [Excunt.
Re-enter Palamon and his Knights.
Pal. Our ftars muft glifter with new fire, or be
To-daie extinct ; our argument is love,
Which if the goddeffe of it grant, fhe gives
72 Victory too: then blend your fpirits with mine,
You, whofe free nobleneffe doe make my caufe
Your perfonall hazard: to the goddeffe Venus
Commend we our proceeding, and implore 76 Her power unto our partie
[They advance to the altar of Venus, and fall on their faces; then kneel.
Haile, foveraigne queene of fecrets, who haft power
To call the feirceft tyrant from his rage
And weepe unto a girle; that haft the might
80 Even with an ey-glance to choke Mars's drom,
And turne th' allarme to whifpers; that canft make
A criple florifh with his crutch, and cure him
Before Apollo; that may'ft force the king
68. Re-enter, \&oc.] D. Q. Enter Palamon and his Knights, with the former observance
76. They advance, Evc.] D. Q. Here they
kneele as formerly,
79. And weepe] Q. F. T. Ty. And weep S. etc. To weep Th. conj. weep into

## V. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

To be his fubject's vaffaile, and induce
Stale gravitie to daunce ; the poul'd bach'lour-
Whofe youth, like wanton boyes through bonfyres,
Have skipt thy flame-at feaventy thou canft catch, And make him, to the fcorne of his hoarfe throate,88

Abufe yong laies of love. What godlike power
Haft thou not power upon? to Phœbus thou Add'ft flames hotter then his; the heavenly fyres
Did fcortch his mortall fon, thine him ; the huntreffe
All moyft and cold, fome fay, began to throw Her bow away, and figh. Take to thy grace Me, thy vowd fouldier, who doe beare thy yoke As 'twer a wreath of rofes, yet is heavier
Then lead it felfe, ftings more than nettles: I
Have never beene foule-mouthd againft thy law;
Nev'r reveald fecret, for I knew none,-would not,
Had I kend all that were; I never practifed
Upon man's wife, nor would the libells reade
Of liberall wits ; I never at great feaftes
Sought to betray a beautie, but have blufh'd At fimpring firs that did; I have beene harfh
To large confeffors, and have hotly ask'd them
If they had mothers ? I had one, a woman, And women 'twer they wrong'd: I knew a man Of eightie winters,-this I told them,-who
A laffe of foureteene brided; 'twas thy power
To put life into duft ; the aged crampe
Had fcrew'd his fquare foote round,
The gout had knit his fingers into knots,
Torturing convulfions from his globie eyes
Had almoft drawne their fpheeres, that what was life
In him feem'd torture; this anatomie
85. Stale gravity] Edd. Mason, quer. stategravity pould d] L. O.Edd. pould S. C. W. K. Ty. polled D. Sk. pollèd L. bach'lour] Q. Bachelour
86. Whose youth] O.Edd. etc. S. whose

Freaks of Youth
87. Have] Edd. Mason, hath
97. nettles: I] D. ('67, '76). Sk. prints $I$ at beg. l. 98. S. Nettles ; I've never
[V. 1] Had by his yong faire pheare a boy, and I
Beleev'd it was his, for fhe fwore it was,
And who would not beleeve her? Briefe, I am
To thofe that prate, and have done, no companion;
120 To thofe that boaft, and have not, a defyer;
To thofe that would, and cannot, a rejoycer ;
Yea, him I doe not love, that tells clofe offices
The fowleft way, nor names concealements in
124 The boldeft language; fuch a one I am,
And vow that lover never yet made figh
Truer then I. O, then, moft foft fweet goddeffe,
Give me the victory of this queftion, which 128 Is true love's merit, and bleffe me with a figne

Of thy great pleafure.
[Here muficke is heard, doves are Seene to flutter: they fall againe upon their faces, then on their knees.
Pal. O thou that from eleven to ninetie raign'ft
In mortall bofomes, whofe chafe is this world, 132 And we in heards thy game, I give thee thankes

For this faire token ; which being layd unto
Mine innocent true heart, armes in affurance
My body to this bufineffe.-Let us rife 1.36 And bow before the goddeffe: time comes on.
[They low. Exeunt.
[Still muficke of records. Enter Emilia in white, her haire about her fhoulders, [and wearing] a wheaten ureath: One in white holding up her traine, her haire fiucke with flowers; one before her carrying a filver hynde, in which is conveyd incenfe and Sweet odours, which leing fet upon the altar [of Diana,] her maides fianding aloofe, Jhe Sets fire to it; then they curtfey and kneele.
Emil. O facred, fhadowie, cold and conftant queene,
116. pheare] Q. F. T. Sphere S.
(conj.!) Ty. Pheer
C. W. K. pheer D. fere

119-12I.] S. sqq. Wrongly pointed in O.Edd. Q. prate and have done; no

Companion To those that boast and
have not ; a defyer To those that would and cannot ; a \&c.
126. soft sweet ] Q. D. soft-sweet
136. maides] Q. F. T. K. D. Ty. Sk. Maids S. C. W. Maid

## V. 1.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

Abandoner of revells, mute, contemplative, Sweet, folitary, white as chafte, and pure As winde-fand fnow, who to thy femall knights
Allow'ft no more blood than will make a blufh, Which is their order's robe ; I heere, thy prieft, Am humbled fore thine altar: O, vouchfafe, With that thy rare greene eye-which never yet
Beheld thing maculate--looke on thy virgin ;
And, facred filver miftris, lend thine eare-
Which nev'r heard fcurrill terme, into whofe port
Ne're entred wanton found-to my petition
Seafond with holy feare. This is my laft Of veftall office; I 'm bride-habited, But mayden-harted; a husband I have 'pointed, But due not know him ; out of two, I fhould
Choofe one, and pray for his fucceffe; but I
Am guiltleffe of election : of mine eyes
Were I to loofe one,-they are equall precious,-
I could doombe neither; that which perifh'd thould
Goe too't unfentenc'd : therefore, moft modeft queene,
He , of the two pretenders, that beft loves me
And has the trueft title in 't, let him
Take off my wheaten gerland, or elfe grant 160
The fyle and qualitie I hold I may
Continue in thy band.
[Here the hynde vanifhes under the altar, and in the place afcends a rofe-tree, having one rofe upon it.
See what our generall of ebbs and flowes
Out from the bowells of her holy altar
With facred act advances; but one rofe!
If well infpird, this battaile fhal confound
Both thefe brave knights, and I, a virgin flowre, Muft grow alone unpluck'd. 168

[^15][V. I] [Here is heard a fodaine twang of inftruments, and the rofe fals from the tree, which vanifhes under the altar.
The flowre is falne, the tree defcends.-O miftris, Thou here difchargeft me; I fhall be gather'd, I thinke fo; but I know not thine owne will:
172 Unclafpe thy myfterie.-I hope fhe's pleas'd; Her fignes were gratious.
[They curtfey, and exeunt.
Scene II. [Athens. A room in the prifon.]
[V. 2] Enter Doctor, Jailor, and Wooer in halite of Palamon.
Doct. Has this advice I told you done any good upon her?
Woo. O very much; the maids that kept her company
Have halfe perfwaded her that I am Palamon ;
4 Within this halfe houre the came finiling to me,
And asked me what I 'ld eate, and when I 'ld kiffe her :
I told her prefently, and kift her twice.
Doct. 'Twas well done: twentie times had bin far better; 8 For there the cure lies mainely.
$W_{o o}$.
Then the told me
She 'ld watch with me to-night, for well the knew
What houre my fit would take me.
Doct. Let her doe fo;
And when your fit comes, fit her home, and prefently.
${ }^{2} 2$ Woo. She would have me fing.
Doct. You did fo ?
Woo. No.
Doct. 'Twas very ill done, then ;
You thould obferve her ev'ry way.
Woo. Alas,
I have no voice, fir, to confirme her that way !
16 Doct. That's all one, if yee make a noyfe :
If fhe intreate againe, doe any thing ;
Lye with her, if the aske you.
Jail.
Hoa, there, doctor !
Doct. Yes, in the waie of cure.

## V. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. <br> $9{ }^{1}$

Jail. But firft, by your leave, [V. 2]
I' th' way of honeftie.
Doct. That's but a niceneffe ;
Nev'r caft your child away for honeftie :
Cure her firft this way ; then, if fhee will be honeft, She has the path before her.

Jail. Thanke yee, doctor.
Doct. Pray, bring her in,
And let 's fee how thee is.
Jail. I will, and tell her
Her Palamon ftaies for her : but, doctor,
Me thinkes you are i' th' wrong till.
[Exit.
Doct. Goe, goe ;
You fathers are fine fooles: her honefty!
And we fhould give her phyficke till we finde that-
Woo. Why, doe you thinke fhe is not honeft, fir ?
Doct. How old is fhe ?
Woo. She 's eighteene.
Doct.
She may be;
But that 's all one, 'tis nothing to our purpofe:
What e'er her father faies, if you perceave
Her moode inclining that way that I fpoke of,
Videlicet, the way of fleth-you have me?
Woo. [Yes,] very well, fir.
Doct.
Pleafe her appetite,
And doe it home ; it cures her, ipfo facto,36

The mellencholly humour that infects her.
Woo. I am of your minde, doctor.
Doct. You'l finde it fo. She comes, pray [humour] her.
Re-enter Jailor, Daughter, and Maide.
Jail. Come ; your love Palamon ftaies for you, childe,
And has done this long houre, to vifite you.
Daugh. I thanke him for his gentle patience;
He's a kind gentleman, and I 'm much bound to him.

| 35. Yes, very] C. sqq. | Q. Yet very | F. | $\begin{array}{l}\text { 39. humour] S. sqq. } \\ \text { honor }\end{array}$ | Q. T. honour F. Yes very |
| :---: | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |

92
The Two Noble Kinfmen.
$\left[\begin{array}{ll}\mathrm{V} & 2\end{array}\right]$ Did you nev'r fee the horfe he gave me:
44 Jail.
Yes.
Daugh. How doe you like him?
Jail. He's a very faire one.
Daugh. You never faw him dance ?
Jail.
No.
Daugh.
He daunces very finely, very comely;
48 And, for a jigge, come cut and long taile to him ;
He turnes ye like a top.
Jail. That's fine indeede.
Daugh. Hee'l dance the morris twenty mile an houre,
And that will founder the beft hobby-horfe,
52 If I have any skill, in all the parith;
And gallops to the [tune] of Light a' love:
What thinke you of this horfe?
Jail. Having thefe vertues
I thinke he might be broght to play at temnis.
56 Daugh. Alas, that 's nothing.
Jail.
Can he write and reade too?
Daugh. A very faire hand; and cafts himfelfe th' accounts
Of all his hay and provender: that hoftler
Muft rife betime that cozens him. You know
60 The cheftnut mare the duke has ?
Jail. Very well.
Daugh. She's horribly in love with him, poore beaft ;
But he is like his mafter, coy and fcornefull.
Jail. What dowry has fhe?
Daugh. Some two hundred bottles,
64 And twenty ftrike of oåtes; but hee'l ne'er have her :
He lifpes in's neighing, able to entice
A millar's mare; hee'l be the death of her.
Doct. What ftuffe fhe utters!
68 Jail. Make curtfie, here your love comes.
53. tune] S. sqq.
turn
Light
a, $\frac{\text { Q. turne }}{}$ Love O.Edd. T. Ty. $\mid$ Light o' love: Ty. Light-a-love ! turn Light a' Love :] O.Edd. D.

## V. 2.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen.

93
Woo.
Pretty foule,
[V. 2]
How doe ye ? That's a fine maide; ther's a curtfie!
Daugh. Yours to command, i' th' way of honeftie.
How far is 't now to th' end o' th' world, my mafters ?
Doct. Why, a day's jorney, wench.
$7^{2}$
Daugh.
Woo. What fhall we doe there, wench ?
Daugh.
Why, play at ftoole ball :
What is there elfe to doe ?
Woo. I am content,
If we fhall keepe our wedding there.
Daugh.
'Tis true,
For there, I will affure you, we thall finde
Some blind prieft for the purpofe, that will venture
To marry us, for here they 're nice and foolifh ;
Befides, my father muft be hang'd to-morrow,
And that would be a blot $i$ ' th' bufineffe.
Are not you Palamon ?
Woo. Doe not you know me?
Daugh. Yes ; but you care not for me ; I have nothing
But this pore petticoate and too corle fmockes.
Woo. That's all one; I will have you.
Woo. Yes, by this faire hand, will I.

Daugh.
Woo. Ev'n when you will.
Wee'l to bed, then.
[Ki/fes her.]
Daugh.
O, fir, you 'ld faine be nibling.
Woo. Why doe you rub my kiffe off?
Daugh.
'Tis a fweet one,
And will perfume me finely 'gainft the wedding.
Is not this your cofen Arcite?
Doct.
Yes, fweet heart ;
And I am glad my cofen Palamon
Has made fo faire a choice.
Daugh.
Doe you thinke hee'l have me ?

Daugh. We fhall have many children.-Lord, how y 'ar growne!
My Palamon I hope will grow, too, finely, Now he 's at liberty : alas, poore chicken, 96 He was kept downe with hard meate and ill lodging;

But Ile kiffe him up againe.
Enter a Meffenger.
Mefl. What doe you here? you'l loofe the nobleft fight That ev'z was feene.

Jail. Are they i' th' field ?
Me (/).
They are :
100 You beare a charge there too.
Jail.
Ile away ftraight.-
I muft ev'n leave you here.
Doct. Nay, wee'l goe with you;
I will not loofe the [fight.]
Jail.
How did you like her :
Doct. Ile warrant you, within thefe three or four daies 104 Ile make her right againe. You muft not from her, But ftill preferve her in this way.

Woo.
I will.
Doct. Let's get her in.
Woo.
Come, fweete, weel goe to dinner ;
And then weele play at cardes.
Daugh.
And thall we kiffe too?
ıo8 Woo. A hundred times.
Daugh.
And twenty ?
Woo. I, and twenty.
Daugh. And then weel fleepe together ?
Doct. Take her offer.
Woo. Yes, marry, will we
100. Ile away] Qo. Edd. I'll L. quer. I
will $\begin{gathered}\text { IO2. sisht] D. lose the sight. } \\ \text { not loose the Fight. }\end{gathered} \quad$ Q. I will will
V. 2, 3.] The Two Noble Kinfmen. 95

Daugh. But you fhall not hurt me. [V. 2]
Woo. I will not, fweete.
Daugh. If you doe, love, Ile cry.
[Exeunt. I 12
Scene IIl. [A part of the foreft near Athens, and near the [V. 3] place appointed for the combat.]
Flourifh. Enter Thefeus, Hippolyta, Emilia, Pirithous: and fome Attendants, (T. Tucke: Curtis.)
Emil. Ile no ftep further.
Pir. . Will you loofe this fight ?
Emil. I had rather fee a wren hawke at a fly,
Then this decifion : ev'ry blow that falls
Threats a brave life; each ftroake laments
4
The place whereon it fals, and founds more like
A bell then blade : I will ftay here, -
It is enough my hearing fhall be punifhd
With what fhall happen, gainft the which there is
8
No defffing, but to beare,-not taint mine eye
With dread fights it may fhun.
Pir.
Sir, my good lord,
Your fifter will no further.
Thef. O, fhe muft :
She fhall fee deeds of honour in their kinde,
Which fometime fhow well, pencild : nature now
Shall make and act the ftory, the beleife
Both feald with eye and eare. You muft be prefent ;
You are the victour's meede, the price and garlond
To crowne the queftion's title.
Emil.
Pardon me ;

A part of the forest] D. W. An Apartment in the Palace Ty. A Place near the Lists
6. here,-] L. Q. here, It is enough my hearing shall be punishd, With . . . happen, gainst . . . deaffing, but to heare ; not C. W. here : . . . happen, ('gainst . . deafing) but to hear, not D. ('67, '76) happen,--'gainst . . . deaf-ing,-but to hear, not Sk. happen,
gainst . . . deafing, but to hear,-not S. and against
13. show well, pencill'd] D. Heath, Mason, W. Sk. O.Edd. Ty. well [om. ,] S. time shall show well pencill'd C. K. well-pencil'd
16. price] Edd. L. quer. prize
17. question's title] O.Edd. sqq. Sk. D.('67, '76) questant's title

## [V. 3] If I were there, I'ld winke.

Thef. You muft be there;
This tryall is as 'twer $i$ ' th' night, and you 20 The onely ftar to fhine.

## Emil.

## I am extinet :

There is but enry in that light, which fhowes
The one the other. Darkenes, which ever was
The dam of horrour, who do's ftand accurft
24 Of many mortall millions, may even now,
By cafting her blacke mantle over both, That neither could finde other, get her felfe Some part of a good name, and many a murther 28 Set off wherto fhe's guilty.

Hip. You muft goe.
Emil. In faith, I will not.
Thef. Why, the knights muft kindle
Their valour at your eve : know, of this war
You are the treafure, and muft needes be by
32 To give the fervice pay.
Emil. Sir, pardon me;
The tytle of a kingdome may be tride
Out of it felfe.
Thef. Well, well then, at your pleafure;
Thofe that remaine with you could with their office
$3^{5}$ To any of their enem:es.
Hip. Farewell, fifter:
I m like to know your husband fore your felfe,
$B:$ fome fmall ftart of time : he whom the god,
Dre of the two know beft, I pray them be to Be made your lot.
[Ereunt all except Emilia and fome of the Attendants.]
Emil. Arcite is gently rifagd; ret his eve
Is like an engro bent, or a tharpe weapon
In a foft theath; mercy and manly courage
44 Are bedfellowes in his, rifage. Palamon
V. 3.] The Two Noble Kinfmen. ..... 97

Has a moft menacing afpect; his brow
Is grav'd, and feemes to bury what it frownes on;
Yet fometime 'tis not fo, but alters to
The quallity of his thoughts ; long time his eye
Will dwell upon his object ; mellencholly
Becomes him nobly ; fo do's Arcite's mirth ;
But Palamon's fadnes is a kinde of mirth,
So mingled, as if mirth did make him fad, $5^{2}$
And fadnes, merry ; thofe darker humours that Sticke misbecomingly on others, on [him]
Live in faire dwelling.
[Cornets. Trompets found as to a charge.
Harke, how yon fpurs to fpirit doe incite 56

The princes to their proofe! Arcite may win me;
And yet may Palamon wound Arcite to
The fpoyling of his figure. O, what pitty
Enough for fuch a chance. If I were by,
I might doe hurt ; for they would glance their cies
Toward my feat, and in that motion might.
Omit a ward, or forfeit an sffence,
Which crav'd that very time : it is much better
I am not there; $O$, better never borne
Then minifter to fuch harme.
[Cornets; a great cry and noice within; crying " A Palamon!" What is the chance ?
Ser. The crie's " A Palamon!"
Emil. Then he has won. 'Twas ever likely:
He lookd all grace and fucceffe, and he is
Doubtleffe the prim'ft of men. I pre'thee, run
And tell me how it goes.
[.Showt, and cornets; crying " A Palamon!"
Ser. Still Palamon.
Emil. Run and enquire. Poore fervant, thou haft loft: 72
Upon my right fide fill I wore thy picture,
Palamon's on the left : why fo, I know not;

[^16]Is fure the end $\mathrm{o}^{\circ}$ th' combat.
[Re-enter Servant.
Ser. They faide that Palamon had Arcite's body
80 Within an inch o' th' pyramid, that the cry
Was generall "A Palamon!" but anon,
Th' affiftants made a brave redemption, and
The two bold tytlers at this inftant are
84 Hand to hand at it.
Emil.
Were they metamorphifd
Both into one!-O, why? there were no woman
Worth fo compofd a man : their fingle fhare,
Their noblenes peculier to them, gives
88 The prejudice of difparity, values thortnes
To any lady breathing.
[Cornets; cry within: " Arcite, Arcite!’ More exulting ?
" Palamon " ftill?
Ser. Nay, now the found is " Arcite."
Emil. I pre'thee lay attention to the cry:
92 Set both thine eares to' th' bufines.
[Cornets; A great Jhowt and cry, "Arcite, victory!"
Ser. The cry is
"Arcite!" and " victory!" harke: " Arcite, vietory!"
The combat's confummation is proclaim'd
By the wind-inftruments.
Emil. Halfe-fights faw
96 That Arcite was no babe ; god's lyd, his richnes
75. in't else ; chance] Mason, W. D. K.('67) Sk. O.Edd. in't ; else chance Sy. conj. less chance $\mathrm{S} . \mathrm{C}$. Ty. omit else 83. Tytlers] Q. F. T. Tylters S. Tilters C. W. K. D. Ty. Sk. tilters
85. into one 1-] L. Q. one ; D. one-
87. Their noblenes peculier to them, gives] Q.
C. sqq. This l. om. in F. T. by chance ;
S. could not restore it !
88. disparity, values shortness $T o$ ] Ty. Q. F. disparity values C. K. D. Sk. disparity, value's shortness, To W. value's shortness To
V. 3.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. ..... 99

And coftlines of fpirit look't through him; it could
No more be hid in him then fire in flax,
Then humble banckes can goe to law with waters
That drift windes force to raging. I did thinke
Good Palamon would mifcarry ; yet I knew not Why I did thinke fo: our reafons are not prophets, When oft our fancies are. They 're comming off: [Cornets. Alas, poore Palamon !

Enter Thefeus, Hippolyta, Pirithous, Arcite as victor, and Attendants, छ๘c.
Thef. Lo, where our fifter is in expectation, Yet quaking and unfetled.-Faireft Emily, The gods, by their divine arbitrament, Have given you this knight : he is a good one
As ever ftrooke at head. Give me your hands :
Receive you her, you him; be plighted with
A love that growes as you decay.
Arc. Emily,
To buy you, I have loft what's deereft to me,
Save what is bought ; and yet I purchafe cheapely,
As I doe rate your value.
Thef.
O loved fifter,
He fpeakes now of as brave a knight as e'er
Did fpur a noble fteed : furely, the gods
Would have him die a batch'lour, leaft his race
Should fhew i' th' world too godlike : his behaviour So charmd me, that me thought Alcides was To him a fow of lead : if I could praife
Each part of him to th' all I have fpoke, your Arcite
Did not loofe by 't ; for he that was thus good
Encountred yet his better. I have heard
Two emulous Philomels beate the eare o' th' night
With their contentious throates, now one the higher, Anon the other, then againe the firft,
121. to th' all r've spoke,] S. D. K. Sk. thee All I have spoke, Q. to 'th all; I have spoke, Ty. to
[V. 3] And by and by out-breafted, that the fence
128 Could not be judge betweene 'em : fo it far'd
Good fpace betweene thefe kinfmen ; till heavens did Make hardly one the winner.-Weare the girlond With joy that you have won.-For the fubdude,
132 Give them our prefent juftice, fince I know
Their lives but pinch 'em : let it here be done.
The fcene's not for our feeing : goe we hence, Right joyfull, with fome forrow.-Arme your prize, I 36 I know you will not loofe her.-Hippolyta, I fee one eye of yours conceives a teare, The which it will deliver.

Emil. Is this wynning?
O all you heavenly powers, where is [your] mercy ?
r 40 But that your wils have faide it muft be fo,
And charge me live to comfort this unfriended,
This miferable prince, that cuts away
A life more worthy from him then all women,
144 I hould and would die too.
Hip.
Infinite pitty,
That fowre fuch eies fhould be fo fixd on one, That two muft needes be blinde for 't.

> Thef.

So it is.
[Exeunt.
[V. 4] Scene IV. [The fame; a Block prepared.] Enter Palamon and his Knights pyniond, Jailor, Executioner, \&c. Gard.
Pal. Ther 's many a man alive that hath out liv'd The love o' th' people; yea, i' th' felfefame ftate Stands many a father with his childe : fome comfort
4 We have by fo confidering ; we expire, And not without men's pitty ; to live, ftill
139. your mercy ?] Edd. Q. you mercy? Sc. IV. The same; Evc.] L. D. The same part of the forest as in Act III. Scene
VI. W. An open place in the City with a Scaffold
5. pitty; to live, still] L. (cf. V. iv. I33).
O.Edd. Ty. pitty. To live still, Have their good wishes, we S. sqq. Pity ; to live still, Have their good Wishes; we D. Sk. to live still Have C. ( 1778 , mens' C. (I8II,) men's

## V.4.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. <br> IOI

Have their good wifhes; we prevent
The loathfome mifery of age, beguile
The gowt and rheume, that in lag howres attend
For grey approachers; we come towards the gods
Yong, and unwapper'd, not halting under crymes
Many and ftale ; that, fure, fhall pleafe the gods
Sooner than fuch, to give us nectar with 'em,
For we are more cleare fpirits. My deare kinfmen,
Whofe lives for this poore comfort are laid downe,
You have fould 'em too too cheape.
土 $K$.
What ending could be
Of more content ? O'er us the victors have
Fortune, whofe title is as momentary
As to us death is certaine; a graine of honour
They not o'er-weigh us.
$2 K . \quad$ Let us bid farewell;
And with our patience anger tottring fortune,
20
Who, at her certain'ft, reeles.
3 K .
Come; who begins ?
Pal. Ev'n he that led you to this banket hall
Tafte to you all.-Aha, my friend, my friend!
Your gentle daughter gave me freedome once ;
You'l fee 't done now for ever : pray, how does fhe ?
I heard the was not well ; her kind of ill
Gave me fome forrow.
Jail.
Sir, the 's well reftor'd,
And to be marryed fhortly.
Pal. By my thort life,
I am moft glad on't ; 'tis the lateft thing
I thall be glad of; pre'thee, tell her fo;
Commend me to her, and, to peece her portion,
Tender her this.
[Gives purfe. 32
I $K . \quad$ Nay, let's be offerers all.
6. wishes; we prevent ] Edd. Q. Ty. wishes, we Sk. wishes; [herein] we prevent
10. unwapper'd, not] T. Sy. W. D. Sk. Q. F. unwapper'd not, Th. Se. S. C.

Ty. unwarp'd not K. unwappen'd, not 15. too too cheape.] O. Edd. (F. cheap T. Cheap) S. Sk. (conj.) C. W. D.('46)
Ty. K. too, too D. ('67, '76) too-too
[V. 4] $2 K$. Is it a maide ?
Pal. Verily, I thinke fo;
A right good creature, more to me deferving Then I can quight or fpeake of.

All K.
Commend us to her.
[They give their purfes.
36 Jail. The gods requight you all, and make her thankefull!
Pal. Adiew ; and let my life be now as fhort
As my leave-taking.
I $K$. Leade, couragious cofin.
2. 3. $K$. Wee'l follow cheerefully.
[Palamon lays his head on the block. A great noife uithin, crying, "Run, fave, hold!"

Enter in haft a Meffenger.
40 Mel. Hold, hold! O, hold, hold, hold!
Enter Pirithous in hafte.
Pir. Hold, hoa! It is a curfed haft you made, If you have done fo quickly.-Noble Palamon,
The gods will fhew their glory in a life
44 That thou art yet to leade.
Pal.
Can that be, when
Venus I 've faid is falfe ? How doe things fare ?
Pir. Arife, great fir, and give the tydings eare
That are moft [dearly] fweet and bitter. Pa. .

What
48 Hath wakt us from our dreame?
Pir.
Lift then. Your cofen,
Mounted upon a steed that Emily
Did firft beftow on him,-a blacke one, owing
Not a hayre-worth of white, which fome will fay
52 Weakens his price, and many will not buy
His goodneffe with this note; which fuperftition
35. quight] Q. F. T. S. C. D. ('67, '76) 39. 2. 3. K.] L. Q. I. 2. K. D. All the quit W. K. D.('46) Sk. quite Ty.
39.] D. Q. Lies on the Blocke.
nights
47. dearly] S. sq]. O.Edd. early Sy. rarely

## V. 4.] The Two Nolle Kinfmen. <br> 103

Heere findes allowance,-on this horfe is Arcite
Trotting the ftones of Athens, which the calkins
Did rather tell then trample; for the horfe
Would make his length a mile, if 't pleaf'd his rider
To put pride in him : as he thus went counting
The flinty pavement, dancing as 'twer to th' muficke
His owne hoofes made;-for, as they fay, from iron
Came muficke's origen,-what envious flint,
Cold as old Saturne, and like him poffeft
With fire malevolent, darted a fparke,
Or what feirce fulphur elfe, to this end made,
I comment not ; the hot horfe, hot as fire,
Tooke toy at this, and fell to what diforder
His power could give his will, bounds, comes on end, Forgets fchoole-dooing, being therein traind,
And of kind mannadge; pig-like he whines
At the fharpe rowell, which he freats at rather
Then any jot obaies; feekes all foule meanes
Of boyftrous and rough jadrie, to dif-feate
His lord, that kept it bravely : when nought ferv'd,
When neither curb would cracke, girth breake, nor diffring plunges
Dif-roote his rider whence he grew, but that
He kept him tweene his legges, on his hind hoofes
[ . . . . . ] on end he ftands
That Arcite's legs, being higher then his head,
Seem'd with ftrange art to hang : his victor's wreath
Even then fell off his head; and prefently
Backeward the jade comes ore, and his full poyze
Becomes the rider's loade. Yet is he living;
But fuch a veffell 'tis that floates but for
The furge that next approaches : he much defires
To have fome fpeech with you. Loe, he appeares.
Enter Thefeus, Hippolyta, Emilia, Arcite in a chaire.
Pal. O miferable end of our alliance!
77. on end he stands]. Here left as in Qo, have dropt out of the old text. F. (on the space being indicated, as some words end he stands

104
The Two Noble Kinfinen.
[V. 4] The gods are mightie.-Arcite, if thy heart,
88 Thy worthie, manly heart, be yet unbroken,
Give me thy laft words; I am Palamon,
One that yet loves thee dying.
Arc.
Take Emilia,
And with her, all the world's joy. Reach thy hand :
92 Farewell ; I 've told my laft houre. I was falfe,
Yet never treacherous : forgive me, cofen.-
One kiffe from faire Emilia. [KịØès her.]-'Tis done:
Take her. I die.
[Dies.
Pal. Thy brave foule feeke Elizium !
96 Emil. Ile clofe thine eyes, prince ; bleffed foules be with thee!
Thou art a right good man ; and, while I live, This day I give to teares.

Pal. And I to honour.
Thef. In this place firft you fought ; ev'n very here
100 I fundred you: acknowledge to the gods
[Your] thankes that you are living.
His part is playd, and though it were too fhort,
He did it well; your day is lengthned, and
104 The bliffefull dew of heaven do's arrowze you:
The powerfull Venus well hath grac'd her altar, And given you your love; our mafter Mars Haft vouch'd his oracle, and to Arcite gave
108 The grace of the contention : fo the deities
Have fhewd due juftice.-Beare this hence. Pal.

O cofen,
That we fhould things defire, which doe coft us
The loffe of our defire ! that nought could buy
112 Deare love but loffe of deare love!
The $\int$.
Never fortune
Did play a fubtler game : the conquerd triumphes,
The victor has the loffe ; yet in the paffage
The gods have beene moft equall. Palamon,
87. gods] Edd. Th. conj. The Cords

IoI. Your] D. Sk. O.Edd. etc. Our
104. arrowze] L. O.Edd. arowse
S. arouze C . sqq. arrose Ty . arouse
V. 4.] The Two Noble Kingmen. ..... 105
Your kinfman hath confeft the right o' th' lady ..... [V. 4]
Did lye in you ; for you firft faw her, and
Even then proclaimd your fancie; he reftord herAs your ftolne jewell, and defir'd your fpiritTo fend him hence forgiven : the gods my juftice120Take from my hand, and they themfelves becomeThe executioners. Leade your lady off;And call your lovers from the ftage of death,Whom I adopt my friends. A day or two124
Let us looke fadly, and give grace unto
The funerall of Arcite; in whofe end
The vifages of bridegroomes weele put on
And fmile with Palamon; for whom an houre, ..... 128
But one houre fince, I was as dearely forry,As glad of Arcite, and am now as gladAs for him forry.-O you heavenly charmers,
What things you make of us! For what we lacke ..... I 32
We laugh, for what we have, are forry ; ftill
Are children in fome kind. Let us be thankefullFor that which is, and with you leave difpute
That are above our queftion.-Let 's goe off, ..... 136
And beare us like the time. [Florifh. Exeunt.

[^17]
## EPILOGUE.

IWould now aske ye how ye like the play; But, as it is with fchoole-boyes, cannot fay I am cruell fearefull. Pray, yet fiay a while, 4 And let me looke upon ye. No man fmile? Then it goes hard, I See. He that has Lov'd a yong hanfoone wench, then, fhow his face,'Tis ftrange if none be heere,-and, if he will 8 Againft his confcience, let him hiffe, and kill Our market. 'Tis in vaine, I fee, to fiay yee: Have at the worft can come, then! Now what fay ye? And yet mifiake me not; I am not lold;
12 We have no fuch caufe. If the tale we have told-
For 'tis no other-any way content ye, -
For to that honeft purpofe it was ment ye,-
We have our end; and ye Jhall have ere long,
16 I dare fay, many a better, to prolong
Your old loves to us. We, and all our might,
Reft at your Service: gentlemen, good night.
[Florifh.

Knight omits this Epilogue.
2. But, as it is with Schoole-Boyes, cannot say] D. pointing O.Edd. S. point. : But [om. ,] . . . Boyes[,] cannot say, (F.

Boys,) C. sqq. But, as . . . schoolboys cannot say, D. But, as . . . schoolboys, cannot say I 'm cruel-fearful.

## 107

## NOTES.

Wherever the text of the Quarto has been materially altered in this revised text, the change has been indicated by enclosing the new reading in brackets. Changes of punctuation have not been indicated in this way.

Such of the stage-directions as are enclosed in brackets have been added from Dyce's edition, 1876. For an account of the various editions referred to, see preface to the Quarto Reprint.

Dramatis Personex. List first given in Fol. 1679, imperfectly; the list here as given by Dyce, 1876 .

Prologue. Probably by Fletcher. Several of his favourite images are employed in it, and the general style resembles that of his undoubted prologues. See General Introduction for a few remarks on this.
5. shake to loose] i. e. at losing. See Note, I. i. 150/162, lose frequently so spelt in old books, and almost invariably in this play.
24. almost breathlesse szuimme] See Note, IV. i. 139/180.
29. two hours' travel] The various allusions to the length of performances which occur in the prologues and epilogues of this period are worth noting; three hours is sometimes mentioned, but two seems to have been oftener promised, perhaps as a sop to the 'understanding gentlemen of the ground.' (v. Prol. Humorous Lieutenant-' and short enough, we hope;' and to The Coxcomb.) Most plays probably took from two and a half to three hours for representation. The following list will illustrate this, containing all the allusions in Sh., B. and F., Ben Jonson, Massinger, and Ford's prologues and epilogues, with a few from other sources. Two Hours: Sir R. Stapylton's Verses on Fletcher's Works (ed. Darley, I. li.) ; Love's Pilgrimage, prol.; Four Play's in One, Induction; Henry VIII., prol. ; Romeo and Julict, prol. ; Ram Alley, or Merry Tricks, epil. (Hazlitt's Dodsley, x. 380) ; D'Avenant, Unfortunate Lovers, prol. ; Sir Aston Cokain's lines "To my friend Mr Thomas Randolph," etc.; Cleveland's Works, p. 312, ed. 1742, Elegy on Ben Jonson; and "To the Memory of Ben Jonson," by Ja. Mayne. Three Hours: Shirley's Preface, B. and F.; The Loyal Subject, epil. ; The Lover's Progress, prol. (this, like several other prologues and epilogues in the Fol. B. and F., was written after Fletcher's death, for a revival of the play).

Acts and Scenes. The Quarto division has been followed throughout. Some editors (Weber, Dyce, Skeat) have joined the first two scenes of Act II. together, as one scene. But the Quarto rightly makes a distinction, II. i. being by Shakspere, II. ii. by Fletcher ; the very fact of the scenes overlapping in
point of time goes to prove the separate authorship. Dr Ingram has pointed out an example of the confusion caused by the modern arrangement (N.S.S. Trans. pt II. p. 455. Note the "unconscious testimony" there afforded of the value of the 'stopt-line' test). See also Mr Skeat's Pref., p. xii. $n$.

## ACTI.

## Scene 1.

Enter Hymen] See As You Like It, V. iv. (and the 'wedlock-hymn' there sung) ; Philaster, V. iii. ; B. Jonson's Hymenai ; Pericles, III. prol. 9 ; L'Allegro, 126; Four Plays in One (Tr. of Death, sc. iv.); Taming of A Shrezv (Shakespeare Soc. ed. 1844, p. 38) ; B. Jonson's Hue and Cry after Cupid; Chapman's Widow's Tears.

Her tresses likewise hanging] Cf. stage-dir. V. i. 136/142-3, where Emilia is "bride-habited, but mayden-hearted." Dr Nicholson notes here : "this appearance of the bride in dishevelled hair, apparently a classic custom (Jonson refers to Sext. Pompon. F.), betokened virginity, and was in use up to Jacobian times at least. The most remarkable example was that of the Countess of Essex when married to Somerset.-'She, thinking all the world ignorant of her slie practices, hath the impudence to appear in the habit of a Virgin, with her hair pendent almost to her feet ; which Ornament of her body (though a fair one) could not cover the deformities of her soul.' A. Wilson's Life of Fames I., p. 72. Donne, in his Epithalamium, also alludes to it. See Webster's White Dezil, p. 27, ed. 1859; and Jonson's Hymencei on the first marriage of this same Countess of Essex."
wheaten garland] The origin of this custom is not clear; the wheaten wreath seems to have been worn as an emblem of fertility, and perhaps also of peace (the causer of plenty.- "As peace should still her wheaten garland wear," $I / \mathrm{ml}$. V. ii. 41). That this wheaten wreath " was well in the writer's mind" is shewn by I. i. $65 / 68$. "Ceres appears in the masque in the Tempest to bless with Juno the marriage, and she (Demeter) as the goddess of fertility was considered a goddess of marriage. In the representations also she wore a wheat-ear chaplet. Was, however, the wheat-ear chaplet a known custom, or did the authors, remembering this of Ceres, and remembering perhaps the only religious marriage of the Romans-confarreatio-invent this show?" (Dr Nicholson.)

Led by Pirithous] Theobald's correction (O. Edd. reading Thesens) clearly rendered necessary by the direction-" Then Theseus, betweene two other Nimphs with wheaten chaplets on their heads,"-when considered with the later direction - "The 1. Queene fals downe at the foote of Theseus; The 2. fals downe at the foote of Hypolita"-shewing that Theseus and Hippolyta were walking at some little distance from one another. Subsequent editors (Mr Tyrrell excepted) have adopted Theobald's reading, but Dr Nicholson opposes the change, and considers that the authors were here thinking of the phrase (founded on the custom) uxorem ducere. "It is true that this referred to the leading home, but that would not matter. It is evidence of the strength and significance of the custom that in Greek marriages $a$ widower did not conduct his wife, but that this office then fell
to a friend such as Pirithous. The passage that will probably be quoted against me, I take to be pretty decisive in favour of the old reading. When Theseus makes up his mind to leave his bride on the instant to march against Creon, and says-

- Pirithous

Lead on the bride,'
he does so because he clearly makes Pirithous his proxy in the marriage ceremony and ensuing feast "-[But does not Theseus mean that Pir. is to continue leading the bride and not to go with him ?]-
"' Omit not anything
In the pretended celebration,'
Where, as usual in Shakspere, pretended is a word of curiosa felicitas, having a double significance."

Song. Spalding assigns this song to Shakspere, and thinks it "very unlike the more formal and polished rhymes of Fletcher" (Letter; p. 28). Mr Furnivall, Dr Nicholson, Prof. Dowden. and many others, dissent from this opinion, and, although at first I opposed, I am every day more and more inclined to agree with the latter view. It is certainly remarkable to notice the selection of flowers and the resemblance of some of the epithets to those in Shakspere's plays; it is especially significant if (as however we have no right to do in a consideration of the kind) we add Mr Skeat's ingenious (but mistaken) emendation hairbells to the list ; and all the birds of ill omen may also be more or less closely paralleled from Shakspere. To these facts add that not a single line or even epithet in the song can be paralleled from Beaumont and Fletcher's whole works, and we have seemingly a very strong case of internal evidence to support Spalding's view. But, on the other hand, we can notice that the flowers are paralleled from two or three 'posy' passages in certain plays, viz., Winter's Tale (IV. iv. 100-132), Cymbeline (IV. ii. 219-225), and Midsummer Night's Dream (II. i. 250); we can also notice that the list of birds is a mere catalogue with very formal and commonplace attributes : the slanderous cuckoo, the boding raven, the chattering pie, -and if Seward's chough hoar be admitted, the insertion, for mere rhyme's sake, of an epithet without any ethical significance. Taking this song with that in the fifth scene, some resemblance in the mere stringing together of symbolic objects will be noticed; while both songs are deficient in clearness and directness of reference. On the whole, it is difficult to decide, and opinion must vary as each reader hears more or less distinctly the ring of Shakspere's tone in the verse, and links this perception to the internal evidence ; or else, refusing to recognize Shakspere as the writer on æsthetic grounds, he will abstain from referring the song to Shakspere, Fletcher, or perhaps some third writer (perhaps the lost play of 1594 ?) on the merits of the literal evidence in its present incomplete state. Mr Skeat (Introd. p. xxii.) thinks that Fletcher may have added this song. It must be admitted that the song is essentially and indispensably part of the scene, and sufficient for all dramatic purposes. Even its seemingly fragmentary state (noticed by Sidney Walker) might be accounted for by the fact that Shakspere only tells us enough to acquaint us with the "necessary question of the play," directly and explicitly. Where the evidence is incon-
clusive, conjecture tends only to mislead; and (though, following Hickson's arrangement, I treat the song as if it were Shakspere's, perhaps more fully because not certainly so) I refrain from expressing any definite view on the question of its authorship.
4. Maiden pinckes] i. e. 'fresh pinks' (Skeat) ; or the matted pinck specially commended for its smell by Bacon, Of Gardens; see Mr Wright's Glossary, Golden Treas. ed. s.v. Pinck.
5. Daisies] Included among Bacon's "Low Flowers, being withal sweet, and sightly." See too Notes \&o Queries, May I, I875, p. 347. This line is especially urged by Mr Furnivall as un-Shaksperian. Cowley calls "Daisies the firstborn of the teeming spring," Sylva, p. 5 I, ed. 1684.
6. sweet time true] thyme. Cf. Oth., I. iii. 326. M. N. D., II. i. 249. And-
"Time is to trie me,
As eche be tried must,
Trusting, you know while life doth last I will not be unjust."
See "A Nosegaie alwaies sweet," in A Handeful of Pleasant Delites, 1584 (Park's Heliconia, II. pp. 1-6). The significances of the following flowers are explained :-Lavender, 'for lovers true,' 'desiring;' Rosemarie, 'for remembrance;' Sage, 'for sustenance;' Fenel, 'for flaterers;' Violet, 'for faithfulnesse;' Roses, 'to rule me, with reason, as you will ;' Feliflozvers, 'for gentlenesse ;' Carnations, 'for gratiousnesse ;' Marigolds
" is for marriage,
That would our minds suffise, Least that suspicion of us twaine By anie meanes should rise :" etc.
Penirial, 'to serve as a remembrancer;' Cozosloppes, 'for counsel.'
7. Prime-rose] Cf. Quarles, Stanzas, quoted in Chambers' Cyclop. Eng. Lit.; Lycidas, 142 ; Wint. T., IV. iv. 122 ; Cymb., IV. ii. 222 ; B. Jonson, Pan's Anniversary. For derivation (which is not very certain), see Wordsworth, River Duddon, xxii. (cf. Eccles. Sonn. xlvi.) ; Prior's Names of English Plants. Mr Skeat has kindly sent me the following note, amending the note already published in his edition :-
" There is an allusion here to the apparent etyniology of the French name for the primrose, viz. primevire. Primevère is, or was thought to be, for prima veris ; or in other words, the 'first-born child of Ver.' The true etymology is rather primula veris, if the word was taken from Latin; but Brachet supposes that it was merely borrowed from the Ital. primavera, a name used of flowers that come in the early spring." Prime-roses, the usual spelling in old writers, is that used by Bacon, Of Gardens. Chaucer, pryme-rose. Ver. cf. Chapman, Minor Poems (ed. 1875, p. 4o).
9. With her bels dimme] Qo. F2 bels dimm, the rest bells dimt, except Skeat, hairbells dim. Mr Skeat's emendation is very ingenious, and supported by strong presumptive evidence, but I cannot, for my own part, admit the validity of his arguments. He says in his Introduction (p. xxii.) that the Song is such a piece as Fletcher "might have added," and yet he bases his change mainly
upon the fact of an apparently analogous passage in Shakspere (Cymbeline, IV. ii. 218). It should be remembered that if we have not Shakspere in this song, we are under no necessity of assimilating it to his undoubted work; especially as such an assimilation might tend to prejudice us on the question of authorship.

In the first place, Mr Skeat argues that the rhythm of the line positively requires the accent on the second syllable. But is this really so? do not the irregularity of the number of syllables and the words used in these third lines, rather indicate that there is but one emphatic word in the line : hue, true, dim, trim, sense, hence, pie, fly? Besides, there is another and important structural obstacle to Mr Skeat's arrangement. Looking through the song we see one half (3 lines exactly) of each stanza occupied by one idea (v. ll. $1-3,7-9,13-15$, 22-24), and the remaining half devoted to a group of objects; Mr Skeat's change would destroy this designed symmetry. Again, Mr Skeat urges : "(1) that her bells makes no sense at all; (2) that Shakespeare couples the 'azured harebell' with the 'pale primrose'. . . ; and (3) that there is no objection to the epithet dim as applied to such a flower. See Shak. Winter's Tale, IV. iv. II8 : daffodils,
That come before the swallow dares, and take
The winds of March with beauty ; violets dim,
But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes,
Or Cytherea's breath ; pale primroses, \&c."
These arguments do not appear to me to establish Mr Skeat's case. Take them in the inverted order. (3) violets dim is not a parallel to hairbells dim, as the sweetness of the violet's smell is contrasted with the radiant beauty of the daffodils that conquers the winds of March, dim serving to subordinate the colour to the perfume, and perhaps meaning "half-hidden from the eye," retiring, modest; or, as Chapman (Minor Poems, p. I30, cf. p. 39,) has it: "with bosom-hung and hidden heads." Schmidt explains dim: "wanting beauty, homely," but against this prosy interpretation of the "glowing violet," see Sonn. xcix., and Ven. 124. In the Phœonix Nest, 1593 (Park's Heliconia, vol. II. p. 135) :--
" Sweete violets (Loves paradice), that spred
Your gracious odours, which you couched beare
Within your palie faces,
Upon the gentle wings of some calme breathing wincle,
That plaies amid the plaine," \&c.
(? referring to some special kind of sweet violet, as perhaps in W. T.).
Again, though the epithet dim might be applied to one variety of the hairbell proper (whose flowers are sometimes white), it is scarcely applicable either to the bluebell or to the ordinary hairbell. Shakspere speaks of the azure veins, that is, the clear, translucent, blue veins, " of heaven's own tinct;" and similarly therefore of the azured harebell, like thy veins (v. Lucr., 419 ; Cymb., II. ii. 22 ; Temp., v. 43). Dim, on the contrary, is applicable to the pale primrose: cf. M. N. D., I. i. 215 :-
" And in the woods, where often you and I
Upon faint primrose beds were wont to lie."
(2) The fact that Shakspere couples the 'azured harebell' with the 'pale primrose'
in Cymb. IV. ii. 219 (even assuming him to have written this song) does not involve that we should have them coupled here, else why not have the violet or daffodil, instead of two summer-flowers, the marigold and larkspur? Mr Skeat adds on to his note the remark that "The true hairbell (so called in modern works, with reference to the slenderness of its stalk) is the Campanula rotundifolia, but the name was frequently applied to the.Agraphis nutans, the wild hyacinth or bluebell; and the latter is probably here intended, both because it is an earlier flower and because the epithet dim suits it better." Not "probably," but certainly, the wild hyacinth or bluebell (Hy. non scriptus) is here to be the meaning, unless we understand the boy to strew flowers which blossom-the primrose in March and April, and the hairbell (proper) in July and August. (See Jenkinson's Brit. Plants, pp. 26, 31, ed. 1775.) But though bluebell must be the meaning in the Two Noble Kinsmen song, it is not so certainly the sense in Cymbeline. "While summer lasts," Arviragus will strew Fidele's grave (cf. Per., IV. i. I8); and it is just possible that the four seasons may be symbolized by their respective emblems: pale primrose of spring and early summer; the azured hairbell, reflecting the blue midsummer sky ; the leaf (coming forth in May, but Autumn's very type) of eglantine, linking May's sweetness to the " moist rich smell of the rotting leaves" in the late season ;-
"Yea, and furr'd moss besides, when flowers are none,
To winter-ground thy corse."
Such a succession is both possible and natural, and may be signified by the passage. The point is, at all events, open to doubt until it can be shown that Shakspere's age knew not of the Campanula rotundifolia as the harebell, but solely denominated Hyacinthus non siriptus by that name ; certainly, while doubt on this point exists, it takes a good deal of ground from beneath any hypothesis founded on the analogy. (It is certain that harebell was formerly a common name for the bluebell; e. g. see Parkinson, Paradisus, p. $\mathbf{1 2 2}=$ Iacinth (q. Dr Prior); Jenkinson, Brit. Plants, p. $70=$ Hyacinth; Mackay's Flora Hibernica, p. 137 $=$ Campanula, p. $286=H y$. ; Henfrey's Elem. Botany, p. $303=$ Cam.) But (I) bells "makes no sense at all?" This may be objected to on various grounds. e. g. (a) if (as Mr Skeat writes to me) " Primrose, first-born child of Ver" = primula veris, the cowslip is included under that term, and this is sustained by the mention of oxlips afterwards, -"cowslips wan that hang the pensive head " may be said to have bells dim ; and " a cowslip's bell" in Temp., V. 89, clenches the argument. But (b) this "cowslip's bell" suggests another and better explanation, for it shews that Shakspere used the word bell $=$ blossom, not confining it to the campanulacea (as indeed we do not when we speak of bluebells), but even applying it to the primulacea, and apparently deriving the epithet less from the precise form than from the general appearance and bell-like movements of the flower.

Similarly Mr Tennyson has "flower-bells," etc ; and Darwin, Botanic Garden (IV. 576), "silver bells" (三 orange blossoms), "close the timorous floret's golden bell" (of the anemone, tragopogon, and other sensitive plants, III. 460) ; cf. Loves of the Plants (IV. 514), "and each chill Floret clos'd her velvet bell;" (I. 36) " a blossom's bell ;" I. 490, etc.

Having vindicated the old reading formally, to some extent at least, does Mr Skeat's assertion receive assent, that "her bells makes no sense at all"?

I explain (as Dr Nicholson has also suggested) that the significance of harbinger is attracted into the expression her bells, and the passage means, bring the Primrose, harbinger that belleth the advent of spring, as a welcome guest is preluded by peals of the "sweet poetry of steeples." (Perhaps the idea was suggested by a recollection of the scene : the bells at Theseus' wedding ?) Mr Tennyson (Adeline) warrants this idea of the flowers ringing :
" Or when little airs arise,
How the merry bluebell rings,
To the mosses underneath ?"
I do not insist on all or any of these points as facts proving that Mr Skeat is wrong ; I merely plead for the old text-do not these few reasons warrant us at least in retaining the old reading "until further notice;" will Mr Skeat still "have no hesitation in this case," and will it still be "astonishing" to him "that no one has thought of" his reading before?
10. Oxlips] Wint. T., l. c. M. N. D., II. i. 250.
11. Marigolds on deuthbeds blowing'] cf. Per., IV. i. 16:
". . . and marigolds
Shall as a carpet hang upon thy grave
While summer-days do last."
" The peculiarity in the text is that they are 'blowing,' therefore 'growing,' and it is worth enquiry in addition to the parallelism in Pericles -which is only parallel as refers to strewing-whether the custom of planting marigolds on graves was common? Looking to the significance of the marigold (see $N$. and Q. s. v.) the custom would be likely to obtain" (Dr Nicholson). Visitors to Bettwys-y-Coed, N. Wales, can see graves planted with many flowers, including (1875) marigolds and "sweet thyme true," in the old churchyard there.
13. nature's children sweet] Flowers are called "Nature's lovely children" by Ann Radcliffe, Mysteries of Udolpho, c. I.
16. Not an angel of the air] This, the reading of all editions, has been objected to by Theobald, who proposed Augel, from Ital. augello, a bird. However, Dyce's explanation is evidently right: " 'bird of the air,' (angel in this sense is a Grecism,-ä $\gamma \gamma^{\varepsilon \lambda o s}$, i. e. messenger, being applied to birds of augury. Our early writers frequently use the word as equivalent to bird; so in Massinger and Dekker's Virgin Martyr, the Roman eagle is called 'the Roman angel,' Massinger's Works, vol. i. p. 36, ed. Gifford, 1813 )." The passage in Massinger-not a close parallel-was first noted by Monck Mason, 1798, and is found in Act II. sc. ii. sp. 17: "the Roman angel's wings shall melt." Closer is this from Ben Jonson's Sad Shepherd, II. ii.-"The dear good angel of the spring, the nightingale" (i. e. that bringeth glad tidings of spring). Cf. "And aerie birds like angels ever sing," Barnabe Barnes, Spiritual Sonnets, x. I have found no example of the word in this sense in Beaumont and Fletcher, nor does it occur in Shakspere. "Angel refers to birds who would be likened to the good spirits or angels, exclusive of the birds of prey and ill-omen who rather represented the angels who had fallen" (Dr Nicholson). Cf. Iliad, XXIV. 202 (Mr Skeat). b

8
[ACT I. SC. $]$.
19. The crow] References selected from Schmidt's Shakesp. Lex. show how ill-omened the crow was held to be :-Sonn., lxx. ; M. N. D., II. i. 97 ; W. T., III. ii. 192 ; H.5., II. i. 91 ; IV. ii. 51 ; 2 H.6., IV. x. 90 ; V. ii. 11 ; Troil., IV. ii. 9 ; Cymb., III. i. 83 ; V. iii. 93 .
slanderous cuckoo] The slander of the "cukkow ever unkinde" (Chaucer, Assemb. F., 358) is explained in L. L. L., V. ii. 908. See too "The Cuckoo" in Love-Poems and Humorous Ones, Ballad Soc. 1874, p. 18. Cf. Epistola HoEliana, p. 462, ed. 1688 (vol. IV. let. xix.).
20. Boding raven] cf. Troil., V. ii. 191 ; Oth., IV. i. 22,-"'the raven o'er th' infected house, Boding to all." The night-raven (as Dyce shows) is a different bird, though of similar omen :
" and the night raven,
Which doth use for to call
Men to death's haven."-(Robin Goodfellow, his Mad Pranks and Merry Fests, Qo, black-letter, 1628. q. Beloe, Anecd. I. 275.) This latter is the "night-crow" mentioned in 3 H.6., V. vi 45. Lt.-Col. Cunningham has noted that Cavendish, in the life of Wolsey, tells us the Cardinal used to call Anne Bullen the "night-crow."
20. chough hoar] Qo Clough hee; F2 Clough hc, ed. 171 I, Clough he; Seward, etc., chough hoar. "There can be no reason to doubt therefore of our having got the true substantive; for He we must have an adjective that suits the Chough, and also rhimes to nor; hoar will do both, the Chough having grayish feathers on his head, from whence Shakespeare calls him the russet-pated chough" (M. N. D., III. ii. 21). But russet-pated, as Prof. Newton points out (in Mr Skeat's ed.), is really russet-patted $=\grave{a}$ pattes rousses (cf. for the single $t$ the ordinary spelling of twinned, twined, etc.) ; and the rhyme is questionable. See Dyce's Glossary, Rolfe's n. on Temp. II. i. 266, and Mr Skeat's note here. Charles Lamb (Lieut.Col. Cunningham kindly informed me) "considered that cuckoo and chough rhymed, and altered his copy accordingly,
> 'The crow, the slanderous cuckoo,
> The boding raven nor the chough, Nor chatt'ring pie.' "

The pronunciation choo (still, I believe, to be heard in the north of England) is no objection, as the word comes from A.S. ceo (Skeat), and enow, enough, give us a parallel; though chuff (v. Nares) must have been more usual. Lamb's mode of complete excision seems even preferable to Seward's very feeble bit of tinkering. For a most fatal objection to the arrangement chough hoar exists in the fact that hoar is a purely descriptive epithet, and utterly devoid of any symbolic bearing, while all the rest have some reference to the requirements of the case. Assuredly, if Seward's conjecture give the original reading, Shakspere never wrote the song. It is true that chough was probably a colloquial name for jack-daw; nearly all the passages in Shakspere would bear such an interpretation; and even here, as betokening dishonesty, it might perhaps be admitted. Besides, the name chough in this sense cannot be considered peculiar to Shakspere, for what lover of the sainted bird of Rheims can fail to identify him here :-
"The owle eke, that of dethe the bode bryngeth,
The thefe the choghe, and eke the janglynge pye."
Chauc. Assemb. F., 11. 343-345.
(Cf. . . " like the foolish chough, which loves to steal money only to hide it." Cowley, Essays, 7. Of Avarice, p. 127, sig. U, u. u. 4 ed. 1684.) Probably the name choo, ceo, was once used of the whole class: have we not got the original word still in caw, caw?

Dr Nicholson warns us against confining "colloquial names to scientific species," the more so as the former were often variously applied in different parts. "Palsgrave (Halliwell, Arch. Dict.) gives 'choughe, a yong crowe, corneille;' and Cotgrave under the similar French Chouette has not only chough, cadesse, daw, jackdaw, but the little horn owle (a thievish night-bird) as well. Hence it does not follow that the chough of Dover Cliff is the jackdaw, because Shakspere chooses to call (perhaps some special) chough russet-pated in M. N. D. If I speak of a red-legged partridge, is it to be said that I am speaking of that species whenever I mention the word partridge, and is this to be proved of me by quoting my red-legged partridge?" Gilbert White tells us that "Cornish choughs abound, and breed on all the cliffs of the Sussex coast ;" a fact which confirms Dr Nicholson's defence of the Lear passage.
21. chatt ring pie] cf. 3 II.6., V. vi. 45-7:
"The raven rooked her on the chimney's top, And chattering pies in dismal discords sung."
22. Bride-house] cf. Taming of $A$.Shrew (erd. 1844. Sh. Soc.), p. 23:
"Boy. Why come man, we shall have grod cheere
Anon at the bride house, for your maisters gone to
Church to be married alreadie, and thears
Such cheere as passeth.
San. O brave, I would I had eate no meate this week
For I have never a corner left in my bellie
To put a venison pastie in," etc.
Enter 3. Queens] Sidney Walker (Crit. Exam. of the Text of Sh. 18fro, III. 349) asks: "Is the Epithalamium broken off by the entrance of the (叉ueens? It seems unfinished; and it is more natural I think it should be interrupted. So of Paris's speech at the tomb, Romeo and F̌uliet, V. iii."

The entire introduction illustrates Shakspere's directness and clearness in putting us in prossession of the "exact state of affairs at the opening of the play, without any circumlocution or long-winded harangues, but naturaliy and dramatically" (Hickson, N. S. S. Tr., p. 30*). The procession and song are only inserted for this purpose, and we quickly enter on the dramatised Knightes Tale. The chief Chaucer parallels to this Act are : Sc. i. cf. 11. 35-105; Sc. iii. cf. 11. 107-116; Sc. iv. cf. 11. 117-132, 143-171 ; Sc. v. cf. 11. 133-142 (Aldine Chaucer, vol. II. ed. 1866).

33/34-book of trespasses] This form of speech was very common in Sh.'s day: cf. "the book of virtue," W. T., "the brook of life," R.2., "the devil's book," 2 H.4., " book of memory," 1 M.6., "Jove's own book," "the book of
his good acts," Cor., etc. Speaking of this passage, Spalding (p. 29) observes : " These latter lines (29, $30-35$ ) are of a character which is perfectly and singularly Shakespeare's. The shade of gravity which so usually darkens his poetry, is often heightened to the most solemn seriousness. The religious thought presented here is most alien from Fletcher's turn of thought.-His energy, sometimes confined within due limits, often betrays him into harshness; and his liking for familiarity of imagery and expression sometimes makes him careless though both should be coarse, a fault which we find here, and of which Fletcher is never guilty."

40/43. who endure] Qo endured, F2 endur'd, as in later edd. Monck Mason proposed the reading I (following Dyce and Skeat) have adopted, who endure, " as they were still in that situation" (Comments on the Play's of B. and F., \&c. By the Right Hon. J. Monck Mason, 1798). endure is also, Dr Nicholson has noted, the more dramatic form, and was probably that used by the authors. Cf. 'If he i'th' blood-siz'd field lay swoln.'

41/44. beakes of ravens, \&c.] cf. Ful. Cas., V. i. :
" And in their steads do ravens, crows, and kites, Fly o'er our heads, and downward look on us, As we were sickly prey."
Tallents is the usual spelling in old books.
45/48. eye of holy Phobus] cf. H.5., IV. i. 290: "Sweats in the eye of Phæbus" (Skeat).

48/51. Thou purger of the earth] Spalding, Letter, p. 30, calls attention to this form of speech, and adds : "Verbal names expressing the agent occur, it is true, in Fletcher and others, but they are in an especial manner frequent with Shakspere, who invents them to preserve his brevity, and always applies them with great force and quaintness." Purgers, Ful. Cas., II. i. 180.

47/50. duke] "a leader, a general, a commander (Lat. Dux)." This explan. (Dyce's and Var. Sh. on M. N. D., I. i. p. 177) suits the wide application of the word better than Dr Schmidt's. Cf. "Theseus, our renowned duke," M. N. D., I. i. 19 (not in Schmidt).

50/53. chapel them] See Dr Abbott's Sh. Gr., § 290. This word, and "to urn their ashes," Spalding italicises as instances "of those bold coinages of words, forced on a mind for whose force of conception common terms were too weak" (p.30).

56/59. transported] rapt. Cf. 1. I88/209.
59/62. vengreance and revenge] These words are similarly coupled in Rich.2., IV.i. 66: "shall render vengeance and revenge:" apparently to intensify the threat.

62/63. Cápanćus] Chaucer’s pronunciation of the word-" Was whilome wyf to Kyng Capáneús "-though different from this, is still quadrisyllabic. Spalding (I think without sufficient grounds) says: "Probably Fletcher would not have committed this false quantity."

63/66. Mars's altar] Qo Marsis, disyll. cf. Trr. and Cress., II. i. 58 ; IV. v. 177, 255, etc. The Lover's Progress, II. iii. Peele's Polyhymnia, ix.

65/68. spread her.] Seward stupidly notes: "The Reader will see that her is prejudicial to the Sense and Measure, and to be discarded." The construction is simplified, and the pause softened, by her [sc. mantle].

67/70. our kinsman] See North's Plutarch, ed. Skeat, p. 279 to p. 290.

69/72. nemean.] Cf. Hml., I. iv. 83, L. L. L., IV. i. 90. There is a similar reference to "Alcides, that master'd monsters," in (Beaumont's part of) Four Plays, Tr. of Honour, sc. ii. Hercules, disyll. "Ercles."

75/78. undertaker] Dyce (quoting Ritson) explains to be "one who undertakes or takes up the quarrel or business of another." Cf. Tw. N., III. iv. 350, Lover's Progress, I. i., and see a good note in Skeat's ed. p. ioi.

91/96. for The tenour of thy speech] Seward ("rightly perhaps," Dyce) changed the passage to : " a Servant to The Tenor of thy Speech" (O. Edd. the speech). Servant (as in Philaster, III. ii., Knight of Malta, III. ii., Hazl. Dodsl., VII. 489, and often in Sh.), the correlative of Mistress, was applied not merely to gentlemen by themselves, but was a regular term of address from the ladies to whom they made their court. v. Schmidt. s. v. cf. The Phoenix Nest, 1593 (Park, Heliconia, II. p. 113) : "Mistress and Servant, titles of mischance," ib. p. 117: " Mistress this grace unto your servant give." "A Lady Forsaken, complayneth " (in The Paradise of Daintic Devices, xxii.) of her lover: "Yet since his servant I became, most like a bondman have I beene," shewing still further the special significance of the word.

99/IO3. a dove's motion] cf. Lucrece, 457: "Like to a new-kill'd bird she trembling lies."

100/104. blood-siz'd] Hml., II. ii. 484: "o'er-sized with coagulate gore." ' Y
108/114. uncanä̈ed] This word does not occur elsewhere in Sh., though we have candy (to become hard) in Temp., II. i. 279, and Tim., IV. iii. 226; and discandy, Ant. and Cleop., III. xiii. 165, and IV. xii. 22.

112/120. there through my tears] This, the reading of the old Edd., was changed by Seward and Sympson into here, etc., as the queen is supposed to be pointing to her heart! "But though she speaks of her heart afterwards, she alludes in this place to her eyes, which she compares to pebbles viewed through a glassy stream; a description which would not apply to her heart."-Monck Mason. Dr Nicholson notes also that the change is to the plural 'em, "either because she is thinking of her eyes as ostents of her grief, or what is much the same, though not perhaps in such accord with the English of the day, because she is thinking of the grief in either eye, and therefore griefs."

117/125. lead his line] weight as with lead.
118/127. Extremity, that sharpens sundry wits, Makes me a fool] cf. The Honest Man's Fortune, III. i. :-
" Cumning Calamity,

That others' gross wits uses to refine, When I most need it, dulls the edge of mine."
Who has here said in 19 words what Sh. says better in 9 ? The Hon. M. Fortune was acted in 1613, and perhaps written not long after the $2 N . K$. had its first run at the theatre. Dyce considers Beaumont to have shared the authorship with Fletcher, and Professor Ward (Hist. Eng. Dram. Lit., II. 189) hesitatingly expresses the same view. But the Rev. F. G. Fleay (N.S.S Trans., pt. I. p. 5I) considers it to have been written by Fletcher " and Anon."*

* P.S. Mr Fleay's new Sh. Manual does not add to my knowledge of his views on the authorship of this play, as on p. 15 I he ascribes it to "F. and Anon.," but on p. 9.3 to "B. and F." (20/5/76).

I regret very much that Mr Fleay's tables,* by not containing the total number of verse-lines in the plays tabulated, do not enable me to say if the following proportions are those generally found in Beaumont's verse. In Act III. sc. r. of the Hon. M. F. we have 168 verse-lines, 56 of which have double-endings, or exactly 1 in 3 ; and 20 rhyme-lines, or 2 in 16.8 . These proportions shew plainly that the poem at end "Upon the Honest Man's Fortune, by Mr John Fletcher" is no evidence of single authorship, as Fletcher's average of doubleendings is about 1 in 2, or even higher, and as this title really means that the lines "Upon An Honest Man's Fortune" are by Mr John Fletcher. The number of rhyme-lines looks like Beaumont, and the verse often dips into prose for a few speeches and then rises again "prepared for longer flight,"-a characteristic of his manner. Again, the turns of thought and expression seem (to me) quite like e. g. those in the non-Fletcherian part of the Woman-Hater; if (as Mr Fleay thinks) Beaumont had part in this latter, I can see no reason (metrical tables being absent) for departing from Dyce's opinion on the authorship of the Honest Man's Fortune. Probably then it was Beaumont who has thus borrowed this striking expression.

123/132. the ground-peece] The general sense is :-"If you were merely a painter's dull, lifeless, pictured-surface I would buy you, you exhibit such heartdeep grief, to teach me to know a genuine case of sorrow when I might meet it : but as you are much more-a very woman like myself, -your distress (which is heart-deep) shines so strongly upon my heart that it shall make a return-impression upon my brother's, and cause him to pity you as I do." Emilia means that the Queen's is a presentation of sorrow, and not a representation merely. Heart sorrow, not face sorrow. With this passage we may cf. Hml., IV. vii. 108 :-
" Laertes, was your father dear to you, Or are you but the painting of a sorrow, A face without a heart?"
Webster, The Devil's Lazv Case, I. i. :-
. . . . "But indeed,

If ever I would have mine drawn to the life,
I would have a painter steal it at such time
I were devoutly kneeling at my prayers :
There is then a heavenly beauty in ' $t$, the soul
Moves in the superficies."
And especially, Lucrece, ll. 1366-1582. Piece was the regular word for a work of art, picture or statue (v. Schmidt, s. v. and for its use in composition, cf. Webster, Vitt. Cor. 2d-last sp.-"I limned this night-piece, and it was my best'").

The precise signification of ground is not so clear. It may (i) be taken in the general sense of surface, and ground-piece $=$ pictured as distinguished from sculptured work, superficial seeming. Or (2) ground in the sense of foundation (cf. ground-work), and ground-piece $=$ model, subject matter. Or (3) ground may
-.." some of the particulars being of that impressive order of which the significance is entirely hidden, like a statistical amount without a standard of comparison, but with a note of exclamation at the end."-Middlemarch, p. 327, one vol.
mean principal, main, chief; and ground-piece = master-piece, chef d'euvre. Or (4) in the technical sense of foil, dull "ground" of a picture, as contrasted with the glare and prominence of her sorrow. Compare Ger. Grund, Grundriss, Grundstïck, etc. In any case the general sense is the same; seeming and being are contrasted. Read The Winter's Tale, V. iii., if you cannot realise how the soul may be wrought by the instruction of a "poor image."

The word ground-piece does not occur elsewhere in Shakspere, nor in Beaumont and Fl. ; however, none of the editors, Mr Skeat excepted, have vouchsafed to notice it. Mr Skeat explains: "(perhaps) a study for a picture, a sketch." With the Shakspere-like tone of the passage, we may contrast somewhat similar scenes in the Maid's Tragedy, II. ii., and The Lover's Progress, IV. iv.

139/149. asprays] cf. Coriol., IV. vii. 36, and see Staunton's n. Dyce refers to Yarrell's British Birds, I. 25 ; and Nares (in addition to the above instances) quotes from Drayton, Polyolb. Song xxv. :-
" The osprey, oft here seen, though seldom here it breeds, Which over them the fish no sooner do espy, But betwixt him and them by an antipathy, Turning their bellies up as though their death they saw, They at his pleasure lie, to stuff his gluttonous maw."
Messrs Wright and Halliwell (whose ed. of Nares I have used) add : "Chapman (Hom. Il.xviii., infin.) calls it the osspringer." See Halliwell, Arch. Dict., s.v. Aspere.

143/155. drams, precipitance] Seward and Sympson placed a comma between these words in 1750 , since when Editors have vied in discovering recondite significations for the word precipitance. e. g. the Edd. 1778 think it means " the unhappy precipitation of suicides, in getting rid of their lives." However, the Queen is here enumerating the various agents or means of suicide, viz., hanging, stabbing, poison, and (" leaping down precipices," Seward ; " the act of precipitation," Mason ; " precipitation from heights," Weber ; " the act of throwing one'sself down a precipice," Dyce.) Precipitance does not occur elsewhere in Sh. ; but Dyce's explanation is confirmed by H.S, V. i. 140 (? Fl.) ; Lear, IV. vi. 50. (Coriol. III. ii. 4, precipitation, "the steep Tarpeian death," i. e. being thrown, not self-throwing.) Generally, Sh. includes drowning in his lists of suicidal agencies, and possibly Mason's explanation, as most inclusive, may be the right one. See note on III. ii. 29. Knight (followed by Mr Skeat) reads ' Cords', knives', drams' precipitance;" with the meaning "headlong haste, desperate rashness" (Skeat).

145/157. humaine] "Humane (such invariably is the spelling of O. Edd., never human) ; the accent is always on the first syllable, even in Wint., III. ii. 166." Dr Schmidt. Cf. 1. 234/261 of this scene.

147/160. visitating] "Visiting [Ant. and Cl., IV. xv. 68] and visitating, inspecting, surveying."-Dyce. Sidney Walker on Temp., I. ii., "We'll visit Caliban, my slave," notes, "i. e. look after him," and refers to this passage. Visitation is a common word in Sh. in the sense of Visit.

150/162. I will give you comfort, To give your dead lords graves] To give, i. e. by giving, one of the commonest constructions in Shakspere. Cf. to be = by being, infra, III. i. 25 ; Night Walker, III. iii. ; Faithful Friends, I. i., etc. Dr Abbott
(quoting nearly thirty examples of this "gerundive use of the infinitive," Sh. $G r ., \S 356)$ explains it thus :-" To was originally used not with the infinitive but with the gerund in $-e$, and, like the Latin ' $a d$ ' with the gerund, denoted a purpose. Thus 'to love' was originally 'to lovene,' i. e. 'to (or toward) loving' (ad amandum). Gradually, as to-superseded the proper infinitival inflection, to was used in other and more indefinite senses, 'for,' 'about,' 'in,' 'as regards,' and, in a word, for any form of the gerund as well as for the infinitive." Truly Monck Mason went parlously nigh the Still Lion when he wrote: "The words will in the first line, and to in the last, appear to have been erroneously transposed. The passage must originally have run thus:-

> 'And I, to give you comfort, Will give your dead lords graves.'

But what would Dr Ingleby say of this?-_"As both the Sense and Measure are somewhat deficient, there is reason to suspect a Part of the Sentence dropt, perhaps somewhat like the following might have been the Original :-

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { But I will give you Comfort, and engage } \\
& \text { Myself and Pow'rs to give your dead Lords Graves.' " }
\end{aligned}
$$

(I had written thus much some months before Mr Skeat's edition appeared, and it was with no little surprise I found that Mr Skeat had accepted Mr Seward's ingenious conjecture.) Weber agrees with Seward "that some omission has probably taken place, but cannot assent to Mason's thinking an amendment necessary." Sidney Walker suggests a good arrangement of the lines which (with Dyce) I have adopted, merely omitting now (gratuitously inserted by Seward) from "And that work [now] Presents," etc. Dyce and Skeat adopt Seward's insertion of now, the former however placing it between brackets in his early ed. and omitting it entirely in edd. ' 67 , ' 76 .

155/168. with it's own] Its (gen. spelt $i t$ 's) is found ten times in Fol. 1623. I have noted over thirty instances in Darley's (i. e. Weber's) Beaumont and Fletcher, but cannot say whether there are so many in the old edd. As in Sh., the word will be found two or three times in a single scene, and then not for whole plays (e. g. thrice in Beggar's Bush, II. iii.). Its occurs again, I. ii. 65/72.

157/172. Wrinching] Of course "corrected in 1750." The old spelling is probably phonetic, and I find the folio reading (also noticed by Dyce) Henry VIII., I. i. 167, to be :-
" and like a glasse
Did breake i' th' wrenching."
(Cf. rinch, in The optick glasse of humors, 1607, fo. 2.-Dr Ingleby.) This pronunciation is still heard in parts of Ireland. Seward compares Lear, IV. iii.

159/174. And his army full] Sidney Walker quotes these lines as one with the preceding speech :
" Now you may take him
Drunk with his victory, and his army full
Of bread and sloth."
Simply noting " $A n d$ 's," and adding V. iii. 44/55,
"Are bedfellows in his visage. Palamon Has a most menacing aspéct;" etc., with the note "In's."

167/184. Let us be widows to our woes] Hickson illustrates Shakspere's "certain boldness of metaphor, carried sometimes to that extreme that it requires a considerable effort of the understanding to follow it," by quoting these lines. I confess I do not see the meaning at all clearly; it seems to be: "Let us be widows to our woes, as well as to our husbands; for as Creon has left our dead lords unburied, so our woes have been left unburied by Theseus." I only throw out this as the best explanation I can attempt; and as Seward's may appear clearer to my readers than it does to me, I add it. "Let us continue still in the most distress'd Widow-hood by the continuance of our Woes. The expression tho' not quite clear, will give this Sense which is certainly a fine one; and in such Writers as our Authors we must not always expect that Perspicuity as we meet with in Poems of less Depth. For this reason I cannot admit a Conjecture of Mr Sympson, tho' . . . it is undoubtedly an ingenious one.

Let us be wedded to our woes."
177/197. Fove from a synod] The regular word in Sh. for an assembly of the Gods : A. Y. L., III. ii. 158 ; Cor., V. ii. 74 ; Hml., II. ii. 516 ; Ant. and Cl., III. x. 5 ; Cymb., V. iv. 89. Cf. B. and F., The Prophetess, III. iii. : "the synod of the gods."

179/199. twinning cherries] Qo tzuyning, F2 and ed. 1711 , twining. Altered by Theobald. See Note, II. i. 64/70. So in Wint. T., I. ii. 67, "We were as twyn'd Lambs," is the Fol. reading (Schmidt), and Cleveland spells twinn'd with one $n$ (Works, ed. 1687). Shaksp. does not use the word twinning of lips elsewhere ; B. and F. have it, Philaster, II. ii. (Fol. 1679: twin'd cherries, cf. ib. IV. iii.), and Night Walker, III. vi. (Fol. 1679: two twinn'd cherries). And cf. Gesta Grayorum (Nicholls, Progresses of Q. Elizabeth, vol. II. p. 7o) :
"Musicke is the soule of Measure, speeding both in equall grace,
Twines are they begot of pleasure, when she wishly numbred space.'
180/200. tasteful] Not elsewhere in Sh.
183/203. Mars spurn his drum] Mars' drum is mentioned twice again, V. i. 63 and V. i. 86. Sidney Walker, on Ven. and Adon., xviii. (Mars . . ."scorning his churlish drum"), notes "giving Mars a drum instead of the classical trumpet," and refers here and to All's Well, III. iii. II. But Mars' drum is frequently alluded to by the other writers of the time, e. g. several times by G. Peele.

210;234. For siícess, Eoc.] Alexandrine.
212/236. Follow your soldier. As before, hence you] Mason. Qo to ed. 1778, Follow your Soldier (as before) hence you. "The sense of this passage is obscured by the parenthesis and false pointing : it should stand thus- . . [ [as in the text] . . . The first three words are addressed to the Queens; the remainder to Arbesius [sic], whom he had before desired to draw out troops for the enterprize."-Monck Mason. Weber quotes this note, and spells Arbesius in the direction [Exit Arbesius], but rightly in the text.

213/237. Aulis] Theobald. O. Edd. Anly. Theobald proposed Aulis, which Seward believes to be "the true Word," although " it would indeed be more convincing were there a River of that Name," and "perhaps Banks may be also a Corruption ; it might have been At the Gates, or at the Port, or at the

Back of Aulis." But bank, as Mr Skeat has noted, is applied by Sh. to the seamargin in I H.4., III. i. 45 ; and (Schmidt enables me to add) in Sonn., lvi. II ; 2 H.6., III. ii. 83 ; R.3., IV. iv. 525 ; and sea-bank, M. of V., V. 1 ; Oth., IV. i. 138. The reading Aulis is probably right; Seward's geographical objection ("very far-fetched and ridiculous," in Weber's opinion) is certainly of very little weight. It is a curious coincidence that in Peele's Battle of Alcazar, III. iii., " Lying for want of wind in Aulis' gulf," the Qo reads Aldest. Cf. "Aulis' strand," Peele, Tale of Troy. Heath proposed to read "Ilisse" for the river Ilissus (Dyce). Dr Ingleby suggests that we should merely invert the $n$ to give us Auly. But is for $y$ would have been a very likely mistake for a reader of Elizabethan handwriting to make. Cf. n. III. vi. 144/ı33.

216/240.] Explaining the fact of a standing army.
217/24I. stamp. . . current . . .token] Seward notes that the sense is equivocal, referring to the currency of coin and also "to his Haste."

223/248. The feast's solempnity Shall want till your return] Edd. 1750, wait, which Sidney Walker thinks is the true reading. All other texts, want, which seems genuine, "signifying, the celebration of the nuptials should remain incomplete till his return, as Pirithous had rather accompany Theseus than stay behind to be his proxy, as the latter desires" (Edd. I778). Solemnity is here used in the second sense given by Dr Schmidt : "awful grandeur, stateliness, dignity," and not in the first and commoner one: "ceremony performed (especially of the celebration of nuptials, cf. solemn)," v. Schmidt, s. v.; Dryden, Globe ed. p. 97 ; and Furness, Variorum Macbeth, III. vi. 8.

233/260. being sensually subdued] cf. A King and No King, IV. iv. :
" Know that I have lost, The only difference betwixt man and beast, My reason."

## Scene 2.

Ascribed to Shakspere and Fletcher. That Spalding had a sense of some incongruity may be inferred from his criticism :-"The scene, though not lofty in tone, does not want interest, and contains some extremely original illustrations." Hickson, after a review to which I need only refer (p. $36^{*}$ ) concludes: "We think that either Shakspere and Fletcher wrote the scene in conjunction, or that it was originally written by Fletcher, and afterwards revised and partially rewritten by Shakspere. From the entrance of Valerius, however, it appears to be entirely by the latter." (Does it not therefore appear more likely that the view put forward by Spalding, and upheld by Messrs Dyce, Skeat, and Swinburne, -that Shakspere was the first sketcher of the piece, Fletcher the "padder ;" that the play is "gilt o'er-dusted," rather than "dust that is a little gilt,"-gives after all the true explanation of the mystery ? Speculation on this point, however, must to a very great extent depend upon conjecture and individual opinion, founded on certain modes of regarding the work.) Compare with the scene, The Captain, II. i., and The Double Marrigge, II. iii. (and with this, II. ii. of the present play).

16/17. Martialist] Not elsewhere in Sh. ; B. and F. have it twice, A.King
and No King, II. ii. ; and The Laws of Candy, V. i. Cf. Spanish Tragedy, I. pp. 8, 9. (Hazlitt's Dodsley, vol. v.) See Hickson on this speech, p. 36*.

18/20. flurted] flurt-gills occurs once in Sh., flurt never. Nares, quoting one instance (from Peele's Old Wives Tale, 1595) has "Flurting, Scorning?" Examples of the words furt and firt may be found in B. and F. The Pilgrim, I i. : "I'll not be fool'd, nor flurted!" Rule a Wife, III. v. : "a flirted fool." Span. Curate, V. ii., "flirts" = tricks. Cf. also Hudibras, I. 450 ; Chapman, May Day, II. iii. : "If you think good, you may flirt away again as soon as you see him" (ed. Shepherd, p. 282 b). Hazl. Dodsl. vii. 295 (v. n.) : "Mistress Flirt-yea, foul strumpet, Light-a-love, short-heels." Mr Seward, pref. B. and F., p. lix., ed. 1750, says . . "it is still the fashion to flurt at the names of Critic and Commentator, and almost to treat the very science with derision." "To flirt a fan" is still a common expression, and Dr Nicholson gives me the following lesson on firtation:-"Though a firt in our sense, and in the much stronger Elizabethan sense, was probably of the same origin with flurt (scorn), yet they branched off sufficiently to be considered two words. The original meaning seems (as rightly given by Richardson) to be to toss. To flirt or flurt water by an action of the finger and thumb is still in use ; and from this action-still a disdainful movement in common use-it came to signify to scorn, jeer, or cast a disdainful joke upon. That it arose thus or from any other casting, just as we have the metaphoric phrase of "casting mud on one," is shewn by quotations from Udall and Milton in Richardson, the very happy and idiomatic use of it in Quarles, given by Halliwell and Wright in Nares, as by "flurted fool" in B. and F. Commentators on Sh. have I think erred in giving flurt in flurt-gill, R. and $\mathcal{F}$., II. iv., the mere sense of firt-a woman of light behaviour. Gill-flirt about 1700 seems to have had that meaning, but if one looks well into what the Nurse meant, and compares it with B. and F. flurt-gillian, it will be evident that she means ' I am none of your light wenches, that you can jeer and flout.'" That the word denoted any quick tossing movement, is shewn from the reference to Hudibras above :
" His draggling Tail hung in the Dirt,
Which on his Rider he wou'd flurt."
Ed. Z. Grey, Pt. I. c. i. 1. 450.
The Rev. A. S. Palmer has given ("Leaves from a Wcrd-hunter's Notebook," pp. $33-40$ ) reasons for believing that these are but secondary meanings of the word, and that it is originally " nothing else but a slightly contracted form of the French fleureter (from fletr), to go a-flowering, or, as old Cotgrave gives it in his dictionary (1660), 'Fleureter, lightly to pass over; only to touch a thing in going by it (metaphorically from the little Bee's nimble skipping from flower to flower as she feeds);' and so the cognate word in Spanish, florear, means ' to dally with, to trifle ' (Stevens, i 706)." See the entire note.

24/25. purge For her repletion] For, against, as a remedy for. "For (in opposition to) : hence 'to prevent.'" Abbott, Sh. Gr., § 154 . Repletion not elsewhere found in Sh.

24/25. retain] i. e. employ, take into service, as in Henry VIII, I. ii. 192. Cf. retainer, a person so retained. Heath proposed reclaim; Mr Skeat "would
rather read regain; at any rate that is the sense intended." (But then, would not regrain anew be the same as saying gain anew anew?)

41/45. As they are here, were to be strangers, and such things to be, mere monsters] Mason first placed the comma after here, the O. Edd. put it after are. The second line has no comma after to be in any preceding edition. I am indebted to Dr Nicholson for the reading and explanation:-"It does not matter to the sense whether we punctuate are, here or are here, but the latter seems to me more idiomatic and rhythmical, and in such things the authority of the old editions is no authority. But Weber's explanation of the rest is quite incorrect, and the true sense requires a comma, as I have placed it, after be. 'Not to be as they are,' says Arcite, 'were to be strangers, and to be such things [as they are] [were to be] mere monsters.' The form of thought and expression is as in a previous passage :
. . . for not to swim, \&c.
. . . and to follow, \&c.
I am surprised that Dyce, with his great knowledge of Elizabethan English, did not see this." The note in Weber (which Mr Skeat quotes) is: "Arcite says, ' If we were not exactly as they are, we should be here (in Theles) strangers, and such things as would be considered mere, that is, absolute, monsters, or things out of the common track of human customs.' "
$46 / 5 \mathbf{r}$. Where there is faith] i. e. self-reliance.
51/56. haply so long untill] Sidney Walker queries "haply so long till." With the double sense, cf. Cymb., III. iii. 21-6.

61/66. a plantain] Qo plantin. F2 plantain. The word is spelt Plantan in Fol. 1623, being found in L. L. L., III. i. 74, and Rom. and Ful., I. ii. 52. "The leaves of the plantain (the herb so called,-plantago major,- not the tree) were supposed to have great efficacy in healing wounds, stanching blood, \&c."-Dyce. See A Physical Directory, by Nich. Culpeper, 3rd ed. Lond. 165r, p. 24, a : . . "Outwardly it cleers the sight, takes away inflamations, Scabs, Itch, the Shingles, and all spreading sores, and is as wholesome a Herb as can grow about a house."

63/71-72.] This passage in the O. Edd. reads:-(Qo)
A most unbounded Tyrant, whose successes
Makes heaven unfeard, and villany assured
Beyond its power: there's nothing almost puts
Faith in a feavour, \&c.
And this was altered in 1750 (followed by Mason and Weber) to:
Make Heaven unfear'd, and Villany assur'd
Beyond its Pow'r there's Nothing; almost puts, \&c.
Seward explaining: "The Successes of the Tyrant makes Heav'n unfear'd, and Villany assur'd that nothing is beyond its Pow'r ; which almost staggers the Faith of good Men, and makes them think that Chance, and not a just Providence, governs the World." Notice that Seward makes the very "mistake" he corrects: successes makes. But in fact it is only ignorance of Shaksperian usage that has led editors to admit any change in either the noun or the verb here. See Abbott's Sh. Gr., § 333, for an accurate statement of the case. Edd. 1778 offer
an explanation "which can satisfy no one, and renders the rest of the sentence entirely devoid of meaning" (Weber).

## Whose successes

Make Heav'n unfear' $d$, and villainy assur'd, Beyond its power; there's nothing almost puts Faith in a fever, \&c.
The "first line and half" of which "plainly signifies, that "Creon's success diminishes our fear of the gods, by making us suppose that guilt can oppose their power, and defend itself from their justice.'-Its power refers to Heav'n, not to villainy. The next sentence a pears to be incomplete, probably by a casual omission, or possibly on purpose broken off abruptly; if the latter, there should be a dash after voluble chance" (which dash the Edd. accordingly plant in their text). Heath and Knight read success. Mr Skeat reads :

Make Heaven unfear'd, and villainy assur'd,
Beyond its power there's nothing: \&c.
But-not to take exception to make-why should there be a comma after assur'd? Its, v. Trench, Eng. Past and Pres., p. 126 (3rd ed.).
$67 / 74$. Volible] Not so accented elsewhere in Shakspere (who always uses it of discourse = fluent). vóluble, L. L. L., II. i. 96 ; Errors, II. i. 92 . However, we can never infer accent safely from the initial foot of English blankverse. In Par. Lost, IV. 594, Milton has volibil in the classical sense, as here. For the formation, cf. debile, Cor., I. ix.

70'77. And what they win in 't, boot and glory; one] Daniel Qo, boot and glory on That feares, \&c. T. C. D. Qo and F2 place a semicolon after on; Seward reads boot and glory too; which all modern editors have accepted. Dr Nicholson thinks it "more after the old style to read: And what they win in't, boots and glories on. This seems to me like one of the fuller sentences which Shakspere in his later writings affected, for besides the general meaning that he appropriated all and made their renown his, the words are so chosen as to convey this, that he seized on all, their material boot and their material glory, and also that tyrant-like he gloried in his act of appropriation." But Dr J. K. Ingram has suggested what only needed suggesting to be admitted the right reading :-". . . But is it not likely that the reading in the old edition [Daniel Qo] is right, wanting only a stop? boot and glory ; on That fears not, etc. on, as usual, representing our one." For this spelling of one, cf. I. iii. 85, Qo : humd on From, \&c., and Love's L. L., Booth's reprint Fi, p. I33. See Collier's n. Macb., II. ii. 63, Furness, p. 107. Moreover, the word is vulgarly pronounced wan in Ireland at the present day; this would explain the phonetic spelling (wan, won, 'on) on; as the English (one, wun) 'un.

72/79. sibbe] akin.
79/81. in blood, unless in quality] not in kin, unless in kind. Cf. M. of V., II. iii. : "though I am a daughter to his blood, I am not to his manners." Cf. the beginning of this scene

86/95. wwhipstock] Phœebus' "whip of steel, Whose bitter smart he made his horses feel," and "his fiery whip," mentioned in Beaumont's transl. Salmacis and Hermaphroditus.

88/98. Small winds shake him] cf. Cymb., II. iii. 136: "South-fog rot him." 96/ro7. Thirds his own worth] An easy ellipsis: "What man (is there, but that he) Thirds his power," \&c.

106/120. intelligence] "i. e. messenger, as in K. Fohn, IV. ii. 116: 'Oh, where hath our intelligence been drunk?'"-Skeat. Schmidt, on the same line in $K$. Fohn and $\mathrm{I} H . I V$., IV. iii. 98, says: "Abstr. pro concr. = spy, informer." It is worth adding that intelligence is therefore not (as Mr Skeat seems to take it) an exact equivalent for intelligencer, i. e. "one who entertains the communication and discourse between two parties-an agent, mediator."-Schmidt.

109/124. come] Qo. doth is understood before come.
127. before] further than. Quite a different use from the word in Coriol., I. iv. : "Now put your shields before your hearts, and fight with hearts more proof than shields."

## Scene 3.

Spalding and Hickson agree in praising this scene very highly, and Lamb has selected the episode of Flavina as one of his specimens from the Play. "Much of this scene has Shakspeare's stamp deeply cut upon it : it is probably all his." -Spalding, Letter, p. 33.

5/6. To dare ill-dealing fortune] O. Edd. Weber, Mason, and Knight read dure. Seward, Edd. 1778, cure. Sympson conj. dare (which Seward says " may signify to bid defance to:" and probably Sympson so understood it too). Dyce and Skeat read dare, quoting Heath : "that, if possible, he may defy Fortune to disappoint him," v. Dyce, n. But the word, as Dr Nicholson notes, if the right reading, is here used in the more significant "fowling and hawking sense of terrifying till it lay still and subdued, or not daring flight, fled crouching on the earth. See a very good note on the word with quotations in Nares. The same sense renders the supposed obscure passage in Meas. for Meas., IV. iv., perfectly intelligible. 'When she thinks over it,' says Angelo, 'reason will so terrify her that she will lie quiet and not tongue ;' the reference being to the fact that birds become silent when the hawk is circling aloft." See Richardson, s. v. Dare; and cf. Chapman, The Gentleman Usher, I. i. (p. 78, ed. Shepherd) : -

> "A cast of falcons on their merry wings, Daring the stooped prey, that shifting flies."

Schmidt refers to $H$.8., III. ii. 282, and $H .5$., IV. ii. 36. And cf. Lucrece, 5065 II. However, cf. III. vi. 10.

7/9. His ocean needs not, \&c.] Weber compares Ant. and Cleop., III. xii. 8-10.

21/24. woomen That have sod their infants in, \&c.] There is a somewhat similar allusion (though under very different circumstances) in The Sea Voyage, III. i. :-
". . . Unroasted or unsod ?
Mor. I have read in stories-
Lam. Of such restoring meats we have examples, Thousand examples, and allowed for excellent ; Women that have eat their children, men Their slaves, nay their brothers," \&c.

The Sea Voyage was licensed June 22nd, 1622 (Darley. See Ward, Eng. Dram. Lit., II. 218, on " the revolting realism of much in this play, and in the midst of its fanciful connection," \&c.) Cf. Pericles, I. iv. 42-50. "Probably," Dr Nicholson writes, "the main instance that gave rise to these allusions was The Siege of Yerusalem. Nashe's book was very popular, and it was probably alluded to in sermons constantly." I have since noted, apropos of this, in Love's Cure, II. i. : "I say unto thee, one pease was a soldier's provant a whole day at the destruction of Jerusalem." Mr Skeat refers to Josephus, Wars of the Fewe, VI. 3, 4 .

27/34. sports] Coleridge conj. imports-" a wretched conjecture !" Dyce.
37/44-7.] Seward, finding the expression here obscure, has repaired it : "I will not obtrude my Conjecture upon the Reader, as the Original ; it departs rather too far from the Trace of the Letters, but it is offer'd as what I could have wish'd the Poets to have wrote.

> They have skift
> Torrents, whose roaring Tyranny and Power
> I' th' best of Ships were dreadful;
i. e. in a small Skiff they have endur'd Storms which would have been terrible to the largest Ships." To which Edd. 1778 add : "The text is obscure, but the conjectural reading ridiculous. The sense seems to be 'That the very least of their dangers and distresses was dreadful.'" The meaning seems to Weber to be : " Peril and want contending who should injure them most, they have passed in a slight bark over torrents whose roaring tyranny and power, even when at the minimum of power, were dreadful." Clearly it is : contending against peril and want, \&c. Compare the speech with Coriol., IV. iv. 13 seqq.

67/77. oh (then but beginning To swell about the blossom) she zoould long] This is the reading of the old editions; Seward and other editors include oh in the parenthesis. Sidney Walker writes "Dele $O$." This certainly is necessary if we wish to regulate the metre, and Dyce adopts Walker's suggestion. The irregularity of the metre, as well as the inappropriateness of the parenthesis, have suggested to me that possibly the words (then but beginning To swell about the blossom) were interpolated by Fletcher, and the lines originally read :

> The flowre that I would plucke
> And put betweene my breasts,-oh, she would long
> Till she had such another, \&c.

In any case, oh should be read with she would long. The statement cannot be objected to physiologically, but it certainly seems a superfluous piece of information from a dramatic point of view. Dr Ingleby thinks that "if the parenthesis 'had been Fl.'s interpolation, the 'oh' would have gone with 'she' in next line. The 'oh' now seems to me an impertinence. Why not put it [oh]?"

72/82.] The reading in the text (from ed. 1778, and so all subseq. edd.) may be explained : "Her fancy (which was sure to be pretty, even in her most careless dress) I copied in my most studied adornments" (Colman, ed. 1778).

75/85. humm'd one] O. Edd. on. Seward changed to one; v. n. I. ii. 70/77. Weber replaces the old reading, thinking it " far better." No subsequent editor, except Mr Tyrrell, has agreed with him.

77/87. sojourn (rather, dzvell on),] The editors, 1778, give "the following very ingenious remark" from Dr Dodd :-"Do not the last words sound as if they had been a marginal note of some critic, or a remark of a prompter ?" The editors add : "The conjecture is so very probable, and the passage would be so much amended, we are almost inclined to discard the words." But the words are by no means synonymous : dwell on denoting far longer duration than sojourn, 一 and Emilia is the "critic" who corrects herself.

78/88. This rehearsal (Which, every innocent wots well, comes in Like old importment's bustard) has this end,] This passage as here given may be paraphrased : " The end of this long relation (rehearsal), as every innocent is aware, comes in like the 'illegitimate conclusion' of a long story told very consequentially [old-importment; or else ? bastard $=$ hybrid, abortive offspring (cf. Comus, 727), = full of sound and fury, signifying nothing, 'ridiculus mus'], simply means that the love," \&c. I only attempt that explanation, as I do not understand those given by my predecessors ; however, in the hope that others may, I add their various readings and interpretations. Qo has :

This rehearsall
(Which fury-innocent wots well) comes in Like old importments bastard, has this end,
F2 and ed. 1711 variations being: rehearsal: fury [om. -] innocent: importments [-] bastard: and end [:]. Sympson and Edd. 1778 read : Which surely Innocence wots well). Monck Mason would read "emportment, from the French emportement, which signifies passion, or transport," and wot I well instead of wots well; his parenthesis then being : (Which fury innocent, wot I well, comes in Like old emportment's bastard) has this end, - " And Emilia's meaning is this -This recital, the innocent enthusiasm of which, I well know, comes in like the spurious offspring, the faint resemblance, of the passion I formerly felt for Flavina, is intended to prove, that the love between maid and maid may be stronger than that between persons of different sexes." Weber explains: "This rehearsal of our affections (which every innocent soul well knows comes in like the mere bastard, the faint shadow of the true import, the real extent of our natural affections) has this end, or purpose, to prove that the love between two virgins may be," \&c. Dr Nicholson notes that " If I understand Weber's interpretation aright, that the love of two innocents is the rehearsal of 'the real nature of our natural affections,' then Emilia is made by calling it Importment's bastard to contradict her own conclusion that the true love of maid and maid exceeds the love of the sexes. Hence Mason's explanation is right, and this is further shown by the word old, which both refers to passed affection, and expresses (as often) the strength of that importment. See Todd, Nares, etc. s. v. Old." Lamb first introduced the reading every innocent for fury-innocent. The mistake is obvious, f for e, 'every' being spelt (as commonly) 'eury.' Seward compares M. N. D., III. ii., and Mr Skeat The Lover's Progress, II. i., for the general sense of the passage. Mr Skeat frees old Importment's character from all imputations, by changing the line to "[Comes in with this importment] has this end."

82/92. sex dividual] Seward and Sympson's correction ; the O. Edd. sex individual (Qo individuall). Dr C. M. Ingleby informs me that this misprint also
occurs in Sir E. Brydges' ed. of Milton, P. L. xii. 85 ; "no individual bemg "in Ist ed. ; "dividual being " in Todd's and Masson's edd.

96/109. I am not against your faith, Yet I continue mine] Sidney Walker queries :

## _I I am not [ <br> Against your faith, yet I continue mine. <br> Scene 4.

Misprinted Scene VI. in ed. 1750.
" The phraseology of this short scene is like Shakspeare's, being brief and energetic, and in one or two instances passing into quibbles."-Spalding, Letter, p. 36. ". . . the mark of Shakspere's hand too strongly to be mistaken."Hickson, p. 37*.

13/15. what are those ?] There is no stage direction here, as the 'warning' at 1. 68 (margin) of the preceding scene was sufficient. Dyce wrongly heads the scene: "Dead bodies lying on the ground; among them Palamon and Arcite." The Kinsmen, as the old direction shows, are borne in on "hearses."

18/20. smear'd with prey] See Critical Notes (and Preface to Qo reprint for complete list of the variations between the two copies of the quarto collated by me). Dyce notes " smear'd. So the folio of 1679 (Qy. if rightly ?)-The quarto has 'succard.'" Mr Skeat was not aware of the reading of the Daniel Qo when he noted (p. 91) that Dyce was wrong, as Dyce was similarly ignorant of the other reading. Smear is regularly used by Sh. in this sense: cf. Cor., I. vi. 69.

22/25. We'leave] "It is just questionable whether We leave be not a misprint for believe, as in II. iv. 19/28."-Dr Ingleby. We'leave (believe), says the herald doubtfully ; "'Tis right, those, those," exclaims Theseus.

31/36. convent ] Summon. Meas., V. 158 ; H.8., V. i. 52 ; Cor., II. ii. 58. Schmidt.

32/37. niggard] a verb. v. Abbott, Sh. Gr. Introd.; cf. Sonn. I. I2.
40/45-9] On this "cataloguing of circumstances altogether peculiar to Shakspere," see Hickson, p. $32^{*}$, and the quotations from Hamlet and Troil. The passage appeared to Monck Mason to be " a strange nonsensical bombastical rhapsody, incapable of explanation."

> Since I have knowne frights, fury, friends, beheastes, Loves, provocations, zeal, a mistris Taske, Desire of liberty, a feavour, madnes, Hath set a marke which nature could not reach too Without some imposition, sicknes in will, \&oc.] Qo.

Theseus' meaning is plain enough ; the only difficulty is, how far should we im prove on that meaning by altering the old punctuation or even the old reading. Dyce, inter alia, reads fight's fury, suggested (to his authority, Heath, who read : fights, fury,) probably by the fact that a battle had just been 'struck' (the technical phrase). Theseus directs that the prisoners shall be removed from all sights that might be suggestive of their captivity and so hinder their recovery, since he knows that, among other causes, "desire of liberty" hath sometimes produced a degree of mental apathy or delirium (" set a marke" of "sickness in b
will or wrestling strength in reason ") which (" nature could not reach to,") could only be combated by practising some deception. Compare what the Doctor says of the daughter's "wrestling strength in reason" (in her case produced by "Love's provocations"): "It is a falsehood she is in, which is with falsehoods to be combated," IV. iii. 8I/87. I only admit the following changes : friends' behests, Love's provocations, . . mistris' taske; and enclose the words " Which nature could not reach to without some imposition" in a parenthesis, to indicate that they refer to the first order : "Bear them hence," \&c. Alternatives .are enumerated, each separately governing Hath. (Imposition might else mean penalty, equivalent surrender, quittance ; viz.-sickness in will, or wrestling strength in reason $=$ mental apathy, or delirium.) fright $=$ "violent fear, terror ;"zeal ="intense and eager interest or endeavour" (Schmidt). If this arrangement makes sense, it has the old text to authorise it, but my predecessors have not been satisfied with the old text, and still less with one another's amendments.

All the Edd. from Seward read mistress' task; all (except Edd. 1778, who follow Qo), friends' behests, Love's provocations. Seward proposed ''T hath set,' which all Edd., except Knight and Skeat, adopt. Seward also transposed the lines, inserting Sickness . . . reason, after madness, and Edd. 1778 accept this derangement. Heath proposed fights, fury, friends' behests, and Have for Hath. Dyce added two original changes to those he adopted from Seward, viz., fight's fury, and zeal $[\mathrm{in}]$ a mistress' task. If we agree to disregard the old text, Mr Skeat's readings and interpretation seem the most probable :-

Since I have known fight's fury, friends' behests,
Love's provocations, zeal [in] a mistress' task
Desire of liberty - -a fever, madness- -
Hath set a mark, \&c.
Mr Skeat understands that before Hath, and explains: "For I have known the fury of fight, the requisitions of friends, the provocations of love, the zeal employed in executing a mistress' task, or the desire of liberty, -to be (or, to amount to) a fever or a madness, which has proposed an aim (or endeavours) which the man's natural strength could not attain to, without at least some forcing, or some fainting of the will, or some severe struggle in the mind. . . . Imposition means demand or requirement, in an excessive degree."

## Scene 5.

"The last scene of this act is of a lyrical cast, and comprised in a few lamentations spoken by the widowed queens over the corpses of their dead lords." Spalding, Letter, p. 36. "The internal evidence in the fifth scene, which is a dirge, is not so strong; it is the only scene throughout the entire play with regard to which we entertain doubt; but we incline to the belief that it is by Shakspere." -Hickson, p. $37^{*}$. It is only out of deference to the authority of these critics that I have inclined to the same belief; at the same time, the evidence seems to me to point rather the other way. The final couplet is (I think) not to be considered as evidence, being probably not original. The epithet "quick-eyed," a favourite one with Fletcher, does not occur once in Shakspere (v. Schmidt, p.
1435) ; and the whole tone of the song seems to me Fletcherian.

11/10. housholds grave :] Qo houshold's grave :, F2 graver [om. :], ed. I7II graves. "Mr Dyce wrongly ascribes the last reading to Seward instead of Tonson," 1711 (Mr Skeat). "Each king," as Knight discovered, " had one grave."

15/16. This world's a city] I have to thank my friend, the Rev. A. S. Palmer, for the following interesting parallels to these well-known lines. We have not been able to ascertain the dates of any of these epitaphs, but they appear sufficiently ancient to have been lenders, not borrowers.

In Monuments and Monumental Inscriptions in Scotland, by Rev. Charles Rogers, Lond. 1871-2, these epitaphs are given (Vol. II. pp. 363 and 370) :-

## Elginshire.

Parish of Abernethy.
"On gravestones in the churchyard are these rhymes:-
[Two Epitaphs.]
The world's a city
Full of streets,
And death's a market
That every one meets;
But if life were a thing
That money could buy,
The poor could not live
And the rich would ne'er die."
[No date or other detail.]
Parish of Elgin.
" From the area of the cathedral and the surrounding churchyard we have the following rhymes :-

This world is a city
Full of streets ;
Death is the mercat
That all men meets.
If lyfe were a thing
That money could buy
The poor could not live
And the rich would not die.
[No date or other detail.]
Southey, Commonplace Books (Vol. IV. p. 48), gives the following version, an epitaph at Worpleton :

Life is a city full of crooked streets,
And Death the Marketplace where all men meets.
If life were a merchandize which men could buy,
The rich would purchase it, and only the poor would die."

With the idea we may also compare Massinger, speaking of "that difficult lesson, how to learn to die,"-
"All studies else are but as circular lines, And death the centre where they must all meet."

Old Lazv, V. i.
In Ancient Poems, Ballads and Songs of the Peasantry of England (ed. J. H. Dixon, Percy Soc., 1846, re-edited 1857, by R. Bell), is printed a curious old poem entitled The Messenger of Mortality, or Life and Death contrasted in a Dialogue betzixt Death and a Lady, the last four lines of which are an expanded and corrupted version of the passage in question. The 'moral' of the Dialogue, with this quatrain appended as a tag, is as follows:-

Thus may we see the high and mighty fall,
For cruel Death shows no respect at all
To any one of high or low degree, Great men submit to Death as well as we. Though they are gay, their life is but a spanA lump of clay-so vile a creature's man. Then happy those whom Christ has made his care, Who die in the Lord, and ever blessèd are.
The grave's the market-place where all men meet, Both rich and poor, as well as small and great. If life were merchandize that gold could buy, The rich would live, the poor alone would die."
It is probably owing to the popularity of this traditional poem, which seems to have been widely current, that the concluding lines, with slight differences of form, are so frequently found in country church-yards inscribed on the tombstones of the peasantry. They are not, however, contained in the broadside with which Mr Bell collated the version printed in the above volume. (A. S. Palmer.)

## ACT II.

We have now reached the most doubtful and most disputed part of our play, the underplot. On this subject the reader is referred to Spalding's Letter, in which it is maintained that the underplot "is clearly the work of a different artist from many of the leading parts of the drama;" and to Hickson's examination and refutation of this view, N. S. S. Trans., pp. 38-9*.

It must be tolerably plain to any reader that certain parts of this underplot are by a different hand from other parts; and that hand, Hickson asserts, Shakspere's. Note that the two scenes do not fit together exactly ; in the prose scene the kinsmen are referred to as if in conversation, but in the verse dialogue which ensues they are made to begin with mutual salutations. Hickson notes another inconsistency, p. $3^{8 *}$. So, too, all their lamentations about Thebes, II. ii., are not very akin to their resolution, "Let us leave Thebs," etc., in I. ii. The parallels to this act from the Knightes Tale are : Sc. ii. cf. 11. 172-360, 417-475; Sc. iii. cf. 11. $36 \mathrm{I}-416,476-55^{8}$ (this passage especially deserves comparison, and on) ; Sc. v. cf. 11. 559-592.

Weber, Dyce, and Skeat print this first scene as part of the long second scene, but the Qo distinguishes them ; they overlap in point of time, the authorship is different, and the juncture is confusing (v. N. S. S. Tr., 1874, pt. II., p. 455).

1. depart] part. v. Nares. "Followed by with $=$ to resign, give up." Schmidt.
2. better lyn'd] Cf. Cleveland, Works, p. 9.3: " But though he came alone, yet well lin'd it seems, with $133 l$. $8 d$."
3. a greise] Qogreife. F2, ed. 1711, 1778, Weber, Knight ('41), grief. Seward and Sympson "both read and conjecture Gree" (Seward's note), but as Qo in their text. Edd. $\mathbf{r} 778$ think grief "is a stiff expression," but, nevertheless, "think it, both in expression and sentiment, every way superior to the proposed restoration" greise ! Knight (1867) reads grice, Dyce grise, and quotes Lydgate, Warres of Troy (B. i. sig. E 1 verso, ed. 1555) :-
"She gan anone by greces to asende
Of a Touret in to an hye pynacle,"
and refers to Twelfth Night, III. i. 135 ; Timon, IV. iii. 16 ; Othello, I. iii. 200 (Grize, Schmidt). See Nares, s. v. Grice, and Mr Skeat's note here. Greise seems to have been the usual word for ascending platforms on a stage : e. g. Ben Jonson, Part of the King's Entertainment . . "the daughters of the Genius, and six in number; who in a spreading ascent, upon several grices, help to beautify both the sides." Chapman, Mask of Middle Temple and Gray's Inn (p. 343, ed. Shepherd), -"This rock was in the undermost part craggy, and full of hollow places, in whose concaves were contrived two winding pair of stairs, by whose greeces the persons above might make their descents, and all the way be seen."
4. And so did they.] As the sense appears defective to Seward, he would strike out these words, but (horrible consequence !) "the Measure would be lost." See Coleridge, Table Talk, p. 212, ed. 1852.
5. Lord, the difference of men] Lear, IV. ii. 26 (Skeat)

## Scene 2.

" On the whole, however, this scene, if it be Fletcher's, (of which I have no doubt, ) is among the very finest he ever wrote ; and there are many passages in which, while he preserves his own distinctive marks, he has gathered no small portion of the flame and inspiration of his immortal friend and assistant."-Spalding, Letter, p. 37.

21/24. never wore] Mr Skeat compares wor'st, III. vi. 93.
24/27. like lightning] A favourite image of Fletcher's. Cf. III. vi. 81/ro8; Loyal Subject, IV. v. ; Lover's Progress, I. ii., etc.

37/40. The fair-cy'd maids] Prospective lamentations, curses, rejoicings, of the same kind as in the passage in the text, are at once the commonest and most striking of Fletcher's many peculiarities. E. g. in this play alone, cf. II. vi. 15 ; III. vi. 187/228, 246/297; IV. i. 72/94; ii. 4 ; and, amongst others, passages in the following scenes: Monsieur Thomas, II. v.; A Wife for a Month, V. iii. ; Thierry and Theodoret, IV. i. ; A King and No King, IV. ii.; The Mad Lover, III. iv. ; The Lover's Progress, III. iv. ; Custom of the Country, I. i. ; V. iv. ;

The Mait's Tragedy, II. i. (Some of these may be better compared with other of the passages in our play than with this one.)

46/50. our Theban hounds] Perhaps a reminiscence of Edwardes' play of Palamon and Arcite (see Introduction), or of Theseus' hounds in M. N. D.

50/54. a Parthian quiver.] There is a somewhat similar allusion in Valentinian, I. i.: "quivers for the Parthians." Nash, Summer's Last Will, \&c. (Hazlitt's Dodsley, viii. 19) : "As the Parthians fight flying away," \&c.; cf. (Skeat) Cymb. I. vi. 20.

54/58. lastly] Seward, ed. 1778 (and Dr C. M. Ingleby) read lazily; perhaps a necessary change, as Palamon is lamenting the privation of "all valiant uses" and consequent inertness; though I do not feel confident enough to admit the amendment. Where the old text makes some sort of sense we are bound to respect it. O. Edd. and the rest, lastly, meaning "that which is worst of all."Mason. The line hardly wants a syllable, and gently (which Mr Skeat quotes as a parallel instance of this metrical defect) is a trisyl'able : For when the west wind courts her gently, II. ii. 138/164 (see note here). The same objection holds of $R .3$, IV. iv. 428 : shortly. There is no parallel in V. i. 103 : stings more than nettles, if the text were rightly arranged (as Dyce, ' 67, ' 76 , has it) by placing $I$ of the next line at the end of 1.103 , and so making them both metrical.

58/63. mere] absolute. Mr Skeat compares Woman Hater, III. ii. :-
"Yet do I see
Thro' this confusedness, some little comfort."
64/70. twynn'd] Qo twyn'd. The old spelling for (Seward, ed. 1778 reading) twinn'd. F2, ed. 1711, Weber, Dyce, Skeat, read twin'd, and Weber compares Lover's Progress, III. iii. : "two hearts that have been twined together" (where F2 reads twin'd, i. e. twinn'd). See note, I. i. 179/199. And cf. Coriol., IV. iv. 17.

75/82. The poyson of pure spirits] Cf. Custonn of the Country, IV. iii.
79/87. an endles mene] Philaster (III. i.) says of Arethusa : "Is she not all a lasting mine of joy."

91/98. Crave] O. Edd. Dyce, Knight ('67), and Skeat : Grave, i. e. Bury, "entomb" (Skeat). Crave = require. The whole speech is only an expansion of the first two lines. The fact that Sh . uses grave $=$ bury does not strengthen an emend. of Fletcher's text very much.

119/132. Narcissus] Cf. IV. ii. 32. Kinight's Tale, 1. 1084: "Ne Narcisus the fayr of yore agon." Faithfill Shepherdess, II. i., the plant is mentioned, as "for swellings best."

136/162-9. A rose, \&c.] There is a striking parallel to this intensely Fletcherian passage in The Loyal Subject (acted in 1618: Ward), IV. iii. : -
"Here, ladies, here (you were not made for cloisters),
Here is the sphere you move in; here shine nobly,
And, by your powerful influence, command all !What a sweet modesty dwells round about' 'em,
[Aside. And like a nipping morn, pulls in their blossoms I"
Cf. too, The Mad Lover, IV. i.
138/164. gently] " Dr Farmer (Appendix to Shakespeare, 1773) quotes this
speech, and with Seward (line 2) reads gentily for gently. I mention this minuteness of the doctor, because (line 5) he substitutes charity for chastity, and (line 6) shuts for locks. The quotation is made in support of a proposal, by 'an eminent critic,' to alter the word shakss to shuts, in the following passage in Cymbeline :
'—— like the tyrannous breathing of the north, Shakes all our buds from growing.'
I dare say, the doctor did not intentionally violate the poet's text; but think each of the errors very remarkable."-F. $N$., ed. 1778 (here quoted from reprint, 18ir). Theobald proposed to insert Beauties after courts her, but Seward points out that gentily is trisyllabic. Edd. 1778 prefer Theobald's variation, "but neither is necessary ;" v. n. supra, l. 54/58.

159/192-207.] This form of short-lined (Box-and-Cox-like) dialogue is very common in Fletcher's writings. See Mr Fleay's paper and the discussion of it (in N. S. S. Trans., pt. I. 1874) for a good account of the Fletcherian metres.

163/201-4] Cf. Knightes Tale, 294 seqq. It is worth noting that Shakspere shows his early acquaintance with this sophism of Arcite's, in the sonnet in L. L. Lost (given also with a few verbal changes in Pass. Pilgr. iii.), IV. iii. 64-7:-
"A woman I forswore; but I will prove,
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee : Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee :
My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love ; Thy grace being gained cures all disgrace in me."
The passage forms a suggestive link between L. L. Lost, M. N. D., and Chaucer's Theseus. "In transferring his story from Chaucer, the poet has here been guilty of an oversight. The old poet fixes a character of positive guilt on Arcite's prosecution of his passion, by relating a previous agreement between the two cousins, by which either, engaging in any adventure whether of love or war, had an express right to the co-operation of the other. Hence Arcite's interference with his cousin's claim becomes with Chaucer a direct infringement of a knightly compact ; while in the drama no deeper blame attaches to it than as a violation of the more fragile rules imposed by the generous spirit of friendship."Spalding, Letter, p. 40. Seward has also noted this disagreement, II. ii. 243/298.

179/220.] "Arrange and write,
'I say again, love her ; and, in loving her, maintain,' \&c."

Sidney Walker.
188/232. Am not I liable \&c.] On this " mere flash in the pan," see Hickson, p. $48^{\text {* }}$.

243/298.] And if she be not heavenly] Seward praises this speech, and continues: "Our Authors have improved upon Chaucer, in making Palamon and Arcite such very distinct Characters; but Arcite, who is not crown'd with Success, becomes by this means the more amiable, and has the Reader's Wishes in his Favour. This is a Fault that Chaucer particularly guards against," etc. It may be remarked, apropos of this, that no one can read the Shakspere part of the
play by itself, without feeling throughout that Palamon is the central figure and true hero of the piece ; but reading the Fletcher scenes, on the contrary, our sympathies are involuntarily turned away from Palamon and towards Arcite. This fact illustrates Mr Spedding's observations on the want of congruity as a whole in the kindred play Henry VIII. "The strongest sympathies which have been wakened in us run opposite to the course of the action."-N. S. S. Trans., 1874, pt. I. App. p. 3*.

268/330. pelting] paltry. M. for M., II. ii. 112; M. N. D., II. i. 91 ; R.2, i. 60 ; Troil., IV. v. 267 ; Lear, II. iii. 18 (Schmidt).

## Scene 3.

Of course, by Fletcher. "Neither this scene, nor the following, in which the jailor's daughter meditates on the perfections of Palamon, . . . have anything in them worthy of particular notice."-Spalding, p. 41.
" In my paper on Fletcher, I have shown that Fletcher never wrote prose in any of his plays."-Rev. F. G. Fleay, N. S. S. Trans., pt. I. 1874, App. p. 62*. I follow Dyce's arrangement, in the hope that these lines may appear metrical : certainly not a few seem to me prose.
16. a tongue will tame tempests] Cf. Philaster, IV. ii., where the king exclaims (of himself) :-

> ". . . .'Tis the king
> Will have it so ; whose breath can still the winds, Unclond the sun, charm down the swelling sea, And stop the clouds of heaven. Speak, can it not? Dion. No."

The two passages are about equally bombastic.
32/33. Clap her aboard] A common expression in Fletcher: e. g. The Pilgrim, IV. iii. ; Scornful Lady, III. ii. ("Clap her aboard, and stow her"). Chapman, Widow's Tears, I. i. : "by this you had bore up with the lady, and clapped her aboard," etc., and cf. sp. 48 of same scene.

34/35. feskue] "A wire, stick, or straw, chiefly used for pointing to the letters, in teaching children to read."-Nares. See Weber's note, and cf. Dr Ingleby's Centurie of Prayse, p. 152.

4I. keep touch] The origin of this phrase is not very clear. Dyce (quoting from Johnson's Dict.) explains touch as "exact performance of agreement." Nares: "to be faithful, to be exact to an appointment." Cf. III. iii. 53/72 ; Love's Pilgrimage, III. ii., ; Rule a Wife, IV. iv. Some one has suggested that the idea is connected with 'touchstone' (as in Edw. 3, III. iii. : " your intended force must bide the touch," p. 43, Tauchnitz Ed.) ; but touch in the sense of keeping a pro mise, Dr Nicholson tells me, probably came from the custom of shaking hands on a bargain or agreement. Cf. the O.E. word handfast.

45/48. and she must see the duke] Cf. The Bloody Brother, II. ii. : -
' I must deliver
A bevy of young lasses, that must look on This night's solemnity, and see the two dukes, Or I shall lose my credit."

48/51. our town, . . . ha, boys, heigh for the weavers] The resemblance between these countrymen and the rude mechanicals of $M . N . D$. is more apparent than real ; v. n. III. v. 12/9. With the speeches here, cf. Ralph's May-day address :
"With bells on legs, and napkins clean, unto your shoulders tied, With scarfs and garters as you please, and 'Hey for our town' cried." Knight of the Burning Pestle.
With the preceding line, cf. same play, Induction. In the Moral Play of $W y t$ and Science, by John Redford (v. Warton, on Tusser), Idellnes says:
" But yet to take my leve of my deere, lo !
With a skyp or twayne, heere lo! and heer lo!
And heere againe!" (Ed. Halliwell, Sh. Soc., p. 30.)
"Weavers supposed to be gond singers and particularly given to singing psalms (being most of them Calvinists and refugees from the Netherlands)": Twelfth $N .$, II. iii. 6I ; I H.4, II. iv. 147 (Schmidt). Perhaps we have here a reminiscence of the well-voiced Nick Bottom.

75/89. This is an offered, \&c.] "From Turne quod optanti, \&c." [Virg. EEn. ix. 6.] Sid. Walker (q. Dyce).

78/82. Swifter then nev'r few.] "Many irregularities may be explained by the desire of emphasis which suggests repetition, even where repetition, as in the case of a negative, neutralizes the original phrase " (Abbott, Sh. Gr., § 406); and the sentence here may be explained somewhat similarly :-I could have run swifter than the wind, had it flown never so swiftly. I change never to nev'r. Perhaps suggested by Virg. Enn. vii. 8o8-9. Cf. Peele's Polyhymnia, vi.

Scene 4.
Fletcher's : matter and metre. Wrongly headed Scene 2, and the following, Scene 3, in ed. 1750.
2. affect] "feel desire towards."-Dryden, Globe ed. glossary.
14. young handsome] These adjectives may be found together in any of Fletcher's plays. Cf. infra, IV. ii. 3, Epil. 6.
31. Thus much For lawe] O. Edd. arrange the lines so, and rightly; Thus much forming one of Fletcher's heavy monosyllabic double-endings; the following line can also be sufficiently eked out, if properly pronounced, kindred almost trisyllabic, and followed by a pause. Edd. 1778 and subseq. edd. place Thus much at beginning of line For law, etc., thereby spoiling a line, and an important metrical peculiarity, and giving us instead an ordinary double ending line. Seward ("very licentiously," Weber) reads:

> For Lawe or Kindred: I will do it, ay
> And this night : and to Morrow he shall love me.

Edd. 1778 punctuate: And this night, or tomorrow: he shall love mel Mr Skeat omits all points from the line; Qo places a [,] after night. Perhaps or tomorrozu may mean ere morning?

Fletcher's.

## Scene 5.

4. . . . can allow] = approve, praise; cf. Chapman, Shadow of Night (p. 6, b.
ed. Shepherd). Webster, Westward Ho, III. iv.:-" I have acquainted Wafer and Honeysuckle with it, and they allow my wit for it extremely." v. Schmidt, s.v.
5. what proves you] sc. to be a gentleman. (Cf. Webster, Vitt. Cor. p. II, ed. Dyce, 1866: "My father prov'd himself a gentleman.") Arcite answers, a little of all noble professions,-sportsman, horseman, soldier. He is disguised as a countryman (" a pore laborer," Chaucer), and therefore rather confidently enumerates his professions (not necessarily his possessions, as Hippolyta understands him : "if he say true," she says; v. Schmidt, s.v. quality). Sire is to be pronounced as a disyllable; cf. Tennyson, Fatima, 3rd stanza, fire; and infra, V. i. 3, fires. Qo. prooves. F2 ed, 1711 , Weber, Dyce, Skeat, proves. Seward, Edd. 1778, Knight, prove. Dr J. K. Ingram proposes the reading profess for prooves, comparing Arcite's answer ("A little of all noble qualites") with :" because my selfe have seene his demeanor no lesse civill than he exelent in the qualitie he professes." Chettle, Kind-Harts Dreame, p. 2 (q. Ingleby, Centurie of Prayse, p. 3). [Cf. infra, III. i. 56.] But v. Rich. 3, IV. iii. 69 ; Tw. N., III. iv. 416-420; and Ward's Eng. Dram. Lit., I. 275.

30/43. travel] labour, or, referring to $1.25 / 36$, journey.
50/64. do observance] Chaucer's word, Knight's T., 642. Cf. M. N. D., I. i. 167 ; IV. i. 129, 130 (Schmidt wrongly, 137). Mr Skeat has also noted these parallels. Edd. 1778 refer to Bourne's Popular Antiq., ed. Brand, 1777, p. 255 ; and Mr Skeat to Brand, ed. Ellis, I. 179.

## Scene 6.

Unmistakeably Fletcher's. Spalding thinks the scenery of the wood "prettily described."

1. divells rore] Probably we have here a relic of the old Mysteries. Cf. Rich. 3, IV. iv., " fiends roar, saints pray ;" Hen.5, IV. iv., " this roaring devil i' th' old play;"Monsieur Thomas, II. ii., "though the devil roar."
15.] See n. II. ii. 37/40.
2. necessaries] pronounced nessaries, as in ful. Cas., II. i. 178, "our purpose nécessary and not envious." Cf. princess for princesses, Temp., I. ii. 173 ; $A$. Y. L., ii. 175 (but v. Schmidt). See Abbott, Sh. Gr., § 468, etc.; and for a full discussion of Sh.'s pronunciation, Mr A. J. Ellis's great contribution to phonetic science, Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakspere and Chaucer. The internal sources of information on Sh.'s pronunciation (viz. puns, metre, and rhyme), are particularly considered, pp. 917-996.
3. patch of ground] Dr C. M. Ingleby's correction of the reading of all former editions, path; cf. Hml., IV. iv. I8. Dr Ingleby also compares the Lincolnshire term spoon, "being a path into a cornfield ending in a round space," or patch.
4. whoobub] Cf. W. T., IV. iv. 629.

## ACT III.

## Scene I.

Spalding (p. 41) and Hickson (pp. 40-42) are agreed in assigning this Scene to Shakspere, and in praising it very highly.

Chaucer originals : Sc. i. cf. 11. 593-765; Sc. iii. cf. 11. 758-9; Sc. vi. cf. 11. 766-1022.
2. land] All Edd. land, except Skeat, who reads laund, from Dyce's suggestion. Dyce has laund in his glossary (though land in his text), and Spalding, quoting the passage, laund. Heath conj. stand. The word may have been suggested by the Knightes Tale, 1. 833: "And to the launde he rydeth him ful right;" but it was common at the time Shakspere wrote (see Nares, Schmidt, s.v., and Hales' Longer English Poems, p. 219), and is now familiar to us under the form lawn.
6. gold buttons] Cf. Hamlet, I. iii. 40. "Bouter, v.a. to put, set, push. O.Fr. boter, from M. H. G. bôzen.-Der. bout (verbal subst., properly that part of a body which pushes or touches first), bouture (a cutting, the piece one puts into the ground), bouton (that which pushes out, makes knobs on plants; thence by analogy, pieces of wood or metal shaped like buds)," etc.-Brachet, Etym. Dict. tr. Kitchen.
7. knacks] Cf. M. N. D., I. i. 34 ; Shr., IV. iii. 67 ; Wint., IV. iv. 360, 439 (Schmidt). Chapman, Cesar and Pompey, II. i. 20 :-" as if good clothes were knacks to know a knave." " He sent me a very rich present of perfumes, skins, gloves, and purses embroidered, with other nacks of the same kind."Memoirs of Lady Fanshawe, p. 192, ed. 1829. Cf. Peele, Arraignement of Paris, IV. i. 2, and Hazlitt's Dodsley, I. 349.
9.] Mr Skeat well compares Spenser, Prothal., 73-82.
13. chop] "exchange, make an exchange."-Skeat.
cold] chaste, as freq. in Sh. (v. Schmidt) ; e. g. Temp., IV. 66.
36/37. the voydest] Sympson first "cleared up" this "difficult Passage (which had long puzzled us all three)."-Seward. O. Edd. voydes (voids, ed. 1711).

44/45. Cosin . . . Cosener.] This was a common pun ; e. g. Mons. Thomas, I. iii. : "Cousin, Cozen thyself no more ;" Rich.3, IV. iv. : "Cousins indeed, and by their uncle cozened Of comfort." See Trench, Eng. Past and Present, 8th ed. p. 305.

68/73] Cf. Mcb., V. vii. I.
72/79. cold gyves] i. e., as Dr C. M. Ingleby has pointed out, iron bonds. Cf. Cymb., V. iv. 28 : "cancel these cold bonds" (not in Schmidt). Cf. II. v. 10.

89/98. dares] either the plural in $s$ (v. Abbott, Sh. Gr., § 333), or any, sc. one, with the reply, none = no one. F2 dare, and so Edd.

90/99. so noble bear a guilty busines ?] i. e. Dares any one who shews himself so noble be capable of aught base ? None, save Arcite, could be so ; and therefore in proportion to the height of his generosity is the depth of his baseness. Dyce (1867, 1876) reads baseness. Mr Skeat changes noble to nobly, and does not notice Dyce's change. All other Edd. as here, from Qo.
971108. Enter your musite] Qo Musicke. "Is not musick an old form of musit?" Ingleby. Nares quotes from Greene's Thieves falling out (muse), and from Ven. and Adon. (musets); explaining: "Muse, Muset or Musit, s. The opening in a fence or thicket through which a hare, or other beast of sport, is accustomed to pass. Mustt, French." See Mr Skeat's note (which corrects Nares' French, Muset, to mussette and musse.-Cotgrave). Alken, The N'ational Sports of Great Britain (fol. p. 18, ed. 1821), translates "by the same meuses" "par les mêmes sentiers." He says of the hare : "This animal is extremely attached to the place of her birth, and will make her form, or resting-place, as near to it as possible ; and to this she will constantly return, by the same meuses or paths, even after having been chased from it, to the nearest possible risk of life." The somewhat similar mistake $k$ for $t$ occurs again, IV. i. IO6, where Qo has wreake for wreathe.

104/116. my stomach not] "i. e. if my stomach were not."-S. Walker.
112/127. I've a good title,] O. Edd. If. Seward, Edd. 1778, Knight, Dyce, Skeat, I've. Weber, I have.

Scene 2.
Spalding assigns this scene to Fletcher, noting that the jailor's daughter now first "begins to shew symptoms of unsettled reason. There is some pathos in several parts of her soliloquy, but little vigour in the expression, or novelty in the thoughts."-Letter, p. 43. Hickson ascribes this censure of Spalding's to the fact that " he assumed the whole of the underplot to be by one writer." As the evidence of the "stopt-line" test is slightly against this scene being by Shakspere, I add a few of Hickson's remarks. (Mr Furnivall, in his table, N. S. S. Tr., p. 65*, gives the "stopt-line" proportions of this scene, viz., 38 verse-lines, 9 unstopt, giving a proportion of I to $4 \mathbf{2 2}$. I make 12 unstopt lines in the scene, viz., Il. $1,7,11,12,14,15,16,17$ (?), $23,27,35,36$. This would give the proportion 1 to $3 \cdot 16$.) "It is to this scene," Mr Hickson observes, "that we referred by anticipation, as giving an instance of Shakspere's judgment. It can hardly be said to explain any necessary circumstance of the play ; and so many scenes in which this character appears alone, are rather injurious to the action: but it supplies the due gradation between a mind diseased and madness; and in connection with another scene at which we shall shortly arrive, it displays a depth of insight into the psychological character of this state only excelled by Shakspere himself, in King Lear. Let our readers observe in particular . . [ll. 5, 7, 8, 14, 15, 29-32] . . the unselfish anxiety of the jailor's daughter for Palamon's safety, and her subsequent terror at her own disordered senses. The introduction of the popular notion [ v . Carpenter's Mental Physiol., p. 88, 3rd ed.] that wild beasts have 'a sense to know a man unarm'd' is quite a Shaksperian illustration ; and we do not know an instance of finer drawing than this of her imagination painting, as absolute reality, the subject of her first fear. From this conviction (of Palamon's death) we come naturally to the concluding lines, beyond which the next step is madness." See the whole passage, pp. 42*, 43*.
I. the brake] Theobald, Weber, Knight, Dyce, Skeat, Brake. Qo Beake, F2,
ed. 17 II, Beak. Sympson prop. Brook, Seward (from association of the idea $B e a k$ ) first proposed to read Hawk I sent is gone, but, with Edd. 1778, printed beck; and Hickson quotes the line with beck. Qo reading seems most likely a misprint for Brake (or Breake, as may partly be inferred from comparing III. i. 82/90 (' hawthorn house '), 1.97/r08, and stage direction in same scene, 1. 30 ; III. vi. direction, and $1.111 / 144$, etc.; cf. 1.28, brine, Qo reading bine. D'Avenant (R[eed], in ed. 1778, informs us) reads beach. Beck seemed to Nares " an excellent and undoubted emendation, because the jailor's daughter had appointed Palamon to wait for her at a cedar 'fast by a brook'" (q. Dyce). Chaucer, K. T., 1. 659 : "This Palamoun Was in a busche." In confirmation of beck from Beake might be noted that reck is spelt zureake a few lines down.

2I. all's char'd] 'That is, 'My task is done then.' Chare is frequently used for task work."-Weber. See a very interesting note on this word in Mr Skeat's edition
25. mop'd] Nares explains mope-eyed as short-sighted. So in Haml., III. iv. 81, mope means "to act blindly." Temp., V. 240; H.5, III. vii. I43 (v. Schmidt, who explains differently). Hence, To be moped signifies metaphorically, to be dazed, bewildered, as in The Humorous Lieut., IV. vi. :-
"'Sure, I take it,
He is bewitch'd, or mop'd, or his brains melted ;"
and Queen of Corinth, II. iii. :-
"How am I tranced, and moped !"
Mr Skeat says : " perhaps for death we should read deaths."
26-8.] Qo daies. Sipt some water. I have. Sympson conjectured 'cept some water, which Monck Mason has "no doubt is right;" but Seward filled up " both verses with what seems perfectly natural for her to say :-
' Food took I none these two days, only sipt
Some Water, two Nights I've not clos'd mine eyes,' " etc.
Dyce says "that some words have dropt out is quite evident," and reads : once indeed I sipped \&c. Mr Skeat adopts this, placing the words (which Dyce has omitted doing) between brackets; but cf. IV. iii. 4 (an evidence of unity in the authorship of these two scenes). Weber re-arranges the lines : Food, etc.; $I$ have not, etc. ; Scozvered off, etc. ; Let not, etc.; Or stab, etc. ; Oh, state, etc. Edd. 1778 and Knight follow the old text. It is possible that some words have dropped out ; guessing can avail little in such a case.
29.] The enumeration of deaths should be noticed, and their connection with insanity. Cf. I. i. 155, IV. iii. 29/3I, Temp., III. iii.,-
"I have made you mad;
And even with such-like valour, men hang and drown
Their proper selves."
3I. state of nature.] Cf. Lear, I. iv. 290 (Skeat) ; Macb., I. iii. 140.
Scene 3.
This is one of those scenes, by the introduction of which Fletcher succeeded in spoiling a good play. "In most respects the scene is not very characteristic [?] of either writer, but leans towards Fletcher; and one argument for him might
be drawn from an interchange of sarcasms between the kinsmen, in which they retort on each other former amorous adventures: such a dialogue is quite like Fletcher's men of gaiety ; and needless degradation of his principal characters is a fault of which Shakspeare is not guilty."-Spalding, Letter, p. 43 ; v. Hickson, p. 44.
4. Here's no Theseus] S. Walker proposed to complete the line by making Palamon exclaim : No, Nor none so honest, Arcite. "'Thesëus' is Shakespeare's pronunciation, not Fletcher's (see Mid. N. D.) ; besides, the sentence seems to require 'No'" (q. Dyce).

6/9. beastly] like a beast, adv., cf. T. of S., IV. ii. 34 ; 2 H.4, II. i. 16 ; Ant., I. v. 50 ; Cymb., V. iii. 27, and adj. Cymb., III. iii. 40. Cf, M. W., V. v. 10 ; Tim., IV. iii. 329 (Schmidt).

42/55-6I.] Spalding quotes these lines as " one strikingly animated burst of jealous suspicion and impatience."

## Scene 4.

" The fourth scene introduces the jailor's daughter again ; she is now mad. She fancies she sees a ship, and there is some affectation of nautical language, (why, Heaven only knows) ; and the rest is mere incoherent nonsense. Now, though this last, indeed, may be the frequent birth of madness (or rather, so seeming, in default of being able to follow the infinitely fine associating links), it can have no place in poetry, which, whatever it may be, is certainly not a literal transcript of common things in their common aspects. In a subsequent scene we shall find the speeches given to this character full of meaning ; the present bears every mark of the hand of Fletcher. "-Hickson, p. 44*.
2. aglets] Here, Spangles. Cotgrave explains Agzillette, Esguillette, as A point. Nares has a good note on the word, and quotes from Dodsley's Old Plays, III. 194 (the passage is also given in a note to Coleridge's Table Talk, April 5th, 1833, p. 223, ed. 1852, from the Spanish Tragedy, IV. See Hazlitt's Dodsley, vol. V. p. 115): 一
"And yonder pale-faced Hecate there, the moon, Doth give consent to that is done in darkness ; And all those stars that gaze upon her face Are aglets on her sleeve, pins on her train."
Dyce gives an example from Faerie Queene, II. iii. 26 ; and notes on the word : aglets-" were worn," says Sir F. Madden, " by both sexes; by the men chiefly as tags to their laces or points (aiguillettes), which were made either square or pointed, plain or in the form of acorns, or with small heads cut at the end, or topped with a diamond or ruby. . . . They were worn also by ladies, as pendants or ornaments in their head-dress. . . . Junius is therefore evidently mistaken in explaining aglet by spangle, into which error Archdeacon Nares has also partly fallen." Note on Privy Purse Expenses of the Princess Mary, p. 205: but (Dyce says) Coles gives both "An Aglet (tag of a point), Exramentzm ligula," and "An Aglet (a little plate of metal), Bractea, Bracteola." [Cf. Handful of Pleasant delites, 1584 (Park, Heliconia, II. 25) :
"Thy garters fringed with gold, And silver aglets hanging by, Which made thee blithe for to beholde," \&c.

Cf. T. of Shrew, I. ii. 79, "aglet-baby"-i. e. a point device. See also Park, 1. c. p. 102, n.]
9. Spoom her] Qo Vpon her; F2, ed. 1711, Knight (early ed.), Upon her. Seward and Sympson, Ed. 1778, Up with her'fore: Theobald proposed to read spoon, which Weber, Dyce (who hesitates), and Knight (1867) adopt, spelling it spoom. Spoom is found in The Double Marriage, II. i. : "we'll spoom before her." Cf. Dryden, Hind and Panther, III. 96 :
"When virtue spooms before a prosperous gale, My heaving wishes help to fill the sail."
Spoom her before the wind is the same as saying: Let her spoom, etc. Still, the reading is very uncertain, and Mr Skeat places a different word in his text : Run her. The misprint in the old text, Mr Skeat rightly refers to " the repetition of the $U p$ of the next line ; and the most likely word is one which shall be a short monosyllable, ending with $n$. Nearly all the modern editions read Spoom her, from a conjecture of Weber's [from Theobald's], founded on the fact that spoom occurs in Beaumont and Fletcher's Double Marriage, Act II. sc. i. ; but the word spoom, in that passage, is an intransitive verb, meaning to sail steadily, and is a mere variation, apparently, of spume (foam), as if the sense were to throw up foam." Mr Skeat also quotes Nares' opinion against the reading Spoom.
10. course] "The courses meant in this place are two of the three lowest and largest sails of a ship, which are so called, because, as largest, they contribute most to give her way through the water, and consequently enable her to feel her helm, and steer her course better, than when they are not set or spread to the wind." Holt, q. Dyce. take, i. e. tack; the usual spelling in O. Edd. Cf. Prol. 26.
14. Carecke] Trading vessels often alluded to by B. and F. ; e. g. The Coxcomb, I. iii.: "like Carracks, only strength and stowage" (v. Nares).

Song.] Mr Skeat notes that this song resembles st. 19 of the Nutbrowen Maid. R[eed], in ed. 1778, gives D'Avenant's alteration :-
"For straight my green gown into breeches I'll make,
And my long yellow locks much shorter I'll take.
Sing down a-down, \&c.
Then I'll cut me a switch, and on that ride about, And wander and wander till I find him out.

With a heigh down, \&c."
Sir William's change from the line " He s' buy me a white cut, forth for to ride," is curious. Cut, Dyce explains as "a familiar term for a common horse (either from its being docked or gelded)," \&c. Dyce retains the old reading He 's buy me, instead of Weber's He' ll buy me, He's being a contracted form of He shall. See Dr Abbott's Sh. Gr., § 461, 's shall is abbreviated into 'se and 's in Lear, iv. 6,$246 ; R$. and 7 ., i. 3, 9. In the first of these cases it is a provincialism, in the second a colloquialism. A similar abbreviation ' $I$ 'st' for ' $I$ will,' 'thou 'st' for 'thou wilt,' ' thou shalt,' \&c., seems to have been common in the early Lancashire dialect (Gill, quoted by Mr Ellis)," \&c. Mr Skeat (MS.) has suggested the slight change in the position of the apostrophe; He s' ; the old Editions print $H e$ 's, as 'th for $t h$ ', etc.
25. nightingale] I only remark on this, perhaps the commonest allusion in our
poetry, that Fletcher's references to the story are generally of a burlesque cast : e. g. Lover's Progress, III. ii. :
" If I had but a pottle of sack, like a sharp prickle, To knock my nose against when I am nodding, I should sing like a nightingale."
The Nice Valour, V. i. :
" Set a sharp jest
Against my breast, Then how my lungs do tickle!
As nightingales
And things in cambric rails, Sing best against a prickle."
For the story of Philomene (given in The Legende of Good Women), the translation from " Dan Nasoes verse" was made by George Gascoigne, 1576, and has been reprinted by Mr Arber. Cf. Pass. Pilgr., xxi. 380; Faithful Shepherdess, V. iii. ; Giles Fletcher's Christ's Victorie (pp. 219, 257, ed. Grosart) ; etc., etc.

## Scene 5.

The scene is headed "Scæna 6 " in Qo, "Scæna Sexta," F2.
This scene is, in Hickson's opinion, " not only imitation, but the imitation of a young and inexperienced writer" (p. 57*) ; and Spalding criticises Gerrold as "a personage who has the pedantry of Shakspere's Holofernes, without one solitary spark of his humour." Perhaps this is a little too hard on the "highfantastical" pedant.

Bavian] Qo, F2, Baum. Bavian, Babion (B. J., Cynthia's Revels, I. i.), or Babian, a man dressed up as a baboon. The word Bavian is derived from the Dutch; cf. Swed. bawian. See Douce (whom Weber quotes), Nares, Dyce, and Skeat, for some remarks on this character, and Douce and Ritson (Robin Hood Ballads, Notes and Illustrations) for some account of the Morris-dance. There is " a mockmask of baboons, attired like fantastical travellers, in Neapolitan suits and great ruffs, all horsed with asses," etc., in Chapman's Masque of the Middle Temple and Lincoln's Inn (p. 342, ed Shepherd).

I sqq.] Compare these opening lines with The Spanish Curate, III. ii. :-
"I have taught these twenty years, Preach'd spoonmeat to ye, that a child might swallow, Yet ye are blockheads still."
8/6. most coarse freeze capacities] This seems to mean mental grossness, and is a simple metaphor from frieze-cf. "russet yeas and honest kersey noes," L. L. L., V. ii. 413 (Skeat). Freeze had another signification-which may be alluded to here-as in Cleveland's description of a wedding-party (Works, p. 258, ed. 1742 :-
" When at the last they had fetched their Freeze, And mired their Stomacks quite up to the Knees

In Claret for and Good Cheer," etc.
? Freeze $=$ Friesland Beer. Cf. "a frolic up-se-freeze," Nash, Summer's last Will, \&c. (Hazlitt, Dodsley's O. P., viii. 58, refers to Popular Antiquities of

Great Britain, vol. ii. p. 259.) Up-se $=$ drunk ; half-seas-over. v. Hazlitt, xiv. 471.

8/6. jane judgements] Dyce, Skeat. O. Edd. jave; Seward (suggested bays, but) followed by Edd. 1778 (and approved by Nares, s. v. sleave-silk), read sleave, i. e. floss-silk ; Knight, jape. Dyce's emendation is certainly right, and jane ( $=$ Fean) was " a stuff well known in England long before the present play was written : 'Fustian called Jean,' \&c. The Rates of the Custome-house, \&c. 1582, sig. C2." javel (v. Cotgrave) or ravel ( $=$ confused, Cleveland) would be preferable to Seward's change, had we not Dyce's correction.

12/9. Here the Duke comes, etc.] If Fletcher borrowed this scene from Shakspere, the author of the Masque of the Inner Temple and Gray's Inn has given us an outline of what must have been a precisely similar exhibition. Compare the whole scene carefully with the following description :-" The second Anti-masque rush in, dance their measure, and as rudely depart; consisting of a Pedant, May Lord, May Lady ; Servingman, Chambermaid; a Country Clown, or Shepherd, Country Wench; an Host, Hostess ; a He-Baboon, She-Baboon ; a He-Fool, SheFool, ushering them in. All these persons, apparelled to the life, Men issuing out of one side of the boscage, and the Women from the other. The music was extremely well-ftted, having such a spirit of country jollity, as can hardly be imagined; but the perpetual laughter and applause was above the music," etc. (Works of $B$. and $F_{\text {., ed. Darley (Weber's text), p. 688, vol. II.) }}$

21/15. trace and turn, boys] "Which is followed by the trace and tract of an excellent juggler, that can juggle with every joint about him from head to heel." Ben Jonson, Pan's Anniversary. "Now for the honour of our town, boys, trace sweetly."-Fletcher, Women Pleased, IV. i. (see the scene). tract, sb. is used in the modern sense of trace by Spenser, F. Q., VI. xii. 22: "Him follow'd by the tract of his outragious spoile ; " and as the verb, II. vi. 39.

Mr Skeat explains trace, "follow out your proper track : " but the word seems to have been regularly used of dances :
"And light-foot Nymphes, can chace the lingring Night
With Heydeguyes, and trimly trodden traces."
Spenser, Shep. Cal., June, 1. 28.
where E. K. glosses : " Heydeguies, A country daunce or rownd. The conceipt is, that the Graces and Nymphes doe daunce unto the Muses and Pan his musicke all night by Moonelight. To signifie the pleasauntnesse of the soyle."
cf. "He hops without the ring,
Yet daunceth on the trace, When some come after, soft and faire A heavie hobling pace."

Handful of Pleasant Delites, 1584.
(p. 60, Park) and Park (Heliconia, II. 10I) is perhaps right in querying "if an allusion to hopscotch ?" See The Four P. P. (Hazlitt's Dodsley, I. 360): "Here were a hopper to hop for the ring ! \&c. . . . To hop so, that ye shall hop without it" (= outside it). But these terms were also used of the Morris and Hobbyhorse dancing (as possibly in the lines quoted from Park), perhaps from training, 'ringing,' a horse ; v. Hazl. Dodsley, vii. 281. Cf. Nash, Summer's $b \quad 10$

Last Will (Hazl. Dodsley, viii. 25) : "You, friend with the hobby-horse, go not too fast . . . Ver. So, so, so ; trot the ring twice over, and away." And see The Four Elements, Dodsley, i. 47 (cf. ib. vii. 318) : "Follow all: I will lead a trace. . . . So merrily let us dance ey, so merrily, \&c." Note the exclamation "ey;" cf. Hazl. D. vii. 42 I. Strutt (Sports and Pastimes, ed. Hone, 1831, p. 225) says that "Hopping matches for prizes were occasionally made in the sixteenth century," and quotes from Heywood's Proverbs, 1566,
"Where wooers hoppe in and out, long time may bring, Him that hoppeth best at last to have the ring -
-I hoppyng without for a ringe of a rushe,"
and from the Four P.'s, ubi supra. "Hence it appears a ring was usually the prize, and given to him who could hop best, and could continue to do so the longest." An inference, surely, founded on a misunderstanding of the passages?

28/24. swim with your bo.ties.] Cf. "carry your bodies in the swimming fashion," Chapman, The Ball, II. (p. 494, ed. Shepherd).

29/26. deliverly] "nimbly, actively," Dyce.
39. all the fat's $i$ 'th' fire] Many of these "curious comparisons, borrow'd from the pond and kitchen" (Lover's Prosress, II. ii.), are still to be found in various parts of the kingdom; this one has survived amongst others. Cf. B. Jonson, Love's Welcome (at Welbeck).
41. washeit a tile] laterem lavare, $\pi \lambda \dot{\prime} \nu \theta_{0}$ us $\pi \lambda \dot{v} \nu \varepsilon ı \nu$.
43. hiuling] Used of both sexes, though probably it was orig. a dimin. of hind, man-servant. See Nares, and to the examples he quotes of its application to woman, add : The Pilgrim, I. ii., "If the proud hilding Would yield but to my will, and know her duty."

49/50. An Eele and a zooman a learned Poct says,] Who was the learned poet? I can find no classical quotation at all like this, except the proverbial phrase in Plaut. Pseud. 2, 4, 56 : "anguilla est, elabitur." "Anguillam cauda tenes" is given in Bohn's Dict. Class. Quotations; neither of these expressions being, however, applied to women. Cf. Pope, Dunciad, I. 280, "Holds the eel of Science by the tail." Fletcher has the proverb again in The Scornfiul Lady', II. i., "I will end with the wise man, and say, 'He that holds a woman has an cel by the tail.'" Valentinian, I. i., "and if all fail, This is the first quick eel that saved her tail." The Chances, III. iii., " an eel's tail." The Prophetess, III. ii., "hold her fast, she will slip through your fingers like an eel else."

In the Paradise of Dainty Devices, p. 62 (ed. 1810, Brydges' Brit. Bibliog.) : "held the Eele by the tail" (speaking of a fickle "sainct"). Hazlitt's Dodsley, vii. 355 : "whosoever hath her, hath but a wet eel by the tail." Mr Skeat has kindly added two more references (in reply to a query in N. and Q.) :-
 is a quick eel by the tail.'-Hazlitt's Old Plays, iii. 288." I agree with Mr Skeat, that the "learned poet" is probably a fiction : (but ? Rabelais might have suggested the idea).
53. a fire ill take her] O. Edd. fire ill ("is unmeaning," Skeat. Hence this note.) Plainly the right reading (v. Nares, s. v. Ferril; Halliwell, Arch. Dict., I. 357 ; or Fieldmg, Fuseph Andrews, c. xviii.), as this passage needs no comment
to show :-" a tobacco-shope and a bawdy-house are coincident; for a smoak is not without a fyer." Gesta Grayorum (in Nicholls' Progresses of Q. Eli., vol. II. p. 68). take $=$ infect. Seward hoped he restored the original in reading : $A$ feril take her. Edd. 1778 ask: " May we not understand by fire ill, a mighty ill, a severe punishment?" Weber suspects we should transpose : an ill fire, but retains the old reading, as do Edd. 1778 , Knight, and Dyce. Mr Skeat adepts a suggestion of Dyce's, and reads: A wildfire take her, explaining wildfire as equivalent to Greek fire. But even wildfire had a two-fold sense: (a) Greek fire, which sense it bears when used with such a word as burn, etc., as in Philaster, II. iv., and in Calisto and Melibaa (referred to by Mr Skeat); (b) when used with such a word as take, i. e. infect (v. Schmidt), wildfire means rash, as in the Mad Lover, V. iii. (q. Dyce) and Rule a Wife, III. v., "a wildfire take her." "Fire also gives the denominations to divers diseases, as Fire, St Anthony's." Rees' Cyclope.ilia, art. Fire. The exclamation is very old: "A wilde fyr upors thair bodyes falle." Chaucer, Reeve's Tale, 1. 252. This is scarcely a parallel, from Faust: "Die Feuerpein Euch ins Geboin!"

58/60. frampall] " peevish, froward," Dyce. nettli, ? mettle.
60/62.] George alow. Edd. "lit. low down ; possibly referring to the appearance of a ship on the horizon," Skeat. (The sense is not very clear; was there ever a ship called the George Aloe? aloc is spelt alowe in the Paralise of Dainty Devices, p. 59 !) Most probably alow is merely an exclamation, as in Lear, III. iv. 80 (Booth's repr. Fi, p. 787) :-
" Pillicock sat on Pillicock hill, alow : alow, loo, loo," where Camb. Edd. Halloo. Cf. 1. 64, "Well hail'd."

74/76. March hare] Cf. "I came from a world of mad women, Mad as March hares."-The Wildgoose Chase, IV. iii.

80/84. tell ten] "It was a trial of idiotcy to make the person count his fingers."-Weber.

84/87. $y$ ' are a tinker] Cf. IV. i. I33: "Are not you a tailour ?" and note the exclamation "Buz," l. 84. Cf. Hamlet, II. ii. 4I2. We are reminded of Hamlet's "you are a fishmonger," by these lines; with the difference (noticed by Hickson, p. 48*) that " the retort to Polonius is full of meaning."

87/9r. Quii passa] an unexplained line. v. Skeat's n. Strutt separates these accompaniments, giving the bells to the Morris as commonly danced, the bones to the Morisco dance properly so called. A questionable distinction. (Sports, \&c., ed. Hone, p. 223.)

88/92. a peace] R[eed], in ed. 1778, proposes "afpease, i. e. be quiet or silent." Mason : a place. Weber suspects "the original was a pace, i. e. a dance" . . to a peace may simply mean, to be quiet (Skeat); or persuade her to a peace is Gerrold's grandiloquent mode of saying, persuade her to ally herself with us, to join in our dance. Somewhat similarly the Duke says of Malvolio, "Pursue him, and entreat him to a peace" (Twelfth Night, V. i.) = pacify him.

89/93. Et opus] O. Edd., Dyce, Seward, ed. 1778, Weber, Atque. Mr Skeat substitutes En for et, but reads ignis with the Edd. "Strictly, Ovid has ' Famque opus,' and 'ignes,' not ignis ; Mctamorph. xv. 871."-Skeat. Dyce, last 2 edd., has also given the reference to Ovid.

101/108. all haile] "I know not whether it is necessary to observe, that there is a play on hail, as in Love's Labour's Lost, v. 2,-
' All hail, sweet madam, and fair time of day !
Prin. Fair, in all hail, is foul, as I conceive.'
Dekker, Old Fortunatus, Old English Drama, 1831, p. 34,-
' Andelocia. Brother, all hail. Shadow. There's a rattling salutation.' "-Sidney Walker.

Cf. also, The Faithful Friends, III. ii., -
"Pergramus. All hail!
Learchus. He begins to storm already."
Cleveland, Works, p. 380:A zealous Discourse between the Person of the Parish, and Tabitha:
"Hail Sister to your snowy Breast
The Word permitteth us to jeast," \&c.
II4/12I. Mráchine] The pronunciation (a long) in Co. Wicklow at the present day. Probably Gerrold's " machine" and "frame" mean simply the arranged dance and address.

125/132. penner] However Gerrold may have derived the word, he surely meant thing penned; not "a case for holding pens," as the Edd. from Weber explain it ?

126/r33.] v. n. l. 12/9 of this scene.
129/I36. welcomes to their cost] With Mr Skeat, I have left this passage as it stands in O. Edd., objections to the grammar seeming hypercritical, and to a student of Dr Abbott's Shakespearian Grammar, almost absurd. Sidney Walker reads zuelcome to his cost, and two lines on, Informs. Cf. IV. iii. 90, for the use of their; but traveller may be a plural, as soldier so often is in $B$. and $F$.

132/139. beast-eating ] "Why the beast-eating clown? I should read beef-eating." (Monck Mason.) Why beef-eating?

138/I45. Intrate filij] Edd. I778 rightly place Ger. before this speech; in preceding Edd. it is given to Pir., though the marginal instruction in Qo shows that Gerrold was the speaker.

157/166. dowsets] "The testes of a deer."-Dyce. This word, not found in Shakspere, is often used by Fletcher ; e. g. Thierry and Theod., II. ii.; Philaster, IV. ii. ; Elder Brother, V. i. ; Coxcomb, II. iii. ; and by Ben Jonson, Sad Sheph., I. ii. ; Gipsies Metamorphosed, etc. v. Nares, s.v.

## Scene 6.

"The scene is a spirited and excellent one; but its tone is Fletcher s, not Shakspeare's."-Spalding, Letter, p. 44. Hickson praises the scene slightly.

30/34. Like meeting of two tides] See Spalding, Letter, p. 16, for some judicious observations on the vagueness and lack of precision in Fletcher's ideas. Spalding lays particular stress on "the want of distinctness in grasping images, and the inability to see fully either their picturesque or their poetical relations;" and illustrates the remark by quoting this passage, and 11. 82/108-112, "When I saw you charge first," etc. v. n. II. ii. 24/27.

58/73. grand-gzard] Nares does not give any satisfactory explanation of this word, but Dyce quotes from Meyrick's Critical Inquiry into Ancient Armour, \&c., vol. ii. p. 164, ed. 1842. Describing a suit of armour at Goodrich Court, he says that " It has, over the breast, for the purpose of justing, what was called the grandgarde, which is screwed on by three nuts, and protects the left side, the edge of the breast, and the left shoulder."

98/128. If there be $A$ place prepared] Perhaps suggested by Chaucer's lines, Knight's Tale, 1951-2 :-
" His spiryt chaunged was, and wente ther,
As I cam never, I can nat tellen wher."
106/137.] Seward proposes to give ll. 103/134-6, to Palamon, 1. 106/137 to Arcite: " once more farewell, my cosen." His reasons are not worth quoting ; subseq. edd.; "cannot see any need of change" (Edd. r778).

110/143. honour's sake and safety,] O. Edd. sake, and safely presently. Seward, etc., safety, except Edd. 1778, who reject the emendation: it " being merely conjectural, and not necessary" - a precaution they might have exercised in several other cases with greater propriety.

131/167. Have at thy life] "Have at your life then!" Lover's Progress, II. iii. The usual exclamation of warning.

134/170-2.] Cf. Chaucer, K. T., 11. 848-857.
145/183. Against thy owne] Dyce, thy. Qo this owne. [Note $y$ mistaken for is. Cf. note I. i. 213/237. F2 this owon. Ed. 1711, etc. (except Dyce thy, and Skeat thine ownn), this known. "Look to thine own well, Arcite!" occurs a few lines above, and perhaps is the right reading here : but thy own seems more rhythmical, and is borne out by the misprint.

190/232. kill] O. Edd., Dyce, Skeat, kill. Seward, etc., kills. Mr Skeat points out the tendency to make the verb " agree with the nearest substantive, the ear deciding against the requirements of logic;" a common irregularity in old authors.

201/246. These are strange conjurings] Cf. Little F. Lazuyer, IV. v. :-
Lam. "Dinant, as thou art noble-
Ana. As thou art valiant, Clermont-
Lam. As ever I
Appeared lovely
Ana. As you ever hope
For what I would give gladly-
Clere. Pretty conjurations!"
Shakspere has a skit at these conjurations in Hamlet, V. ii. 38-43, although in Coriol., I. vi., $22 d$ speech, this mode of address is used.

227/277.] Cf. Maid's Tragedy, II. i.,-
"'Thou hast ta'en an oath,
But such a rash one, that to keep it were
Worse than to swear it."
236/287. fall Qo, ] F2. Ed. $\mathbf{1} 71 \mathrm{I}$, etc., read fail. DrC. M. Ingleby confirms me in thinking that fall is the right reading here. He writes:-Compare 1. 272: Let it not fall agen, Sir. These are remarkable instances of the use of this intran-
sitive verb as a synonym of fail. Shakspere affords us only two certain examples of this :-
" Iter will, recoiling to her better judgement, May fall to match you with her country forms And happily repent."-Othello, III. iii. 237.
Here fall is not happen [Schmidt, wrongly, begin, get into], but fail.
"Our indiscretion sometimes serves us well, When our deep plots do fall." (pall, Folio.)

Hamlet, V. ii. 9.
Here pall is nonsense; and fall, the reading of the quartos, makes sense. Fall, of course, is the opposite of succeed. Now, our word for this is fail. Cf.
" London you say is safely looked into ;
Alas! poor rebels there your aid must fall."
Sir Fohn Oldcastle.
There is also one example in The London Prodigal, and two in Isaiah, namely, xxxi. 3, and lvii. in two verses.

240/290. name, opinion !] O. Edd. name; opin:on. "Seward and Sympson propose different amendments, but inform us that Theobald, in a marginal note, proposed to read, My name's opinion, which is much in the style of our authors, and I have no doubt is the true reading." (Monck Mason.) Weber also suspects that this is the right reading, and is followed by Knight, Dyce, and Skeat. But opinion is emphatic, and is used here (as again by Fletcher) in the sense of notoricty, disrepute. Cf. Thierry and Theodoret, II. ii. :
"But wisdom, Sir, and weight of what is on me,
( . . . . . ) tells me directly,
Beside my person, my fair reputation,
If I thrust into crowds, and seck occasions, Suffers opinion."
Elsewhere it ustually means simply, reputation ; e. g. Island Princess, III. iii., Lover's Progress, IV. iv. Ford, Broken Meart, III. i. v. Schmidt (p. 8ir, b.): "Peculiar passage: that he might stick the smallest opinion on my least misuse, Oth., IV. ii. 109 (=ill opinion)."

242/293. proyne] Qo proyne, F2, ed. 1711, proyn. Later edd. prume, Dyce and Skeat, proin. The word was certainly pronounced as here spelt. According to Nares (s.v. Proin) it was " very little used in the age of Elizabeth, but common before that time." I think I have met it not unfrequently, though I can only recall a few instances, viz. B. Jonson's Discourse with Cupid, "where I sit and proyne my wings "; Milton, Comus, 1. 378 ; Gascoigne's Complaint of Philomene, " proine her plumes " (p. 98, Arber) ; Bacon's Essay Of Studies, "For Naturall Abilities, are like Naturall Plants, that need Proyning by Study." (p. 204, cd. Wright.)

246/297. And all the longing maids that ever loved] Sidney Walker says: "Both sound (the Fletcherian rhythm especially) and sense require 'that ever lov'd them.'" I do not feel at all sure that any addition is proper or necessary. Dyce (later edd.) follows Walker's conj. Mr Skeat has the old reading. See note on II. ii. 37/40.

270/324. Make death a devil] "This is obscure. It seems to mean-I will turn death into a horrible monster : cf. Tro. and Cress., III. ii. 74." (Skeat.) May it not simply mean : 'though you should make death as formidable as a devil'?

282/339-342.] Fletcher here, clumsily enough, indicates the distinguishing characteristics of the Kinsmen.

292/349. three] Chaucer, Knight's Tale, 993,-
" And this day fyfty wykes, fer ne neer, Everich of you shall bryng an hundred knightes."

ACT IV.
Chaucer originals to this act are :--sc. ii. : ll. 1236-1350. The descriptions of the Knights deserve close comparison.

## Scene I.

A certain resemblance between the descriptive passages in this scene and the Queen's picture of Ophelia's death, has been the chief agent in misleading critics to suppose that the Jailor's Daughter is a copy of Ophelia. No view, Hickson points out, can be more erroneous, for " not only the circumstances, but the springs of action, are diferent from those of Ophelia; and we beg to assure such as may not have examined the question for themselves, that the language and sentiments are still more unlike. But the description in this scene has a certain resemblance to the circumstances of the death of Ophelia, and was probably written with that scene in view. It has no reference whatever to the character of the jailor's daughter, and it is the only circumstance in the whole play common to her and to Ophelia." (Hickson, p. 43*. See the entire passage.)

The following, from Weber's preface, illustrates the diversity of critical opinion :--"The Jailor's Daughter, which is our authors' own addition to Chaucer's Tale, has been long admired as an extremely well-wrought copy of Ophelia." (Vol. xiii. p. 3.) Here is the other extreme :-" a wretched interpolation in the story, and a fantastic copy of Ophelia." (Hazlitt, Eliz. Lit., p. 125, ed. 1870.)

25/30. Ever bring good news] Cf. Wit at Sezeral Weapons, IV. i. :-
" Thou never brought'st good news i' thy life yet ;
And that's an ill quality."
4I/54. innocent] "In the northern parts of this kingclom," says R[eed] in ed. 1778 , "the common appellation of an ideot is an innocent to this day." Is the term peculiar to the northern part nowadays? It is commonly so used in Ireland.

45/59. not right] i. e. not sane, not in her right mind. The expression is still heard in Ireland in this sense, and is also used of a person supposed to be connected with supernatural agents of evil.

60/80. To his own skill,] See Abbott, Sh. Gr. § 228. i. e. "to its own skill in catching fish" (Skeat) ; or ? skill = care : to take care of itself.

71/93. beavy] "A lovely bevy of faire Ladies," Spenser, F. Q., II. ix. 34. "This bevie of Ladies bright," Sh. Kal. April, l. 118 , on which $E . K$. glosses ;
"Bevie, a beavie of ladies, is spoken figuratively for a company, or troupe : the
terme is taken of Larkes. For they say a Bevie of Larkes, even as a Covey of Partridge, or an eye of Pheasaunts." (Globe ed. p. 457.)

80/102. Willow] This song, often alluded to, is found in various forms; one version by John Heywood is given amongst the additional poems in Mr Hal liwell's ed. of The Moral Play of Wit and Science, p. 86, ed. Sh. Soc. 1848. See the Commentators on Othello, IV. iii.

90/112. posies.] Fletcher is full of allusions to these mottoes, e. g. Knight of $B$. P., V. iii. ; Loyal Subject, II. ii. ("' the jewel's set within.") ; Pilgrim, I. ii. (" Be constant, fair, still?" 'Tis the posy here, and here without, "Be good."); ib. IV. i. ("Prick me, and heal me.") ; Woman IIater, IV. i. (" poesies for chimneys.") ; Rule a Wife, IV. i. (" a blind posy in 't, 'Love and a mill-horse should go round together.'"). Eastzard Hoe, IV. i. (Shepherd's Chapman, p. 474, " thou and thy acts become the posies for hospitals"). See a note on the word in Hales' Longer English Poenns, p. 207. Mr Skeat refers to Chambers' Book of Days, I. 221. Rings made of rushes are alluded to again in The Faithful Shepherdess, I. iii., "Or gather rushes, to make many a ring For thy long fingers." For some interesting facts about old rings, see Fairholt's Rambles of an Archaologist.

91/113. loose] i. e. lose. Mr Skeat is the only editor who has noticed this. Commonly so spelt in books of the period, and through this play, passim; e.g. Prol. 1. 5, etc.

106/132. The Broome] Sometimes spelt Brome (as Rome used to be pronounced Roome; v. Ellis's Pronunciation, p. 925). Weber gives this song from Wager's The Longer Thou Livest, The More Fool Thou Art ; it is also found in Captain Cox, p. cxxvii, ed. Furnivall :-
" Moros. BRome, brome, on hill, The gentle Brome on hill hill : Brome, Brome on Hiue hill, The gentle Brome on Hiue hill, The brome standes on Hiue hilla."
Dyce (vol. viii., p. 182, ed. 1876) refers to Chappell's Popular Mrusic of the Olden Time, \&c., vol. ii. p. 459, sec. ed.

107/133. Bonny Robin] Ophelia sings, "For bonny sweet Robin is all my joy," Hml., IV. v. 187. See Dyce's footnote (last two edd.), vol. viii. p. 184.

107/134. tailour ?] v. n. III. v. 84/87; cf. 1. 118/152.
110/137. rarely] or rearly, as the word is also spelt, i. e. early. Grose, Glossary (ed. 1839) : "Rear (corruptly pronounced Rare), early, soon. Meat under-roasted, boiled, or broiled, is said to be rear, or rare, from being taken too soon off the fire. See Raid and Rathe. Kent." Mr Skeat has an interesting note on the word. O. Edd., Skeat, rarely. Sympson conj. rearly, "i. e. betimes in the morning ;" but as he quuted no authority for this, Seward, followed by Edd. 1778, read: early. Mason, Weber, Knight, Dyce, adopt Sympson's reading. "Sympson had the authority of Gay, who uses rear, in his Shepherd's Week, as a provincial word for early." Weber.

112/141. O Fair, $O$ sweet] Dyce (viii. 182, last two edd.) says this is found among Certaine Sonets at end of Sidney's Arcadia, p. 474, ed. 1598 :
" O Faire, o sweet, when I do looke on thee, In whom all ioyes so well agree," etc.
119/152-5] Cf. Hml., II. ii. 182-7.
139/180. Ship.] Fletcher has a lot of sea-talk on the course and management of a ship in The Loyal Subject, III. ii.

148/196. A faire wood] A wood is mentioned, 1. 140/184, but is there not a pun intended here-wood meaning mad, as in M. N. D., II. ii.-a fair wood=a mad beauty?

## Scene 2.

"Fletcher's masterpiece."-Hickson. "In the soliloquy of the lady, while the poetical spirit is well preserved, the alternations of feeling are given with an abruptness and a want of insight into the nicer shades of association, which resemble the extravagant stage effects of the King and No King, infinitely more than the delicate yet piercing glance with which Shakspeare looks into the human breast in the Othello; the language, too, is smoother and less powerful than Shakspeare's, and one or two classical allusions are a little too correct and studied for him."-Spalding, Letter, p. 46.
16. Set Fove afire with] O. Edd. Set Love afire with. Sympson, (1) suggested Set Fove afire with, but thinking it still not sense, proposed, (2)

> "Fove such another wanton Ganimede
> Set Love afire with."

Seward omits with, and reads: Set Fove afire; making afire a trisyllable, and Knight adopts this reading. Seward also proposes to retain the old reading, and insert he after Ganimede; but prefers the former change. Edd. 1778, etc., adopt Sympson's change (I). Mason's explanation (which, strange to say, Dyce and Skeat accept as the right one) is : "Just such another (sc. smile) wanton Ganimede Set Jove," etc., smile being "understood from the preceding 'smiling'", (Dyce). How any one can have read these lines attentively, without seeing that the noun is "eye," passes all comprehension. Emilia first mentions his face, and dwells reflectively on it ; then his eye, of " fiery sparkle and quick sweetness," where " Love himself sets smiling"-O rare eye!
" Just such another [eye] wanton Ganimede
Set Jove afire with, and enforc'd the god
Snatch up the goodly boy," etc.
Then-having done justice to this particular feature, Emilia next describes his brow-
" What a brow,
Of what a spacious majesty he carries,"-
and in comes another classical parallel-of brow, as the former of eye-to balance the Ganimede bit :-
' Arch'd like the great-ey'd Juno's, but far sweeter Smoother than Pelops' shoulder."
For the position of with, compare ll. 85/95-7, infra :" on his thigh a sword Hung by a curious baldrick, when he frowns To seal his will with."

See Hickson, p. 44*, on the "elaborate imitation" of Shakspere in this speech. 21. Pelops' shoulder] A very common allusion ; e. g. Faithful Shepherdess, II. ii., etc.
27. eye as heavy] Cf. "How dull and heavily he looks upon me," Prophetess, I. ii.
28. As if he had lost his mother] Edd. 1778 (he'd) note: "This seems directly opposite to the sense intended, the effeminacy of Palamon, compared with Arcite. Perhaps we should read, As $h^{\prime}$ had Not lost his mother, i. e. the mother in his mind." "This note is worth preserving for its curious and quaint absurdity." Weber. (A good argument for a B. and F. Variorum /)
39.] In the Lover's Progress, I. ii., a ricl" "heir," Madam Olinda, has to choose between two rival lovers; see the whole scene. She says of one :
" in his face appears
A kind of majesty which should command,
Not sue for favour."
44. a mere gipsy] Commonly used as a term of contempt, as in Four Plays in One, Triumph of Death, sc. vi. : " thou damn'd gipsy;" Monsieur Thomas, I. i., "and all complexions beside hers, to gipsies." v. Schmidt, s.v.

67/70. their faire knights] S. Walker proposes to read sixe for faire, but Dyce well compares, "With three fair knights," III. vi. 292/351.

70/75. Enter Messenger. Curtis.] Qo Messengers. Curtis' services are required again, in company with T. Tucke, stage direction, V. iii. Probably these were a couple of intelligent "supers" at the Blackfriars; I have not succeeded in finding out any facts about their connection with the theatre ; but I think I am justified in leaving all these relics of the old times on the page as they were written, at least in a trial edition like the present. They can do no harm, and possibly may help us to some clue of date or performance hereafter.
$74 / 82$. these $]$ The description of the knights should be carefully compared with the corresponding pictures in Chaucer.

81/91. Show fire within him] Cf. Chancer, K. T., 1. 1273-5:
"The cercles of his eyen in his heed
They gloweden bytwixe yolw and reed, And lik a griffoun loked he about," etc."
87/97.] Like a copy from Oth., V. ii. 260 (Skeat).
104/116. ivy tods] All former Edd. read izy tops. But tops seems obviously a misprint for tods, the $d$ being inverted. The same misprint occurs in the Spanish Tragedy (v. Hazlitt's Dodsley, vol. V. p. 9), shapes for shades, and the opposite in R. and Y., Q2, V. iii. 41, friendshid for friendship. I have never seen Ivy-tops, except here, in any book, but Ivy-tods are often alluded to by $B$. and F.,-Wit without money, IV. ii., " old tod-ivy;" Rule a Wife, \&c., IV. iii., "tod of aged ivy;" Bonduca, I. i., "tods of ivy." The Pilgrim, I. ii., "tod of hay" (where, as Nares, $q . v$., has also noticed, Ivy seems the true reading).

108/121. court] Qo corect, F2, ed. 1711, correct, Seward, etc., crown. Mr Skeat compares V. iii. 17/20. I have ventured to substitute court for Seward's conjecture, crowin. It suits the sense, and in MS. might easily have been mis+3 en for corect.

## ACT IV. SC. 3.]

Notes.
125/142. aborne] Qo. Nares gives abron, auberne, aburne (auburn, "quasi Alburn, from whiteness. A colour inclining to white "), as various forms of the word. v. Schmidt ; cf. Coriol., II. iii. 21, Two Gent., IV. iv. 194. Schlegel and Tieck translate the words in Coriol.-" weil von unsern Köpfen einige schwarz, einige schäckig und einige kahl sind," and note:-"einige schäckig, im Original : some abram, welches die Editoren in auburn verändert haben. Das Wort kommt aber öfter vor, bedeutet seltsam, gemischt, grau und schwarz, und hängt mit Abraham (wie die Engländer meinen) nicht zusammen ; im Altdeutschen haben wir es als abräumis ch, a bramsch." Ed. I844, vol. viii., p. 384.

131/148. gray-ey'd] v. Schmidt, s. v. Grey, and the commentators on Romeo and 'Fuliet, II. iv. 39 (p. 124, ed. Furness). Note their blunders about blue-ey'd. Cf. B. and F., Honest Man's Fortune, V. iii.

145/164] Seward (followed by Edd. 1778 and Mason) reads :-
"they would shew bravely
Fighting about the titles," \&c.

## Cf. III. i. 21.

## Scene 3.

On the way in which we determine the authorship of this scene, must depend our view of Shakspere's share in the play as a whole. But-as Spalding (p. 58) lays down-" In truth, a question of this sort is infinitely more easy of decision when Fletcher is the author against whose claims Shakspeare's are to be balanced, than it could be if the poet's supposed assistant were any other ancient English dramatist. . . . When Fletcher is Shakspeare's only competitor, . . . we are not compelled to reason from difference in degree, because we are sensible of a striking dissimilarity in kind." In continuation therefore of the principle-that the underplot is entirely from one hand,-which he assumed in order to prove, Spalding, without a single word of criticism, gives this scene to Fletcher ; but Hickson-and let no one refuse to accept his judgment without a careful weighing of his arguments-confidently declares Shakspere to be the author. Be it Shakspere's or another's, can any one read by themsclves the scenes composing the underplot without feeling satisfied that we have here the very thing Spalding describes, an absolute dissimilarity in kind, and not a merely relative difference in degree? (See N. S. S. Trans., pp. $45^{*}-50^{*}$.)

Compare Macb., V. i. and iii. Seward says: The printers have divided the whole scene into verse, "though it is evidently all prose;" Edd. 1778 think the fact that the printers have done so is "a strong presumption" of the lines having been so written.

18/2I. as there's] Qo as th'ers, F2, etc. (except Weber, Dyce, Skeat), as there's. Mason, are, (there's a sight) wee maids, [sic] \&c. Weber, [ [are] (there's a sight now) we; Dyce, Skeat (from Mason), are-there's a sight now !-we. The old reading admits of two defences : $a$. As ( $=s o$ ) was used to introduce exclamations, though so was more commonly employed. The speaker is thinking of the place where the "blessed spirits" are-but before she can describe it or complete her sentence, she breaks into the exclamation, as there's a sight now ! b. sight may be used, as it is used at the present day in Co. Wicklow, to mean number. One
often hears such expressions as: "there's a sight of people in the fair," "he's a sight of cattle," "I'd a sight sooner" ( = a deal sooner), etc., and this provincial use (Mr P. A. Daniel informs me) still survives in England also. Thus the passage might mean, "Come where the blessed spirits-for there's a great number at present." I at least do not look for very connected utterances from this speaker ; her other sentences are not so coherent as to justify me in rectifying her grammar here. The parenthesis is Seward's.

21/24, 26.] Mr Skeat refers to $W$. T., IV. iv. I16, and Hml., IV. v. I89.
25/27. Barly-breake] "' He is at barley-break, and the last couple are now in hell.' (The Virgin Martyr, Act V. Sc. i) This game is thus described by Gif. ford, chiefly from a passage in Sir P. Sidney's Arcadia. 'It was played by six people (three of each sex) who were coupled by lot. A piece of ground was then chosen, and divided into three compartments, of which the middle one was called hell. It was the object of the couple condemned to this division, to catch the others, who advanced from the two extremities: in which case a change of situation took place, and hell was filled by the couple who were excluded by preoccupation from the other places; in this "catching," however, there was some difficulty, as by the regulations of the game, the middle couple were not to separate before they had succeeded, while the others might break hands whenever they found themselves hard pressed. When all had been taken in turn, the last couple were said to be in hell, and the game ended.' " Massinger's Works, ed. H. Coleridge, Glossary. Dyce adds : "On the Scottish mode of playing it (which is very different), see Jamieson's Etymol. Dict. of the Scot. Lang. in 'Barla-breikis, Barley-bracks.'" The game is still a favourite with boys, although the names and rules differ at almost every school. Allusions to it are common in old plays; e. g. The Scornful Lady, V. iv., " here's the last couple in hell ;" The Captain, V. iv.; Massinger (q. supra, and) The Parliament of Love, IV. v. ; Jonson, Sad Shepherd, I. ii. See Nares for a good note on the word.

29/32.] See n. III. ii. 29.
35/38-44. See Hickson, p. 47*, for a note on this speech. I have not noticed any parallels in $B$. and $F$. closer than these, not very close ones :-

Orpheus, describing Hell, says,
" Now in cold frosts, now scorching fires, They sit and curse their lost desires."-The Mad Lover, IV. i. and The Night Walker, IV. v., "the ravisher's soul in eternal frost."

46/49. th' other, this fire] O. Edd., etc., another. Dyce, th' other, plainly the right reading, as she is speaking of the "proud Lady" and the "proud Citty wife ;" the one cries, . . . , th' other cries ; the one cries . . th' other curses, etc. The occurrence of $t h$ ' other in the last clause shews that the description is not of a general "whoobub," but of two typical figures in the crowd.

76 /82. carve her] Qo, crave her, corr. F2 carve her. Seward inserts for, and so Edd. 1778 and Knight (ist ed.); Weber, Dyce, Knight (2nd ed. Pictorial Sh. 1867), follow F2. In the addenda to his $B$. and $F$., vol. I., p. civ., 1843, Dyce says: "That Seward and Mr Knight were wrong in making the alteration, 'carve for her,' is proved by the following line of Beaumont's Remedy of Love,
'Drinl: to him, carve hin, give him compliments.'"

Mr Skeat quotes this passage, and from Love's Pilgrimage, I. i., "I'll carve you, sir."

If we made any addition, the more correct idiom would be, carve to her (Com. Err., II. ii. 120, Vittor. Corombona, p. 8, ed. 1866). It was a mark of great respect to carve to or for a person. Cf. Chaucer, Prol. C. T., l. 100. Sh. M. W., I. iii. 49 ; L. L. L., V. ii. 323 ; IV. i. 55 (Schmidt, who refers to Dyce's Glossary). Prior, in The Ladle (Poems, vol. i., p. 74, Dublin ed. 1728) :-
" Well then, things handsomely were serv'd :
My mistress for the strangers carv'd."
Chapman, Minor Poems, p. 30: "His eye did carve him on that feast of feasts."
77/83. among] See Sidney Walker, Crit. Exam., vol. iii. p. 344, for a long note on this use of among, per se, as $\mu \varepsilon \tau \sigma$ occasionally in Greek. This use is common; e. g. see Hazlitt's Dodsley, vol. I., pp. 7, 22, 329.

83/90. out of square] Cf. R. Edwardes' Damon and Pythias (Hazlitt's Dodsley, IV. 66) :
"The king himself museth hereat, yet he is far out of square, That he trusteth none to come near him," etc. ;
i. e. disordered, "out of sorts." v. Schmidt, s. v., and cf. "all square," \&c.

## ACT V.

Weber divided Sc. i. into 3 scenes, but has not been followed in this.
Critics are unanimous-I may almost say-in assigning this act, with the exception of Scene ii., to Shakspere. See Spalding, Letter, pp. 46-57, Hickson, p. 52*. At the same time, I think it may be shewn that Fletcher was probably the author or enlarger of (at least) the preface to Scene i. Especially contrast the metre of the first 19 lines ( 17 verse-lines, 13 (not 15 , Skeat, Pref. xxii.) doubleendings !) with that of any other ordinary dialogue in the Shakspere part of the play; the two will be found very different. I had formed the above opinion some time before Mr Skeat's edition appeared, and I find that Mr Skeat holds the same views. See his Introd. pp. xix, xxii, xxiii.

The following words of De Quincey's may be fitly prefixed to any commentary on this act :-
"In retracing the history of English rhetoric, it may strike the reader that we have made some capital omissions. But in these he will find we have been governed by sufficient reasons. Shakspere is no doubt a rhetorician, majorum gentium, but he is so much more, that scarcely an instance is to be found of his rhetoric which does not pass by fits into the higher element of eloquence or poetry. The first and the last acts, for instance, of The Two Noble Kinsmen, which, in point of composition, is perhaps the most superb work in the language, and beyond all doubt from the loom of Shakspere, would have been the most gorgeous rhetoric, had they not happened to be something far better. The supplications of the widowed Queens to Theseus, the invocations of their tutelar divinities by Palamon and Arcite, the death of Arcite, \&c., are finished in a more elaborate style of excellence than any other element of Shakspere's most elaborate scenes. In their first intention, they were perhaps merely rhetorical ; but the
furnace of composition has transmuted their substance. Indeed, specimens of mere rhetoric would be better sought in some of the other great dramatists, who are under a less fatal necessity of turning everything they touch into the pure gold of poetry."-De Quincey, Works, X. 49 (Black's ed. 1862).

Chaucer originals: Sc. i. 11. 1351-1591 (and for scenery, ll. 1023-1235); Sc. iii. 11. 1625-1804; Sc. iv. 11.1805 , ad fin. Palamon prays first, Emelye second, and Arcite third, in Chaucer's story.
4. Swelling incense] So all edd. None of the later Editors appear to have noticed Theobald's conjecture here, smelling incense. But swelling seems the right word, and means : rising up in increasing volume of " hallow'd clouds."

9/ro. german] simply akin. v. Schmidt.
10/II. nearness] intimacy, confidence, close friendship. Cf. "The nearness his alliance claims," Honest Man's Fortune, I. i. Dr Ingleby conj. fercenesse; but cf. Mcb., III. i. 116; distunce.

29/32. port] O. Edd., etc., port, except Seward, part. "port may mean either (1) transport, carry, or (2) bring into port."-(Skeat.) But though Mr Skeat "can adduce no clear example" of port in this latter sense, it seems, as he thinks, the signification here.

30/33. lymiter] Not found elsewhere in Sh., nor in $B$. and $F$. It may have been suggested by the Chaucerian word, Lymitour, "a friar licensed to beg within a certain district." Spenser and Drayton use the word in this old sense. v. Nares. Here, however, it is a substantive derived from limit, and means the Divine Shaper of our destinies.

34/40. lovers] friends. Fricnd was often used conversely when we would say lover.

34/40. sqq.] Spalding, p. 55, observes that "the description which we have read of Mars' attributes reminds one strongly and directly of the fine speech in the poem, when old Saturn, the god of time, enumerates his own powers of destruction. It is far from unlikely," he adds, "that the one passage surgested the other. The rich can afford to borrow."

37/44. which still is further off it] Mason cannot think this, the reading the first four edd. [Edd. 1778, Knight, further], right, because it does not appear to him "to be sense, to say that apprehension is farther off from the spirit of Mars than fear is." He is "therefore inclined to adopt Theobald's amendment, and to read-

> And the apprehension,
> Which still is father of it.

For we may fairly say that apprehension, that is, a sensibility of danger, is the parent of fear." Heath, Weber, Dyce, Skeat, adopt Mason's change ; and Mr Skeat thus explains the amended passage: "Apprehension means perception; and the sense is-whose spirit within you expels the seeds of fear, and that perception of danger which is ever the cause of fear. Fear cannot arise, even in the most timid, till there be first some sense, or at any rate, some imagination, of danger at hand. We find almost the same thought in Cymbeline, IV. ii. ro9-

Being scarce made up,
I mean, to man, he hail not apprehension

## Of roaring terrors ; for th' effect of judgment Is oft the cause of fear."

But I do not see how we cannot get this meaning precisely out of the text as it stands in the old editions. Apprehension is the perception of danger, this underlies fear, is therefore farther off than fear is ; beyond it, and so farther to reach and harder to eradicate. The "effect of judgement" is the perception of danger, this perception of danger is the antecedent of fear-an indispensable preliminary condition.

50/56. Turned green Neptune into purple] Cf. Macb., II. ii. 62, $3:-$
" No: this my hand will rather
The multitudinous seas incarnadine, Making the green one red."
[i. e. one-red]. "i: e. converting the green into one uniform red." Clark and Wright, Clar. Press ed. It is enough to "put faith in a fever" to read all the glosses on this passage in Furness's Macbeth, p. 107. Steevens compares Heywood's Downfall of Robert earl of Huntingalon, 1601: "He made the green sea red with Turkish blood." Again, "the multitudes of seas died red with blood." [dyed].
whose approach] These words were suggested by Seward to fill up an evident gap in both the meaning and metre of the passage as it stands in O. Edd. Qo reads:-

## Greene Nepture into purple.

Comets prezuarne, whose havocke in zaste Feild, \&c.
51/57. vast filld] vast probably means boundless, wide-spread battle-fields (though it might have another sense of Lat. vastus, desolated), as in Hen.5, prol. 12 :-
" can this cockpit hold
The vasty fields of France."
53/59. fyyzon] Qo, F2 so spell the word. "Foison, rich harvest" (Schmidt). Lat. fusionem. It occurs in Sh., Sonn. 53. Tp., II. i. 163 ; IV. 110. Meas., I. iv. 43 ("Teeming foison ") ; Mib., IV. iii. 88 ; Ant., II. vii. 23 (ib.).

54/60. armipotent] A Chaucerian epithet (Seward), cf. Knight's Ta., l. I 124: "Marz armipotent;" 1. 1583: "Marz the stern god armipotent." Saturn, l. 1605, says: "Myn is the ruen of the hihe halles, The fallyng of the toures and the walles," etc.

62/68. enormous] Cf. Lear, II. ii. I76: "From this enormous state."
66/72. pluresie] v. Trench, Eng. Past and Pres., p. 237 (3rd ed.). Cf. Hml., IV. vii. II8:-
"For goodness, growing to a pıurisy
Dies in his own too much."
But Shakspere was not the only writer who shewed his "small Latin and less Greek" by this implied derivation from plus. Cf. B. and F., Custom of the Country, II. i., "grow to a plurisy and kill," etc. ; Massinger, Unnat. Combat, IV. i., "Thy plurisy of goodness is thy ill;" Ford, 'Tis Pity, IV. iii., "plurisy of lust ;" Broken IFeart, IV. ii., "that foulness Whose plurisy hath fevered faith and modesty" (ef. "puts faith in a fever," $2 N . K$., I. ii. 66/73) ; The Fincies (q.

Weber), "a plurisy of faithless impudence." Add (from Nares) Atheist's Tragedy, sig. G., "plurisy of lust;" Mascal, on Cattle, "grow to a plurisy, and die thereof;" and (Wright, Clar. Pr. Hml.) Massinger, The Picture, IV. ii.

69/75. Stars must glister, \&c.] Cf. Peele, Tale of Troy, " glistering like stars of pure immortal fire."

79/85. And weepe unto a girl] O. Edd. (F2, ed. 1711, weep); Seward, etc., To weep. But surely the idea of enforcement is sufficiently plain to allow the old reading to stand, and make him weep being the sense if expanded. Theobald's marginal note: "into, i. e. 'till he become tender as a Girl," has not been accepted by any of the Edd. (I may note here, that Edd. 1778 cannot be trusted for the literal accuracy of their transcripts from ed. 1750; e. g. here they write became, and girl.)

85/91. poul'd] O. Edd. pould. The way it was pronounced, probably; v. Ellis, Pronun., p. 96ı. See Nares, s. v. Poll, and cf. Chauc. Prol. 177, 627, Reve's Ta., 386, "piled sculle ;" Spenser, F. Q., V. ii. 6; 2 Sam. xiv. 26; Hazlitt's Dodsley, IV. 8I ; Coriol., IV. v. 215 (Booth's repr., p. 62I a), "He will mowe all downe before him, and leaue his passage poul'd." (Schmidt inaccurately: "O. Edd. pouled.") Seward, etc., polled. Dyce and Skeat, polled, making the line an alexandrine. It seems rather to scan : Stale grav/ity/ to dance;/ the pout'd/ bach'lour/. The position of the pause confirms this, and in V. iii. $117 / 135$, the same disyll. pronun. of bachelour occurs.

86/92. Whose youth] Seward thought the metre of this line defective (which it is not, bonfires being trisyll.), and accordingly, with his usual disregard of meaning where measure was concerned, gave: Whose freaks of youth. Dyce notes: 'Some word has probably dropt out here[?]; but the construction of the passage is such as our writers frequently employ: the poet wrote " youth . . . Have" on account of the intervening "boys." Skipping over bonfires was one of the customs observed on Midsummer's Eve : v. Strutt, Sports and Pastimes, p. 359, ed. 1831.

IO2/I08. liberal] "licentious, wanton." Schmidt distinguishes seven meanings of this word in Sh. Lex.
108.] With this whole speech of Palamon's we may compare and contrast the following, from Fletcher's Women Pleased, I. i. sp. 63 :-
". . . I never call'd a fool my friend, a madman, That durst oppose his fame to all opinions, His life to unhonest dangers; I never loved him, Durst know his name, that sought a virgin's ruin, Nor ever took I pleasure in acquaintance With men, that give as loose reins to their fancies As the wild ocean to his raging fluxes :
A noble soul I twin with," \&c
And with the special passage, the old bridegroom and young bride, compare a very interesting dialogue (too long to quote) of "An old Man courting a young Girl," in Cleveland's Works, pp. 224-8, ed. 1742, and v. n. on unzoappered, infra, V. vi. 10.

106/112.] See Hickson, p. 30*, on an instance of coincidence in sentiment
with this passage, which, as a proof of the identity of the writer, is "as strong as its kind will admit ;" viz. Troil. and Cress., V. ii. 129-133:-
"Let it not be believed for womanhood!
Think we had mothers; do not give advantage
To stubborn critics, apt, without a theme,
For depravation, to square the general sex
By Cressid's rule : rather think this not Cressid."
For Qo pheare, F2, ed. 1711, have Sphere. For this latter reading Seward conjectured pheere, and was extremely gratified to find that this actually was the old reading! See a note on V. iii. in Ed. 1778, wherein Seward's misrepresentations, etc., are exemplified ; and Gifford's Ben Jonson, pref., p. 68 (ed. 1838, Moxon).

Mr Skeat omits the entire passage, but on IV. iii. 70 (85), notes that " Pheer is not good spelling; it should be feer or fere, as it is from the Middle English fere, A.S. gefera, one who fares or travels with one, a comrade, companion ; also, a playmate, and sometimes a wife" (p. 142). Titus And., IV. i. 89 (Booth's reprint, $642 a$ ) : "the wofull Feere And father of that chast dishonoured Dame." "In Per. Prol. 21 O. Edd. peer, M. Edd. fere or pheere" (Schmidt ; pheere, Malone, Staunton ; fere, Globe ed.). Byron, Childe H., c. i. feres.

119/124-7] The pointing, though obvious, is most chaotic in O. Edd., Qo reading, -
"To those that prate and have done ; no Companion
To those that boast and have not ; a defyer
To those that would and cannot ; a Rejoycer," \&c.
128/134. merit] reward. I may quote (Dyce from Mason from Johnson from) Prior, Ode to Queen Anne, "Those laurel groves, the merits of thy youth," etc. Cf. Rich.2, I. iii. 156 ; L. L. L., IV. i. 21 (quibbling. Schmidt).

130/136. from eleven to ninety] Cf. Pope, R. of L., IV. :-
"Hail wayward Queen,
Who rule the sex to fifty from fifteen."
Direction.] Records, recorders, a kind of flute. See Dyce and Nares' Gloss., and Chappell's Pop. Music of the Olden Time. v. n. dir. I. i. See Chapman's Shadow of Night (Minor poems, \&c., ed. Shepherd, 1-18). Cynthia's ivory chariot ("ut ait Callmachus") was drawn by "a brace of silver hinds." Compare, too, The Pharnix Nest, 1593 (Park's Heliconia, II. I33), for a poem "The Praise of Virginitie "-"Virginitie resembleth right the rose," etc., illustrating the symbolism of the shattered rose.

140/146. windfann'd snow] Cf. W. T., IV. iv. 373-6:-
"I take thy hand, this hand,
As soft as dove's down and as pure as it,
Or Ethiopian's tooth, or the fann'd snow that's bolted
By the northern blasts twice o'er ;"
and Coriol., V. iii. 64-7 :-
"The noble sister of Publicola,
The moon of Rome, chaste as the icicle

## That's curdied by the frost from purest snow

 And hangs on Dian's temple :" etc.Mr Skeat quotes these lines from chaste as the icicle, but The moon (Diana) of Rome draws the parallelism much closer.

140/146. female knights] Dian's Knights are spoken of again by Sh., All's Well, I. iii. 120 ; Much Ado, V. iii. 13 (Schmidt).

144/150. greene eyc] Weber says that "the Spanish writers are peculiarly enthusiastic in the praise of green eyes," and quotes Cervantes' novel, Del Zeloso Estremanno (given by Mr Skeat). Spalding, Letter, p. 50, refers to Romeo and Fuliet, [III. v. 222] ; Mids. N. D., [V. i. 342] ; and to Don Quixote, Parte II., capite xi. :-"Los ojos de Dulcinea deben ser de verdes esmeraldas." Cf. Ch. $K . T$., 1. 1309, "his eyen bright citryne." Seward, deeply perplexed by the epithet green, reads sheen. See Furness' $R$. and $\mathcal{F}$., p. 212. The word has been very variously explained, but the concurrent testimonies of Old English, French, Spanish, and Italian writers have been produced to show that green eyes were considered very beautiful, and signs of long life. That this colour is unusual now-a-days, "must be confessed;" and "for this, let naturalists, if they can, account."-(Douce.)

147/153. scurril term] Cf. Ford, Lady's Trial, IV. ii., "scurril jests;" Troil. and Cress., I. iii. 148, " Breaks scurril jests." I have not met with the word in $B$. and $F$.
ib. port] Theobald quotes $H m l$ l., I. v. 63, to sustain his reading, poxch, which Seward rejects. Dr Ingleby suggests the same emendation and parallel. But each word is peculiarly appropriate in its own place ; cf. 2 H.4, IV. v. 24, "That keep'st the ports of slumber open wide To many a watchful night" (there, however, of the eyes, but in the same sense, gates). "The Latin porta is as good a word as its derivative porticus" (Skeat). Chapman (Shadow of Night, p. 8, cf. Minor Poems, p. i19), "ivory port," "Night's port of horn" (Virg. En., vi. 893).

154/160. I am guiltess of election ; etc.] All edd., except Dyce (last 2 edd.), place the stop after eyes, instead of, as here, after election. This, Dyce's reading, is obviously the only comprehensible arrangement of the lines. Qo has :

> Am guiltlesse of election of mine eyes,
> Were I to loose one, they are equal precious, I could doombe neither, that which, \&c.

## Scene 2.

By Fletcher. Spalding, p. 51; Hickson, p. 5I*.
18/24. Hoa there] Mason would read, Hold there; but in V. iv. 41/5I we have Hold hoa. v. Schmidt, s. v. Ho.

48/67. cut and long tail] " . . . and though . . . the gaoler's daughter is speaking of the unrivalled accomplishment of the horse which she imagines Palamon has given to her, it seems to be agreed that the expression Come cut and long tail was originally derived from dogs, and equivalent to 'Come dogs of all sorts.'" See a long note (based on Nares) in Dyce's Glossary. Cf. Wit at Several Weapons, II. iii., Jonson, Love's Welcome (at Welbeck) ; and see Dyce's n. on Greene's George a Greene, p. 267 (Routledge's ed.).

50/70.] Alluding probably to Banks' Curtal, a celebrated dancing horse named Marocco, exhibited in London about 1589. It is said that Banks and his horse were burnt at Rome by order of the Inquisition. See Nares (ed. Wright and Halliwell) for an interesting note ; and Lt.-Col. Cunningham's Marlowe, p. 365, n. (on Epigrams by J. D[avies], xxx. and xlviii). References to this horse are very numerous, and may be found even fifty years after his fame had become historical; e. g. Cleveland, Works, p. 86 (ed. 1742): "Well, he's a nimble Gentleman ; set him upon Banks his horse in a Saddle rampant, and it is a great question which part of the Centaure shews better Tricks." v. Strutt, Sports and Pastimes, ed. Hone, 1831, p. 243.

53/73. tune] Qo turne, F2 turn, Corr. 1750. "Whose tongue is tun'd" is misprinted turn'd in The Spanish Tragedy, Qo 1618. v. Hazlitt's Dodsley, vol. v. p. 163. Query, was turn used in this sense?

Light o' love] " An old tune of a dance, the name of which made it a proverbial expression of levity, especially in love matters. Sir J. Hawkins recovered the original tune from an old MS., and it is inserted in the notes to Much Ado about Nothing, Act IV. Sc. iii."-Nares.

57/80. Casts himself th' accounts of all his hay and provender. That Hostler must rise betimes that cozens him.] There is a strong family likeness between this horse and one in Fletcher's Love's Pilgrimage, I. i. :-

> Diego. "Lazaro!

How do the horses?
Laz. Would you would go and see, Sir !
A plague of all jades, what a clap he has given me!
As sure as you live, master, he knew perfectly
I cozen'd him on 's oats ; he look'd upon me,
And then he sneer'd, as who should say 'Take heed, Sirrah !'
And when he saw our half-peck, which you know
Was but an old court-dish, Lord, how he stampt!
I thought 't had been for joy ; when suddenly
He cuts me a back-caper with his heels,
And takes me just o' th' crupper ; down came I
And all my ounce of oats ; then he neighed out, As though," etc.
See the whole passage. According to Seward, Shirley took this scene, after Fletcher's death, from the New Inn, III. i., to patch up Fl.'s play. The passages are almost literally the same ; but is it certain that Fletcher is not the author of the passage ?

63/87. bottles] Bundles of hay, "less than a truss," according to Mr Skeat, correcting Nares' statement. Cf. M. N. D., IV. i. 37 ; Love's Pilgrimage, I. i.,-

> " and every bottle

Shews at the least a dozen; when the truth is, Sir,
There's no such matter, not a smell of provender."
64/88. strike] 'four pecks, or a bushel, a strike of corn. N." Grose's Glossary (with Pegge's additions, 1839). "According to Bailey, a strike is four V. iii., " brew three strikes more in a hogshead."

66/90. A miller's mare] Cf. The Little French Lawyer, IV. v., Nurse. . . . "I can jump yet
Or tread a measure.
Lam. Like a miller's mare."
and The Chances, III. i.
A miller's mare, working round a beaten track (to drive the mill), was perhaps proverbial for her steady-going attention to business.

73/ror. Stool Ball] Dyce quotes Strutt, Sports and Pastimes, for his account of this game. Ed. Hone, I83I, p. 97.

Strutt (p. 98) quotes from D'Urfey's Don Quixote :
"Down in a vale on a summer's day, All the lads and lasses met to be merry ; A match for kisses at stool-ball to play And for cakes, and ale, and sider, and perry.
Chorus. Come all, great small,
Short tall, away to stool-ball."
86/120. Daugh. O Sir, you would faine be nibbling] O. Edd. read Daugh., and so Edd. 1778 and Dyce. Seward, Mason, and Weber, give this speech to the Failor, but "we think it doubtful" (Edd. 1778). Nibbling seems to have had an equivocal sense, as in $A . Y . L$., III. iii. 83 : "As the ox hath his bow, sir, the horse his curb, and the falcon her bells, so man hath his desires ; and as pigeons bill, so wedlock would be nibbling." Cf. B. and F., The False One, V. iv. ; A Wife for a Month, V. ii. ; The Night Walker, I. i. v. Halliwell, Arch. Dict. s. v.

93/132. how y'are growne] Arcite is "the lower of the twaine," II. i. 52.
Scene 3.
Shakspere's. "Perhaps there is nothing in every respect resembling it in the circle of the English drama. . . The manner is admirable in which the caution, which rendered it advisable to avoid introducing the combat on the stage, is reconciled with the pomp of scenic effect and bustle. The details of the scene, with which alone we have here to do, make it clear that Shakspeare's hand was in it. The greater part, it is true, is not of the highest excellence ; but the vacillations of Emilia's feelings are well and delicately given, some individual thoughts and words mark Shakspeare, there is little of his obscure brevity, much of his thoughtfulness legitimately applied, and an instance or two of its abuse."-Spalding, Letter, p. 5 I.

6/7. I will stay here,-] Except that I place the dashes after here, and hear, and omit the comma after punish'd, this and the three following lines are pointed as in O. Edd., and the meaning is plain : I will stay here (. . . .) not taint mine eye. Edd. 1778 and Weber print :

> . . . . " ('gainst the which there is
> No deafing) but to hear, not taint," \&c.,
and Dyce the same, substituting dashes for the marks of parenthesis, and (edd.
'67, '76) placing a comma after deafing. Mr Skeat places a colon after here, commas after happen and deafing, and (,--) after hear. Dr C. M. Ingleby has kindly called my attention to a note in Notes and Queries (5th S. I. May 2, '74, p. 343), by F. $\mathcal{F}$. $V$., where Dyce's reading (with the comma after deafing omitted) is given, and the comment:-"The last line but one, thus printed, has no meaning that I can make out ; should we not write-
' 'gainst the which there is
No deafing, but to hear-not taint mine eye.'
where 'but to hear' = so as not to hear. (See Abbott's Shakespearian Grammar, § 122.) Then Emilia will say, ' I will stay here, not taint mine eye,' \&c., the intermediate words being in a parenthesis."

13/16. show well, pencill'd] Heath and Mason placed the comma after well, adopted by Weber, Dyce, and Skeat. O. Edd. omit the comma, Edd. 1778 and Knight read well-pencil'd. Seward read time shall, because sometimes are not all times. In their kind, i. e. in their natural shape, in reality, which sometime appear noble when represented by art.

16/19. price] Edd. Query, prize? cf. V. i. 42/48, iii. 135/153; but also iii. 31/40.
17/20. question's title] i. e. the title in dispute, the right of the controversy.
Cf. III. i. I12/127-8; V. i. 127/132. Dyce ('67, '76) reads questant's, and supports his change very strongly by quoting Collier (on $M . W$., III. iv., Sh. vol. i., p. 222, sec. ed.), for the second folio misprint question in All's Well, II. i. ェ6, of the first folio reading, questant. But here, there were two questants, so to crown the questant's title, i. e. the disputant's title, would be unmeaning (as would also be questants', if it were proposed as an amendment).

22/28. Darkness] "The thought here is frequent in Sh.'s dramas: and the expression of it closely resembles some stanzas in the Lucrece, especially those beginning, 'Oh comfort-killing night!'" (ll. 764 sqq.) Spalding, p. 52.

23/29. dam] Qo dam. F2 dame, corr. 1750 (by a happy conjecture of Seward's!).

38/50. He whom the gods]
" Or if my destyné be schapid so,
That I schal needes have on of hem two, So send me him that most desireth me."
Kı. Ta., Il. 1465-7.
(Note on for one.)
83/96. tytlers] i. e. contenders about a title, questants. Qo, F2, Tytlers, ed. 1711 Tylters, and the rest tilters. None of the editors notice this quarto reading! There were eight bold Tilters, but only "two bold Titlers." See Hazlitt's Dodsley, vol. v., p. 157, n. for a curious parallel mistake.

87/100. Their noblenes peculier to them gives] At the foot of p. 447, in Fol. 1679 is given the catchword Their, but on turning over the leaf we read The prejudice, etc., the line Their nobleness, etc., being left out, obviously by an oversight. Seward was greatly puzzled over the complexity of the passage as it stood in F2 and ed. I7II, and left the construction to "some.more fortunate Expositor"! Restored, 1778 . Edd. 1778 point $1.88 / \mathrm{IOI}$ : disparity, value 's shortness, To, etc., but values shortness to means just the same as gives the prejudice
of disparity to ; cf. I H.4, V. ii. 60 (v. Schmidt, s. v. Value). Weber, value's shortness To. Mr Skeat gives the general sense of the reading he follows: " Were both made into one, no woman were worthy of a man so composed. Even as they are, the share of nobleness which each singly possesses is such as to assign, to any lady alive, a prejudicial inequality, a deficiency of worth as compared with them."

120/138. a sow of lead ] Cf. The Woman's Prize, IV. i.,-
"But in the way she ought, to me especially, A sow of lead is swifter."
The Scornful Lady, V. ii.,-
"To throw the sledge, and lift at pigs of lead."
The exact expressions, a sow of lead, or a pig of lead, do not occur in Sh., but lead is often spoken of as an emblem of heaviness ; e. g. (selected from Schmidt) 2 H.4, I. i. ı18; Cor., I. i. 184 ; Rom., I. iv. 15 ("soul of lead"-Fi soale, quibbling), II. v. 17 ; Mcb., II. i. 6 ; Ant., III. xi. 72.

122/140. For he that was thus good] Sidney Walker thinks this to be not an


## Scene 4.

As V. iii. 132 shews, the scene is not changed here. Dyce refers to V. iv. 99, but the lists were made (v. III. vi. 292) where first they fought, and the two places are therefore identical.
"The authorship of the last scene admits of no doubt. The manner is Shakspeare's, and some parts are little inferior to his very finest passages." Spalding, allowing that the reference to the jailor's daughter in this scene might be mentioned as an argument against his "hypothesis," adds in a note: "It is plain that the underplot, however bad, has been worked up with much pains; and we can conceive that its author would have been loth to abandon it finally in the incomplete posture in which the fourth scene of this act left it. Ten lines in this scene sufficed to end the story, by relating the cure of the insane girl ; and there can have been no difficulty in their introduction, even on my supposition of this scene being the work of the other author. If the two wrote at the same time, the poet who wrote the rest of the scene may have inserted them on the suggestion of the other ; or if the drama afterwards came into the hands of that other, (which there seems some reason to believe,) he could easily insert them for himself. In any view, these lines are no argument against my theory."-Letter, p. 54. Spalding's plea certainly seems of weight, and Hickson does not mention this as an argument for his division, although he does say, perhaps too loosely, that all the last scene is by Shakspere. Mr Swinburne takes a different view; he says:-"In the very last scene of the Two Noble Kinsmen, we can tell with absolute certainty what speeches were appended or interpolated by Fletcher; we can pronounce with positive conviction what passages were completed and what parts were left unfinished by Shakespeare."-Fortnightly Review, Jan. 1876, p. 41. And Mr Swinburne promises me a full examination of this scene when he comes to write on this play.

1-15.] Cf. Laww of Candy, II. i.
5. pity; to live, still] i. e. we still have their wishing that we should be spared;
we have not yet "outliv'd The love o' the people." Or perhaps the Qo is right : To live still, Have \&c. The pointing is similar in later Edd., except Dyce and Skeat : live still Have.
8. lag hours] Mr Skeat happily quotes I H.4, V. i. 23,-
" For mine own part, I could be well content
To entertain the lag-end of my life With quiet hours,"
and explains the general sense to be,-"We anticipate the loathsome misery of old age, and we beguile the gout and the rheum, that, in their latter hours, lay wait for grey old men that approach the gods more slowly."
approachers] Cf. Timon, IV. iii. 216.
10. unwapper'd, not] Qo, F2, unwapper'd not, Sympson explained, "young, and unfrightened;" but Theobald and Seward (followed by Edd. 1778) read unzvarp'd, Seward, however, adding a postscript: "I find in the Glossary to Urry's Chaucer, wapid and awhapid, daunted, astonish'd. This is probably the same Word that Mr Sympson may have somewhere found spelt wapper'd." (Chau. Compl. of a Lov. Lyfe, 1. 168, " awaped and amate."? = forpined, worn away with wope, weeping. A.S. wôp.) Knight, unwappen'd, Weber, Dyce, Skeat, unwapper'd, not. Cf. Timon, IV. iii. 38 :
" Makes the wappen'd widow wed again."
(?wapper'd. v. Halliwell, s. v. wapen'd; however, cf. Rich.3, I. i. 8r.) See Dyce, Glossary, and Nares, s. v. wappen'd or wapper'd. Dyce explains unwapper'd to mean "unworn, not debilitated ;" and wappen'd, "overworn." (v. Ingleby, Still Lion, p. xi, sec. ed.) Dyce refers to Harman's Caueat or Warening for Common Cursetors, \&c., 1573, last sent. of p. 69, reprint 1814; Dekker's English Villanies, \&c., ed. 1632, 2[3]d stanza of the Canter's song, sig. o. verso ; and Grose's Dict. Vulg. Tongue, s. v. "Wap." Grose's Glossary (ed. 1839), "Wapper'd, restless or fatigued; spoken of a sick person.-Glouc." Halliwell, Arch. Dict., gives wapper, "to move tremulously ;" and wapper-eyed, "having eyes that move in a quick and tremulous manner, either from a natural infirmity, or from want of sleep."

Wapper in wapper-eyed may be formed from the verb wap or wapper, as (Dr Abbott, Sh. Gr., p. 325, § 443) "We have 'windring' from 'winder,' Tempest, IV. i. I28, formed after the analogy of 'wander,' 'clamber,' ' waver,' the er having apparently a frequentative force ;" or-as I prefer to explain-' winder,' 'wapper,' 'slipper' ( = slippy, Par. Daint. Dev., pp. 28, 59, 63, ed. 18ro), 'lither' ( $=$ lithe, Hazl. Dodsl. vii. 418), 'bitter,' etc., are all forms of the old English adjectival suffix in -or, -er, $-r$, and may possess some frequentative force. ("Adjectives in -r (O.E. -or, eer, -r), bitter, fair, lither, slipper-y (O.E. sliper, and slider) meagre."-Dr Morris, Hist. Outl. Eng. Accid., p. 285, § 321 : suffixes of Teutonic origin.)

Wapper then may be formed from wap, a word found in Morte D'Arthur (Globe ed. p. 480), where Sir Bedivere says : "I saw nothing but the waters wap and the waves wan,"-of the restless action of the waters "lapping on the crag." This shews us the precise force of wapper, tremulous, quivering, restless; and wapper'd, worn by unrest-whether said of a crag, worn by the perpetual action
of the waves, (the 'multitudinous seas,') or of a person-broken down by sorrow or infirmity. Unwapper'd here means unworn ; free from traces of those attendants upon "grey approachers," the "gout and rheum," and all the "loathsome misery of age."

In Cleveland's Dialogue of "An Old Man courting a Young Girl," the Nymph says :

> "If at the Resurrection we Shall chance to marry, call on me ; By that time I perhaps may guess How to bathe and how to dress Thy weeping Legs, and simpathise With perish'd Lungs and wopper Eyes," \&c. Works, ed. I742, p. 226.

35/42. quight] Qo F2, i. e. requite, requight, 1. 44. v. Schmidt, s. v. quite, $v b$. It is a distinct word from quit, and is rather to be referred to requite, as quit to acquit. Schmidt does not notice this distinction.

47/58. most dearly sweet] O. Edd., early. Sympson, rarely. Seward, etc., dearly, "in the sense of exceedingly, or extremely."

48/61-98.] De Quincey, essay on Lessing, Works, XII. 302 (ed. Black), refers to this speech, as follows : "iv. As a beautiful object. In those objects which are referred wholly to a purpose of utility, as a kitchen garden for instance, utility becomes the law of their beauty. With regard to the Cow in particular, which is referred to no variety of purposes, as the horse or the dog, the external structure will express more absolutely and unequivocally the degree in which the purposes of her species are accomplished ; and her beauty will be a more determinate subject for the judgment than where the animal structure is referred to a multitude of separate ends incapable of co-existing. Describing in this view, however, it will be said that Virgil presupposes in his reader some knowledge of the subject : for the description will be a dead letter to him, unless it awakens and brightens some previous notices of his own. I answer, that, with regard to all the common and familiar appearances of nature, a poet is entitled to postulate some knowledge in his readers ; and the fact is, that he has not postulated so much as Shakspere, in his fine description of the hounds of Theseus, in the Midsummer Night's Dream, or of the horse of Arcite ; * and Shakspere, it will not be pretended, had any didactic purpose in those passages." *"In the Tivo Noble Kinsmen. The first act has been often and justly attributed to Shakspere, but the last act is no less indisputably his, and in his very finest style." Spalding (p. 56) thinks this long speech "decidedly bad, but undeniably the work of Shakspeare."

55/60. calkins] "The parts of a horse-shoe which are turned up and pointed to prevent the horse from slipping."-Dyce. (In Co. Wicklow horses' shoes are said to be cocked-? calked-when thus prepared.) By "turned up" probably Dyce (and Knight and Skeat) understood "turned down." Weber quotes from Cotgrave, s. v. Zain, "A horse that's all of one dark colour, without any starry spot or mark about him, and thereby commonly vicious."

62/75. Saturn] "The sullen Saturn," Sea Voyage, III. i.; "might well have
warm'd old Saturn," Cymb., II. v. 12 ; cf. Knight's Ta., 11. 1818-41, and Spalding's Letter, p. 55,-"A way is devised for reconciling the contending oracles; and the catastrophe which effects that end is in the old poet anxiously prepared by celestial agency. . . These supernal intrigues are in this play no more than hinted at in the way of metaphor."

69/82. mannadge] "the management or government of a horse."-Dyce. The strict sense of Fr. manége; Ital. maneggio.

72/85. dis-seate] Cf. Mcb., V. iii. 2 ( Fr dis-eate), and see the commentators in Furness' Variorum, p. 266 (this instance of the word dis-seate is not there given).

77/90. on end he stands] F2 prints these words as part of 1.89 , within a bracket [ (] ; but the manner in which they are printed in Qo, -
" He kept him tweene his legs, on his hind hoofes on end he stands
That Arcites leggs being higher then his head," \&c.
-and the incompleteness of the sense, shew that some words have here dropped out of the text. Weber has also observed this (referring it to illegibility of the MS.), but thinks " the sense is, however, perfect as it stands;" and Mr Skeat adds: "In fact, the half-line is rather effective."

104/120. arrowze] O. Edd., arowze; Seward, arouze; Edd. 1778, etc., arrose. It was probably pronounced as I have spelt it ; note the spelling of the French arrouser in Cotgrave.-(Skeat.) Sidney Walker notes that this word is "An instance, rare in Shakespeare, of a word borrowed from the French. Troilus and Cressida, i. 3,-
$\qquad$ 'rend and deracinate
The unity and settled calm of states, Quite from their fixure.'"
My friend the Rev. A. S. Palmer (author of "Leaves from a Word-hunter's Note-book," 1876 , Truibner, \&c.), has sent me thefollowing note on arozuze; "There can be little doubt that 'arowze' here represents the French arroser, formerly spelt arrouser, 'To bedeaw, besprinkle, wet, moisten, water gently.'-Cotgrave. Compare the Scotch rouser or rooser, a watering-pot, French arrousoir, our 'rose,' the perforated spout of the same utensil, a sprinkler, from rosée, Prov. ros, Lat. ros, dew, the congeners of which in other languages are, Slav. rosa, Lith. rasa, Greek $\tilde{\epsilon} \rho \sigma \omega$ (to bedew), Sansk. rasa, water, fluid; all traced by comparative philologists to the root $r s, r s h$. We may recognise as akin the word 'rouse,' as in Tennyson's 'Have a rouse before the morn,' i. e. a carouse, a drinking bout. Dekker in his Gul's Hornbook calls it 'the Danish rowsa,' so that Shakspere would seem to have introduced the word with strict, though probably unconscious, verbal accuracy when he made the King of Denmark 'take his rouse' (Hml., I. iv.). It is the Danish ruus, intoxication ; have en lille ruus, to be fuddled; Swedish rus, a drinking bout, taga sig ett rus, to get drunk ; Ger. rausch, Dutch roes. All these words would thus have signified originally the moistening of one's clay, as in the slang phrase 'heavy wet' for a toper's boozing, soaking, or drenching himself thoroughly. Similarly in the Cleveland dialect nazzy, drunk (Atkinson), is connected with German nass, wet,
moist (cf. ein nasser Bruder, a toper). In Latin we may compare the use of $u d u s$ and of madidus, (1) wet, drenched, (2) intoxicated, mades, to be wet, and to be drunk, the latter words being cognate with Sanskrit mad, (1) to be wet, (2) to get drunk, matta, drunk, mad, Lat. mattus, drunk, It. matto, foolish, silly, our 'mad.'"

13I/149. charmers] The gods: "Enchanters, ruling us at their will."Seward.

## EPILOGUE.

By Fletcher, I suppose.
12. the tale] Evidently a reference to the Source.
[Postscript. To the notes on Act II. sc. ii. add this, from Dyce's Glossary : "laugh-and-lie-down (more properly Laugh-and-lay-down) was a game at cards, to which there is an allusion in " 11.151 1/80-1. To n. on Prol. 29, Mr Furnivall adds: "for the space of two hours and a half, and somewhat more."-B. Jonson, Barth. Fair, Induction.]

## 171

## INDEX TO SOME OF THE NOTES. ${ }^{1}$

|  | Act sc. line |  | Act sc. | line |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| aborne | IV ii 125 | buttons | III i | 6 |
| affect | II iv 2 | buz | III v | 84 |
| aglets | III iv 2 |  |  |  |
| allow | II $v{ }^{\text {v }}$ | calkins | V iv | 55 |
| alow | III v 50 | Cápanéus | I i | 62 |
| among | IV iii 83 | carve | IV iii | 84 |
| angel of the air | I i 16 | chapel, vb. | I i | 50 |
| Anly | I i 213 | char'd | III i | 21 |
| apprehension | V i 37 | charmers | $V$ iv | 131 |
| approachers | V iv 8 | chop, vb. | III i | 13 |
| armipotent | V i 54 | chough hoar | I i | 20 |
| arrowze | V iv 104 | clap aboard | II iii | 32 |
| asprayes | I i 1139 | conjurations | III vi | 201 |
| augel | I i 16 | convent, vb. | I iv | 31 |
| Aulis | I i 213 | course, sb. cousin $\div$ cozen | $\underset{\text { III iv }}{\text { II }}$ | 10 |
| bank | I i 213 | crave | II ii | 91 |
| Banks' curtal | $V$ ii 50 | crow | I i | 19 |
| barly-break | IV iii 27 | cuckoo |  | 19 |
| bastard | I iii 78 | current | I i | 217 |
| bavian | III v dir. | Curtis | IV ii | 70 |
| beast-eating | III v 132 | cut | III iv | 20 |
| beastly | III iii 6 | cut and long-tail | $V$ ii | 48 |
| beck | III ii 1 |  |  |  |
| before | I ii 127 | daisies | I i | 5 |
| bells | I i 9 | dare | I iii | 5 |
| bevy | IV i 7I | dearly | V iv | 47 |
| blood-siz'd | I i 100 | deliverly | III $v$ | 29 |
| Bonny Robin | IV i 107 | depart |  | 1 |
| book of trespasses | I i i 33 | devils roar | II vi | 1 |
| bottles | V ii 63 | disseate | V iv | 72 |
| brake | III ii I | dividual | I iii | 82 |
| bride's hair | I i dir. | dowsets | III $v$ | 157 |
| bride-house | I $\quad 1 \quad 22$ | duke | I i | 47 |
| bride's wheaten wreath | I i dir. | dure | I iii | 5 |
| Broome | IV i 106 | dwell on | I iii | 77 |

I Mr Skeat's " Index of words explained," added to his edition, has suggested the addition of this brief index. For fuller references, see the Concordance of the whole Play, to form part of this edition.


Index to some of the Notes.

|  | Act sc. line |  |  | Act sc | line |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| penner | III v 125 | súccess |  |  | 210 |
| piece | I i 123 | swim |  | III $v$ | 40 |
| plantain | I ii 6I | synod |  | I i | 177 |
| pluresie | V i 66 |  |  |  |  |
| porch | V i 147 | tailour |  | IV i | 107 |
| port, sb. | V i 147 | tallents |  | I | 41 |
| port, vb. | V i 29 | tasteful |  | I i | 180 |
| posies | IV i 90 | tell ten |  | III $v$ | 80 |
| poul'd | V i 85 | three hours' play | Prol. |  | 29 |
| precipitance | I i 143 | thyme |  | I | 6 |
| pretended | I i dir. | to, gerundive infin. |  | I | 150 |
| prime-rose | I i 7 | tods |  | IV ii | 104 |
| profess | II v 14 | trace |  | III v | 21 |
| prospective laments, \&c. | II ii 37 | transported |  | I | 56 |
| proves | II v I4 | travel |  | II | 30 |
| proyne | III vi 242 | Tucke |  | IV ii | 70 |
| purger | I i 48 | tune |  | V ii | 53 |
|  |  | turne |  | V ii | 53 |
| questant | V iii 17 | twinning , |  | 1 i | 179 |
| question's title | $\checkmark$ iii 17 | two hours' play | Prol. |  | 29 |
| quight | V iv 35 | tytlers |  | V iii | 83 |
| Qui passa | III v 87 | uncandied |  |  | 8 |
| rarely | IV i 110 | undertaker |  | I i | 75 |
| raven | I i 20 | unwapper'd |  | V iv | 10 |
| ravens | I i 41 | uxorem ducere |  |  | dir. |
| records | V i 130 |  |  |  |  |
| retain | I ii 24 | vast |  | V | 51 |
| right | IV i 45 | vengeance and revenge |  | I | 59 |
| rose | II ii 136 | violets |  | I i | 9 |
| russet-pated | I i 20 | visitating volúble |  | I ii | 147 67 |
| $\mathrm{s}^{\prime}=$ shall | III iv 20 |  |  |  |  |
| Saturn | $V$ iv 62 | want |  |  | 223 |
| scurril | V i 147 | wapper |  | V iv | 10 |
| servant | I i $\mathrm{i}^{\text {a }}$ | wash a tile |  | III ${ }^{\text {v }}$ | 41 |
| sibbe | I ii 72 | weavers |  | II iii | 48 |
| siege of Jerusalem | I iii 21 | whipstock |  | 1 i | 86 |
| skill | IV i 60 | whoobub |  | II vi | 35 |
| smear'd | I iv 18 | wild-fire |  | III ${ }^{\text {v }}$ | 53 |
| square | IV iii 90 | Willow |  | IV | 80 |
| solemnity | I i 1223 | wind-fann'd snow |  | V | 140 |
| sojourn | I iii 77 | wood |  | IV i | 148 |
| sow of lead | V iii 120 | world's a city |  | I V | 15 |
| spoom | III iv 9 | wrinching |  | I | 157 |
| spoon | II <br> V <br> Vi <br> ii <br>  | young handsom |  | II iv | 14 |
| strike | V ii 64 | young handsome |  |  | 14 |
| successes makes | I ii 63 | zain |  | V iv | 55 |

## JOhn Childs and son, printers.

PRESENTED
$\mathfrak{C a}$ bis fellow $\mathfrak{f t e m b e r s}$
of
THE NEW SHAKSPERE SOCIETY

BY

RICHARD JOHNSON,

Langton Oaks, Fallozufield, Manchester.

```
PR
2888
L6
ser.2
no. 5-8
```

New Shakspere Society, London
[Publications 〕

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ Mr Skeat's edition was not published until all my Collations of the other texts were completed, still it has been of some service to me in this way.

    2 I refer to I. iv. 20 : Like to a pare of Lions, succard with prey (Daniel Qu.), where the folio reads smear' $d$, and Dye notes that the Do. has succard; but Mr Skeat, using the Cambridge copies (and the Thin. Coll., Dublin, and Brit. Mus. copies are the same), reads: Like to a paire of Lions, smear with prey, and therefore noted (p. qr) "Mr Dye is wrong in stating that the quarto reads succard."

    3 See Bacon's Essays, Appendix to the Notes, ed. W. A. Wright, M.A. Golden Treas. series, p. 350, for an interesting account of differences in old copies of the same edition.

[^1]:    $\qquad$

[^2]:    40. endure] M. D. K.('67) Sk. Q. W. endured F. etc. K.('4I) endur'd
    41. Tallents] Q. Edd. talons
    42. feilds] Q. F. T. S. field
    C. W. etc. fields
[^3]:    234. humane] Q. Edd. human
    235. aide] O.Edd. etc. Th. conj. C. head
    236. retaine] Edd. Heath conj. reclaim Sk. conj. regain
[^4]:    41. are here,] Mason. D. Ty. O.Edd. S. mere (F. T. S. meer) C. W. K. Sk. are, here
    42. to be, meere] Nicholson.

    Edd. to be
    51. untill] Q. F. sqq. until Sid. Walker, till

[^5]:    27. greise] Q. D. ('46) Ty. Sk. S. Griese conj. Gree K. ('67) grice D.('67, '76)
    F. T. C. W. K.('4I) grief Se. Sy. grise
[^6]:    91. Crave] O.Edd. C. W. K.('4I) Ty. S. $\mid$ Heath, Raze Mason, Cleave D. K.('67)

    Reave Th. conj. Craze Sy. conj. Carve Sk. Grave

[^7]:    222. Enter Failor] L. Q. Enter Keeper
    D. Re-enter Gaoler
[^8]:    Scene V] Qo. Scæna 4. D. Arcite disguised, wearing . . . . . . Countrymén 7. me life] Edd. Se. conj. my
    9. prooves you ?] Q. F. T. W. D. Ty. K.('67) Sk. proves S. C. K.('4I) prove Ingram conj. profess

[^9]:    89. dares] Q. Ty. F. sqq. dare
    90. So noble beare a guilty busines !] Q. [om. !] F.T. business! S. C. W. K. Ty. bear . . business? noble . . . baseness? business?
    91. musitc] Q. Musicke F. T. Musick
[^10]:    90. I thanke ye. No, ] L. Q. I thanke ye: No, D. I thank ye, no ;
[^11]:    190. kill] O.Edd. D. Ty. Sk. S. etc. kills
    $b \quad 5$
[^12]:    144. show Bravely about] Q. F. T. C. about

    | (shew) S. C. Mason, bravely Fighting | 2. other some] Edd. Mason, other time |
    | :--- | :--- | :--- |

[^13]:    22. let him-marke me-then-] D. Q let him marke me,-then 26-27. $i^{\prime \prime}$ th' other place] Edd. Q. i'th Thother F. T. Ty. i'th' Other 30. shall we be put] Edd. L. quer. they be put
[^14]:    76. carve her] F. T. C. W. D. K.('67) 84. regiment] O.Edd. etc. S. Regimen ; Sk. Q. Ty. crave her S. K.('4I) carve Three Altars, \&oc.] L. D. A Court before for her
    77. zuhat's now] O.Edd. W. D. Sk. S. C. K. what are
[^15]:    144. greene] Q. F. etc. green S. sheen
    145. port] O.Edd. etc. Th. conj. Ingleby (quer.) porch
    146. election: of mine eyes Were I to loose one, - . . precious,-I] D. ('67, '76).
    Q. (F. T. guiltless T. Election . . • Eyes,) Am guiltlesse of election of mine eyes, Were S. sqq. D.('46) Sk. Election of mine Eyes; Were Ty. election of mine eyes. Were
[^16]:    47. sometime] Q.
    D. sometimes
    48. on him] S. etc. O.Edd. Ty. on them
[^17]:    133. are sorry; still] W. sqq. O.Edd. S. Ty. sorry still, C. sorry still ;
